




*George Washington Flowers
Memorial Collection*

DUKE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

ESTABLISHED BY THE
FAMILY OF
COLONEL FLOWERS

P.H

20



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2017 with funding from
Duke University Libraries

**A HISTORY OF
THE CIVIL WAR IN THE
UNITED STATES**



A HISTORY OF THE CIVIL WAR IN THE UNITED STATES

BY
VERNON BLYTHE, A.B., M.D.

"With malice toward none, with charity
for all, with firmness in the right, as
God gives us to see the right."

—ABRAHAM LINCOLN.



NEW YORK
THE NEALE PUBLISHING COMPANY
1914

Copyright, 1914, by
THE NEALE PUBLISHING COMPANY

973.4
B 201H

TO
THE MEMORY OF MY LATE FATHER
WILLIAM M. BLYTHE

369688

PREFACE

Writers of history concerning the great Civil War that occurred in the United States during the sixties cannot very well hope to discover new facts, nor can they expect to narrate events and conditions hitherto never presented. Sufficient time, however, has elapsed since the dreadful struggle for a fair and clear description of the momentous events of that war to be made by children of the men who engaged in it.

Though a Southerner,—the son of one who fought in the Confederate armies,—accustomed since early childhood to hear personal narratives of Southern dash and valor (but to read more often the Northern version of the war), it is my purpose to give an unprejudiced account of the events narrated and of the personages mentioned. It shall be my endeavor to be untrammelled either by sectional sentiment or partisan prejudice. By balancing and carefully weighing the value of State records, official war reports, the truthfulness of personal narratives, and the fairness of historical writings, I shall endeavor to give equal justice to all; always keeping in mind that though we have a great united country the South and North alike wish honor to be given where honor is due and that human nature asks that the darker places in many lives be not too highly illuminated.

To have a proper conception of great historical events and of the magnitude of these events, it is necessary to have an intelligent knowledge of the real and immediate causes leading to them. Where war occurs political conditions and social affairs of the time must be understood, and the wealth, natural resources, characteristics of the people, and military supplies must be taken into account, throughout the history. The geographical situations must be studied, for the moun-

tains, rivers, coast-lines, railroads, highways, and line of travel have a great bearing on the course of events.

Our knowledge of the attitude of the separate governments toward their respective sections, their leadership, the political and economical problems during the strife, has much to do with a fair judgment of the final results.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE	7
CHAPTER	
I CAUSES OF THE CIVIL WAR	13
II MATERIAL AND MILITARY RESOURCES OF THE NORTH AND THOSE OF THE SOUTH, 1861	21
III LEADING EVENTS FROM FORT SUMTER TO BULL RUN	29
IV OLD VIRGINIA	39
V THE MILITARY MOVEMENTS AFTER BULL RUN TO THE CLOSE OF '61	48
VI MILITARY EVENTS IN THE EAST FROM THE TIME OF BULL RUN TO THE YEAR 1862	55
VII INSTITUTION OF SOUTHERN BLOCKADE	62
VIII MILLS SPRINGS AND FORT DONELSON	65
IX SHILOH	75
X CAMPAIGN OF '62 IN MISSOURI	80
XI THE EXPEDITION AGAINST NEW ORLEANS	87
XII THE WAR IN THE EAST IN 1862.—OUTSKIRT EVENTS OF EARLY '62	91
XIII MCCLELLAN'S PENINSULAR CAMPAIGN	94
XIV SEVEN DAYS' BATTLE BEFORE RICHMOND	101
XV POPE'S CAMPAIGN IN VIRGINIA	106
XVI LEE'S FIRST INVASION OF MARYLAND	112
XVII LEE'S MOVEMENTS AFTER ANTIETAM	118
XVIII THE WESTERN CAMPAIGN DURING THE LATTER PART OF THE YEAR 1862	122
XIX IUKA AND CORINTH	129
XX BATTLE OF MURFREESBORO	134
XXI EARLY MILITARY OPERATIONS OF 1863	137
XXII CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF CHANCELLORSVILLE	142
XXIII THE VICKSBURG CAMPAIGN	149
XXIV BANKS' LOUISIANA CAMPAIGN TO THE FALL OF PORT HUDSON	159
XXV CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG	162
XXVI THE SUMMER EXPEDITION AGAINST CHARLESTON, 1863	180
XXVII CHICKAMAUGA AND CHATTANOOGA CAMPAIGN	183
XXVIII IRREGULAR WARFARE IN ARKANSAS, MISSOURI, AND KANSAS IN 1863	203
XXIX TRANSMISSISSIPPI AFTER FALL OF VICKSBURG AND PORT HUDSON	206

CHAPTER	PAGE
XXX THE LAST MILITARY OPERATIONS OF 1863 IN VIRGINIA	208
XXXI THE YEAR 1864. IMPORTANT EVENTS IN THE MISSISSIPPI VALLEY PRIOR TO SHERMAN'S GEORGIA CAMPAIGN	211
XXXII A FLORIDA EXPEDITION	222
XXXIII SHERMAN'S MOVEMENT TOWARD ATLANTA	224
XXXIV JOHNSTON RELIEVED FROM COMMAND. GENERAL HOOD APPOINTED IN HIS PLACE	232
XXXV NAVAL EVENTS OF GREAT IMPORTANCE DURING THE SUMMER OF 1864	242
XXXVI THE ALABAMA, THE KEARSARGE, AND OTHER VESSELS	246
XXXVII GENERAL PRICE'S LAST INVASION OF MISSOURI	250
XXXVIII THE YEAR 1864 IN VIRGINIA. GENERAL GRANT'S MOVEMENTS AFTER CHATTANOOGA	253
XXXIX THE WILDERNESS CAMPAIGN	255
XL MOVEMENT TO SPOTTSYLVANIA. THE BATTLE	261
XLI MILITARY MOVEMENTS IN THE KANAWHA VALLEY AND THE SHENANDOAH	267
XLII GRANT'S MOVEMENTS AFTER SPOTTSYLVANIA. COLD HARBOR	269
XLIII GRANT ESTABLISHES HIMSELF BEFORE PETERSBURG	274
XLIV EARLY'S MOVEMENT IN THE VALLEY	277
XLV SHERIDAN AGAINST EARLY IN THE VALLEY	281
XLVI SIEGE OF PETERSBURG AND SUBSEQUENT EVENTS	287
XLVII HOOD'S CAMPAIGN AFTER SHERMAN'S CAPTURE OF ATLANTA	297
XLVIII MINOR OPERATIONS DURING THE LATE FALL AND EARLY WINTER OF 1864	315
XLIX SHERMAN'S MARCH TO THE SEA	320
L THE YEAR 1865. COMBINED NAVAL AND LAND OPERATIONS OF 1865	327
LI CAPTURE OF MOBILE	331
LII SHERMAN'S MARCH THROUGH THE CAROLINAS, INCLUDING THE FALL OF CHARLESTON AND SCHOFIELD'S OPERATIONS AFTER THE FALL OF WILMINGTON	334
LIII STONEMAN'S LAST RAID, MARCH 20—APRIL 20, 1865	346
LIV THE YEAR 1865 IN OLD VIRGINIA	352
LV LEE'S RETREAT AND SURRENDER	363
LVI LINCOLN'S ASSASSINATION	372
LVII IMPORTANT EVENTS OF THE WAR AFTER LEE'S SURRENDER. JOHNSTON AND SHERMAN	375
LVIII THE RELATIVE FIGHTING FORCES OF THE TWO CONTESTANTS. THEIR LOSSES IN MEN AND MONEY	383
PRINCIPLE SOURCES	389
INDEX	393

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Seat of Operations During the Civil War, 1861-1865	<i>Frontispiece</i>
	FACING PAGE
Principal Railroads and Rivers of the South in 1861 . . .	24
Hampton Roads and Vicinity	91
The Country from the Potomac to Harrisburg	112
Charleston Harbor and Approaches	137
Chancellorsville	142
Gettysburg	162
Cleburne's Own Map of the Battle of Chickamauga . .	190
Atlanta and Vicinity	232
General Map of the Battlefields Around Richmond . . .	287

A HISTORY OF THE CIVIL WAR IN THE UNITED STATES

CHAPTER I

CAUSES OF THE CIVIL WAR

The real causes of the Civil War did not arise just prior to Mr. Lincoln's election, but had been fermenting and brewing for many years. Most of them may be traced to the sectional differences concerning the slavery question; but the tariff issue and the great problems of State Rights were ever present. Henry Clay in his speech before the United States Senate,—February 6, 1850,—on his own compromise measures sums up the prospective causes of the dissolution of the Union as follows:

“If the Union is to be dissolved for any existing causes, it will be dissolved because slavery is interdicted or not allowed to be introduced into the ceded territories; because slavery is threatened to be abolished in the District of Columbia; and because fugitive slaves are not returned,—as in my opinion they ought to be restored,—to their masters. This, I believe, will be the causes, if there be any causes, which can lead to the direful events to which I have referred.”

Negro slavery had been established in the colonies long before the Revolutionary War. The nature of the climate and the industries in the North caused the holding of slaves to be less profitable there than in the South. For this reason in 1788, when the newly adopted Constitution went into effect, all the States north of the Mason and Dixon line,

with the exception of New Jersey and New York, had made provisions for a gradual emancipation of their slaves. New York in 1800 and New Jersey in 1804 made emancipation provision for their slaves; but the processes of emancipation were slow, and as late as 1840 there were only four Northern States where slaves were not held in bondage, namely: Maine, Massachusetts, Vermont, and Michigan. The South was distinctly an agricultural, cotton-raising region. Its industries were their greatest sources of wealth. The Southern people considered that their material prosperity depended to the greatest extent upon the continuance of slavery as an economic institution.

The North had developed a great manufacturing industry and a large maritime trade allied with much agricultural interest, and it claimed that the success and prosperity of that section was due to free labor. A greater increase of the white population in the North than in the South had occurred through a large European emigration, and the representation in Congress from Southern States had relatively decreased. After the War of 1812 there were markedly altered industrial conditions in the two sections. The Northern people demanded a high protective tariff. There were no cotton-spinners in the South. An act was passed April 27, 1816, imposing a 20 per cent. tariff on all imported cotton goods and woolen stuffs,—an act that also provided that no duty on such goods should be less than $6\frac{1}{4}$ cents a yard. This tariff bore heavily on the Southern slaveholders and cotton-producers.

In 1824 all Southerners were opposed to tariff protection but the Eastern and Western Legislators combined and made a 37 per cent. duty. The South claimed that this tariff operated entirely for the good of the North and was antagonistic to the Southern farmer.

Tariff issues were therefore among the leading reasons for the bitter feeling that arose and continued to grow between the sections.

The slavery question was always a paramount issue between the two great regions. In the Federal Convention of 1787 it was discussed and compromises were made relative to its benefits to the North as well as to the South. The Federal Ratios meant that representatives and direct taxes should be apportioned among the several States that might be included within the Union according to their respective populations, which should be determined by adding to the whole number of free persons those bound to service for a term of years, and by excluding Indians and three-fifths of all other persons. This last phrase meant slaves.

In the third compromise Congress passed a law prohibiting slave trade,— a law that was to become effective in 1808. A tax of \$10 on each imported slave was to be levied; but this was never due.

In 1793 the Fugitive Slave Act was created under the provisions of the Constitution; Article IV, Section 2, Clause 3. "No person held to service or labor in one State, under the laws thereof, escaping into another, shall, in consequence of any law or regulation therein, be discharged from such service or labor, but shall be delivered up on claim of the party to whom such service or labor may be due."

This law was a reef in the Constitution,— a reef on which the sections were destined to split wider apart. No other single phase of legislation wrought more hostility. The South demanded its constitutional observance, because it was one of the compromises upon which they had agreed to form the Union. The North after 1835 persistently refused to recognize the provision and repeatedly endeavored to thwart its purpose.

In 1787 ordinances concerning the extension of slavery into territories north and west of the Ohio River were passed, forever forbidding slavery there except as a punishment for crime; but prohibition of slavery west of the Mississippi River had not been provided for. In March, 1818, Mis-

Missouri asked for admittance into the Union; but no action was taken until December, 1818. A bill was then introduced to make a portion of Missouri Territory into a new territory, that was to be called Arkansas. The northern boundary of the new territory was to be latitude $36^{\circ} 30'$ north, practically an extension of a line from the mouth of the Ohio River.

In February, 1819, the discussion began in earnest when an amendment for the admittance of the territory above the stated line was introduced in Congress. This amendment specified that further introduction of slavery would be prohibited and that all children of slaves born in the State after it had been admitted should be free. This bill was defeated; but a bill making Arkansas a new territory was passed. In January, 1820, Maine was admitted as a free State and Missouri as a slave State, with the amendment that "in the territory ceded by France to the United States under the name of Louisiana, which lies north of $36^{\circ} 30'$, however, not in Missouri, slavery shall be and is hereby forever prohibited."

For ten years after the Missouri Compromise little was heard of slavery; but antislavery agitation began in the years of the Nullification controversy of 1831-1838; and from this time continued ~~with more or less~~ violence until the Civil War abolished it. "State Rights Doctrine" was not always exclusively a Southern belief, but was held at different times in other States of the Union. It was held by Virginia and Kentucky, as shown in the Resolutions of 1798, which were a part of Jefferson's original draft. It was held by New England Federalists in the Hartford Convention of December, 1814, and January, 1815. The following extract emphasized their opinion:

"In cases of deliberate, dangerous and palpable infraction of the Constitution, affecting the sovereignty of the State and liberty of the people; it is not only the right but duty of such

a State to interpret and enforce its authority for its protection, etc.”

The New England States again in 1845, at the time of the annexation of Texas, brought up the question of Nullification.

The Calhoun and South Carolina episode of 1832 was the most prominent incident of the State Rights question until the secession movement of the Civil War. All these differences arising between the sections produced feelings of dislike and often caused a misinterpretation of each other's motives. There was a scarcity of social intercourse between North and South, for the social conditions of the two sections differed greatly.

In 1860 a new President was to be elected to govern this vast country. The Democratic party held their convention at Charleston in April. This party at the time had a majority in Congress. The Southern Democrats asked for a platform that provided that Congress would assume protection of slavery in the territories. They denounced acts passed to defeat the execution of the Fugitive Slave Laws, and claimed secession rights if this protection were not given by the Federal Government. The convention adjourned without an agreement.

The Northern Democrats met at Baltimore in June, 1860, and nominated Douglas, of Illinois. The Southern Democrats met at Richmond, June 11, 1860, and nominated Breckinridge. The Whigs nominated Bell, of Tennessee. The Republican party met in convention, May 16, at Chicago, and Mr. Lincoln, of Illinois, was nominated. The platform declared that the normal condition of all the Territories in the United States was that of freedom and denied the authority of Congress, of Territory Legislature, or of any individual of the United States to give legal existence to slavery in any territory. It also refuted the validity of the Dred Scott decision of the Supreme Court. High protective tariff was advocated.

When South Carolina became certain that Lincoln was elected she passed measures for military defense and a State convention was ordered to meet December 17, 1860, and on December 20, 1860, she passed ordinances of secession. Georgia followed, January 19, 1861; and before March six other States had joined South Carolina. The "Compromise" suggested by Buchanan, December 8, 1860, in his message to Congress, consisted of the adoption of an amendment to the Constitution, securing slavery in the States where it existed as well as in the Territories and compelling the release of fugitive slaves.

"Crittenden's Compromise" proposed to secure the fulfillment of the Missouri Compromise and provided that each State constitution should decide the question of slavery. It furthermore proposed that it be made the duty of Congress to secure the return of fugitive slaves to their masters or pay the value to the claimant. This was rejected by Congress,—March 2, 1861,—and by the Republicans. The efforts of the Federal Government to prevent rupture precipitated war. Later the emancipation of slaves became a principle of the Republican party.

Political conditions prior to Sumter.—On February 4, 1861, the first steps were taken to form a Southern Confederacy. In three days six States were united under a provisional constitution, which was in substance the same as that of the United States. It was to remain in force for one year, unless a permanent one should be provided to take its place. The convention made itself the legislative body of the government and elected Jefferson Davis President and Alexander H. Stephens Vice-President. The capital was established temporarily at Montgomery, Alabama.

Mr. Davis was perhaps at this time the most prominent man in the Southern States and was elected with very little opposition, though the office came to him as a surprise, having been unsought by him. He had been Secretary of

War and had seen considerable military service in Indian wars and in the Mexican War, where his gallantry at Buena Vista saved the battle. At the time of secession he was serving as United States Senator from the State of Mississippi. Alexander H. Stephens, the elected Vice-President, although physically weak and dwarfed, was a man of great intellectual ability. It is doubtful whether his election was best for the South, for he had been a Whig in political faith and was not in full sympathy with the ideas of Secession nor in favor of a temporary, strong, centralized government.

Mr. Davis appointed his cabinet February 18, 1861, and in his inaugural address he expressed the hope, but not the expectation, that the Confederacy would be allowed to go in peace. He declared that if the Government at Washington undertook to assert jurisdiction over the seceded States, the act would be offensive war.

Major Anderson had moved, December 26, 1860, with one hundred and twenty-eight men from the shore batteries in Charleston harbor to Fort Sumter, at the entrance of the harbor. On January 9, 1861, efforts were made by the "Star of the West," sent by the administration at Washington, to reinforce the garrison at Fort Sumter with men and ammunition; but she returned to New York without reaching Fort Sumter, having been fired on by the batteries from Fort Moultrie and Fort Morris, South Carolina.

Preparations before Sumter.—When Mr. Lincoln was inaugurated March 4, 1861, seven States had seceded from the Union and a new government had been established. Fort Moultrie, Fort Morris, and Castle Pickney were occupied with South Carolina troops. Fort Pulaski, Savannah, had been taken, and every fort that lay within its limits except Fort Sumter and Fort Pickens, was in the hands of the new Government. Arsenal at Mount Vernon, Ala., with 20,000 small arms had been taken. The Pensacola navy yards were also occupied. The Baton Rouge and Little Rock arsenals were

appropriated, and the New Orleans mint and custom house had been seized.

On February 18, 1861, General Twiggs surrendered half of the arms and ammunition of war to the Texas military authority. Mr. Lincoln determined to hold possession of Fort Sumter; and April 8, 1861, sent a message to Governor Pickens of South Carolina by Lieutenant Talbot, agent of the Federal Government, that an effort would be made to provision Fort Sumter. General Beauregard, the officer in charge at Charleston, sent a message to Montgomery, April 8. An answer was received, April 10, from Montgomery telling him to demand the surrender of the fort and to reduce it, if refused. At 4:30 a. m., April 12, the Confederate guns began to bombard Fort Sumter. This was the real beginning of the Civil War.

On April 12, 1861, Virginia passed Resolutions of Secession; Tennessee (May 6), Arkansas (May 18), and North Carolina (May 21), followed in rapid succession.

CHAPTER II

MATERIAL AND MILITARY RESOURCES OF THE NORTH AND THOSE OF THE SOUTH, 1861

The total population of the United States in 1861 was 31,443,321; and the assessed valuation of real and personal property was \$16,000,000,000. There were 31,000 miles of railroad, the tonnage of which each year was 36,000,000 tons, valued at \$4,000,000,000. The railroads themselves were valued at \$2,000,000,000.

The North had a population of 19,000,000; of these 3,624,800 were foreigners and 500,000 negroes. Thus the population of what was known as the North was twice as large as that of the South. The North had 20,000 miles of railroad, their manufactures were fifty times as great as those of the South. They had 99 mills for cotton spinning containing 4,000,000 spindles. The Northern maritime industry was enormous. In 1861, 5,550,000 tons were carried under the American flag and only 4,500,000 under the English. Three-fourths of our exports were carried under the Stars and Stripes and most of these in vessels owned in the Northern States. There were many cities in the North of large population. New York had 807,000 inhabitants, while Boston, Cincinnati, Buffalo, Philadelphia, Chicago and Newark were all great cities, ranging in population from 100,000 to 500,000, and having unlimited advantages of commerce with the outside world.

The Southern population of the seceding States was 9,103,241. The other slave States,—Missouri, Kentucky, Maryland, and Delaware,—had a population of 3,134,961

whites and negroes. This made the total population of the South 12,238,202, of which number 4,500,000 were slaves. The seceded States had scarcely 5,500,000 white people within their borders, and 400,000 of those whites were foreign born and another 400,000 lived in West Virginia. The Southern manufactured products amounted to \$80,000,000 annually. The South had eight cotton mills, with 400,000 spindles, and 10,000 miles of railroad.

The Southern cities could not be compared in point of wealth and size to the Northern ones. Baltimore, St. Louis, and New Orleans were the only ones that had over 100,000 population, and only the last mentioned city was situated within the borders of the Confederacy.

The South's exportation of cotton was its greatest source of wealth. In 1859 it raised 4,600,000 bales or three-fourths of the cotton supply in the world. The Northern manufacturers made use of 1,500,000 bales, and England of practically the whole of the remainder. The South made six bushels of wheat to the individual and the North about the same amount. The South, however, had a greater supply of the necessities of life *per capita*, such as live stock, oxen, sheep, and swine. The South raised fifty-one bushels of Indian corn to each person, and the North twenty-eight bushels. Out of 500,000 flint-lock muskets the South possessed 115,000, and the North 385,000. The North had 7,302 rifles, and the South 2,849. The three greatest causes of the failure of the Confederacy were bad management of governmental affairs, the handicap from a severe blockade, and the preponderant resources of the North and East.

The military population of the North was 4,600,000, from which there were enlisted in the four years of war 2,780,000 men. Two-thirds were American born and 180,000 were negroes. The military population of the South was 1,065,000. The total number of enlistments during the four years has been reckoned as from 700,000 to 988,500, 95 per cent.

of this number were native born Americans and among them were no negroes.

In the beginning of the War the Northern armies and the Southern consisted almost entirely of volunteers; but after the first year the majority of Southern soldiers were enlisted by conscription. Counting by time of enlistment the North had from 1,500,000 to 1,700,000 in the field, opposed to 600,000 in the Southern armies.

Social conditions in the North and South.—We must look to colonial times to find some of the reasons for the marked difference between the people of the North and those of the South. There was never any great degree of congeniality between the two sections. They came from classes of people differing both in religion and in politics. The colonists of Virginia, the Carolinas, and Maryland were in most instances descendants of the cavaliers of Old England, with a strong mixture of Scotch and Irish, and a scattering of French Huguenot emigrants. Their religion was that of the Church of England, Presbyterianism, Catholicism, and later of the growing Methodism. Their manners were polite, they were lovers of outdoor sports, held to the feudal life, were aristocratic in tendency and proverbial for the graciousness of their hospitality.

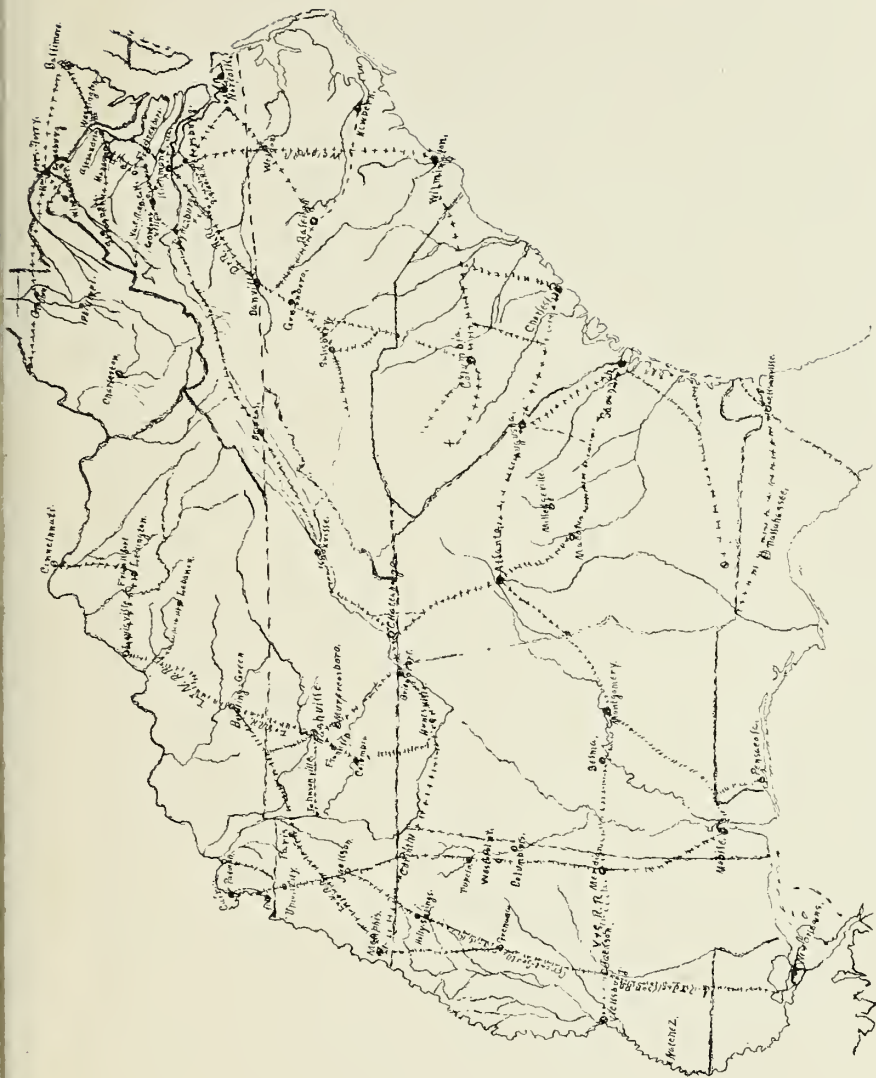
The Northern colonists were of Puritan, Quaker and Dutch parentage; thrifty, intolerant of differences in religious opinions and lacking in sentiment. The effect of slavery on the South produced a habit of command, amounting sometimes to cruelty, but more frequently to chivalry and gentleness toward those physically weaker. At times dissoluteness was the consequence of idleness and plenty, but more frequently it gave the Southerner the opportunity to cultivate elegance of taste in art and literature.

The South had many astute statesmen, politicians, and renowned soldiers, but it could not compare in numbers with the literary lights that illuminated the North. William Gil-

more Sims, a Charleston novelist, equalled Fenimore Cooper in his narratives of adventure. Sidney Lanier, Edgar Allan Poe, and Father Ryan are poets whose fame will continue to grow with the generations. In the North were many names which have made brilliant the history of American literature. Wendell Phillips and Henry Ward Beecher were orators of international fame. Prescott, Bancroft, Motley, Parkman as historians and Emerson as an essayist were writers the value of whose works cannot be estimated; Longfellow, Lowell, Holmes and Bryant were poets of world-wide fame, while Horace Greeley, the editor, and Nathaniel Hawthorne, the novelist, wrote with great power.

The Geography of the Section where the War was waged.—In order to form a clear and comprehensive idea of this great epoch-making event an intelligent understanding should be had of the extent of country over which the war was waged. The extensive seaboard, the rivers, valleys, mountains, and main lines of the railroad should all be carefully studied, and the character of the country in which the various campaigns were conducted ought to be fully understood.

The seaboard of the Southern States extended from the Atlantic coast of Virginia,—which comprised 110 miles,—to the mouth of the Rio Grande River. There were twelve hundred and fifty miles along the Atlantic coast and twenty-five hundred miles along the Gulf coast. This enormous coast line was indented with many harbors, bays, sounds, mouths of great rivers and studded with numerous islands, the blockading of which afforded one of the most difficult features of the war. Its accomplishment did as much or more than any one thing to bankrupt and defeat the South. The area of the seceding States was 725,605 sq. miles and the area of Maryland, Missouri and Kentucky was 122,025 sq. miles, making almost 900,000 sq. miles of territory over



PRINCIPAL RAILROADS AND RIVERS OF THE SOUTH IN 1861

which the war was to be waged. The magnitude of the Civil War was the greatest the world had ever seen.

This great area is intersected by mighty rivers and many mountain ranges. The great Atlantic Coast Plain of Virginia merges into the Gulf Coast Plain and the Mississippi Valley. The Appalachian mountain system is divided into several distinct ranges, which are separated by narrow valleys that run in most instances parallel with the Mississippi Valley. This great valley is drained by the Mississippi River,—a river of larger volume than any other in North America, and the longest in the world.

The principal rivers of the eastern coast of Virginia are the Potomac, Rappahannock, York, and James, along the borders of which were fought many of the most important battles of the war. Other important rivers that flow into the Atlantic are the Cape Fear, Roanoke, Neuse, Santee, and Savannah,—each of which played a prominent part in the war.

The principal rivers of the Gulf Coast are the Apalachicola and the Alabama and Tombigbee, flowing into the Mobile Bay. The great Mississippi River enters the Gulf one hundred miles below New Orleans, its principal tributaries are the Red,—whose mouth is one hundred and sixty-six miles south of Vicksburg,—the Black, only a few miles below Vicksburg,—and the Yazoo, a few miles above. The main tributaries of the Yazoo are the Sunflower, Yallabusha and Tallahatchie. The mouth of the Arkansas is about half-way between Vicksburg and Memphis. At Cairo, Ill.,—two hundred and thirty miles north of Memphis,—is the mouth of the Ohio, which is one of the greatest rivers of the United States and was the boundary line between the slave States and the free. Thirty-five miles up from its mouth is the mouth of the Tennessee, where the City of Paducah is situated. The Tennessee River is a large and navigable

stream, flowing two hundred and fifty miles due north from Riverton, Ala., to which point large steamboats can go throughout the year, and, after passing the shoals above this place, the river is navigable far above Chattanooga for light-draught vessels. This river extended into the very heart of the Southern Confederacy, therefore it was of the greatest importance that it should be securely fortified and held. Twelve miles above Paducah, at Smithland, Ky., the Cumberland River flows into the Ohio. This is a navigable stream for medium-size vessels as far as Nashville, Tenn., a distance of about two hundred miles. These rivers afforded the best means for the transportation of large armies. Thus the Mississippi River was a great line that separated the eastern section of the Confederacy from the western; and nothing was more important than that the connection and thorough intercourse between these two sections should not be interrupted.

The Appalachian mountain system,—extending through the western part of Virginia, North Carolina, north-western South Carolina, eastern Kentucky and Tennessee to northern Georgia and Alabama,—divided that portion of the Confederacy east of the Mississippi River into two parts, in which most of the great campaigns of the war were fought.

Railroad and River Systems.—The railroad systems which in the years preceding the war had developed so rapidly, played a very prominent part in the drama of war by facilitating the movements of the armies and carrying supplies. There were now ten thousand miles of railroad in the South. The most important in the East was the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad, extending from Baltimore and Washington to Harper's Ferry, Grafton, W. Va., Parkersburg and Cincinnati.

The Orange & Alexandria Railroad, joined at Manassas Junction by the Manassas Gap Railroad,—extended through a gap of the Blue Ridge to Front Royal on the South Fork of the Shenandoah, and to Strasburg on the North Fork, and

thence to Mount Jackson. From Alexandria a small railroad extended to Leesburg near the Potomac River.

The Virginia Central Railroad extended from Richmond by Hanover Junction to Gordonsville, Charlottesville, and Staunton in the Shenandoah Valley.

The Richmond & Fredericksburg Railroad passed through Hanover Junction to Fredericksburg on the Rappahannock, and thence to Acquia Creek on the Potomac.

The Richmond & Danville Railroad extended from York River Estuary across the Chickahominy River at Bottom Bridge to Richmond, thence to Appomattox Station on the Appomattox River, and from there to Amelia Court House, Burkeville Junction, Farmersville on the Appomattox, then passed Amelia Court House on its way to Lynchburg on the James River.

The Wilmington & Weldon Railroad was one of the most important of the lines running into Richmond; and it was by this route that much of the supplies were brought to the armies. It extended from Richmond, by way of Petersburg and Weldon, through North Carolina to Wilmington.

The Norfolk & Western Railroad extended from Harper's Ferry and was joined at Roanoke with a railroad from Norfolk, Petersburg, and Lynchburg, where it continued by way of Bristol to Knoxville and Chattanooga. This road afforded a rapid connection between the eastern armies of the Confederacy and the armies of the Mississippi Valley.

The Louisville & Nashville Railroad extended from Louisville, Ky., by Bowling Green and Paris, Tenn., to Memphis, also,—by way of Bowling Green, to Nashville, Franklin, and Spring Hill,—to Huntsville, Ala. It had also a branch road to Bardstown and Lebanon, Ky.

The Mobile & Ohio Railroad extended from Cairo, Ill., to Union City and Jackson, Tenn., thence to Corinth, Tupelo, Meridian, Miss., and Mobile, Ala.

The Illinois Central Railroad extended, by way of Fulton, Ky., to Jackson, Tenn., and by Holly Springs, and Grenada, Miss., to New Orleans; and another road ran from Memphis to Grenada.

The Memphis & Charleston Railroad was a great thoroughfare and strategic line. It ran from Memphis by way of Corinth, Miss., Bridgeport, Ala., thence to Chattanooga, Rome, Marietta, and Atlanta, and thence to Augusta, Ga., and on to Charleston, S. C. It also extended to Jonesboro, Macon, and Savannah, Ga.

There was an important railroad from Atlanta by Montgomery and Selma, Ala., and Jackson, Miss., to Vicksburg and Shreveport, La.

The Nashville & Chattanooga Railroad extended from Johnsville on the Tennessee River to Nashville, Murfreesboro, Tullahoma, Bridgeport, and Chattanooga.

A railroad ran from Cincinnati to Lexington and Nicholasville, Ky., and another one from Louisville to Frankfort and Lexington, Ky.

These comprised the important lines of railroad at this time in the region over which the Civil War was waged.

CHAPTER III

LEADING EVENTS FROM FORT SUMTER TO BULL RUN

Bombardment of Fort Sumter.— At 2 a. m., April 11, 1861, General Beauregard sent two aides,— Colonel Chestnut and Captain Lee,— to Major Anderson demanding the evacuation of Fort Sumter. Anderson immediately sent his reply refusing to do so; and at the same time that General Beauregard received this answer, instructions came from Montgomery not to bombard Fort Sumter, if Anderson would set a time for evacuation.

A satisfactory answer not having been given at 3 a. m., April 12, General Beauregard notified Major Anderson that he would open fire on his batteries in an hour. At half past four in the early morning of the 12th of April, 1861, the Confederate batteries of Fort Johnson and Fort Moultrie began to send their shells toward Fort Sumter. By 1:30 p. m. the garrison at Sumter, being forced to surrender or be killed, were allowed to withdraw and to keep possession of individual property after saluting the Union flag.

The apparently inevitable armed conflict had now begun; the battles of the forum had been changed to those of the field. The carnage of war raged and called forth the bravery of men and women to heroic deeds. There was suffering and grief, slaughter and death. The conflict was waged until the weaker numbers were forced to surrender from sheer exhaustion to the stronger. The records of the battling armies became history, the old order of things was blotted out in the South, to be followed by the fearful aftermath of the horrible Reconstruction period,— more terrible, if possible, than war

itself. In the North and in the South there was great excitement, and both sections became active and alert.

Preparation in the North.— Mr. Lincoln on April 15, 1861, before he had received the official report of Major Anderson, issued a call for 75,000 volunteers, in order to suppress a combination too powerful to be controlled by the ordinary course of judicial proceedings.

The gates of war were flung wide open, no more compromises could be made except by armed force. The North and South were thrilled with passion and hate. Neither had any conception of the terrible magnitude of the crisis before them, nor judged aright the tenacity and determination of the other. The great sections were now definitely arrayed against each other; States and individuals taking sides. The Northerners considered that the national flag had been insulted, and they united upon the ground of the preservation of the Union. Southerners thought the war had been forced upon them and responded, with even greater unanimity than did the North, to the call for volunteers. They felt that they were repelling the efforts of the Federal Government to take away their State Rights and coerce them into the doctrines of Non-secession Republicanism of the newly elected President.

States refuse volunteers to Lincoln's call.— Important events now followed in rapid succession. The governors of Kentucky, North Carolina, Virginia, Tennessee, Missouri, and Arkansas refused absolutely to send volunteers at Lincoln's call for troops; neither did the governor of Delaware nor the governor of Maryland obey the summons. On April 17, 1861, the convention in session at Richmond passed ordinances of secession, but no vote was taken until May 23. The Virginians on April 18 seized Harper's Ferry and captured 5000 improved muskets, 3000 unfinished small arms and, by extinguishing the fire started by the retiring Federals, saved some very valuable machinery used in the making of rifles and muskets.

On April 19 the Federals endeavored to destroy the Navy Yard at Gosport, and also sent reinforcements to Fortress Monroe. The dry docks of the Navy Yard were damaged; but on April 20 General Taliaferro, in command of the Confederates, seized several million dollars' worth of military and naval stores, with cannons, guns, and the 2600 ton frigate *Merrimac*, fully equipped and ready for sea.

Riots in Baltimore, April 16, 1861.—Lincoln had ordered troops to Washington for the protection of the capital, and a few hundred had passed through Maryland and had reached Washington without trouble. On April 16 the Sixth Massachusetts, uniformed and armed, endeavored to pass through Baltimore to Washington. While seven companies were being drawn on the horse-cars from the Northern station toward Camden station, the tracks became obstructed, which forced the soldiers to walk. A mob now rapidly gathered, some stones were thrown, and a riot was started in which four soldiers were killed and several wounded, while a dozen or more citizens were also killed and several were injured. The Massachusetts regiment reached Washington in the afternoon; and with the Pennsylvania troops already there, city volunteers, and six companies of regulars, Gen. Winfield Scott endeavored to secure the capital against surprise. The bridges over the Susquehanna were destroyed, which forced the troops to be sent by transport to Annapolis.

The Maryland legislature had passed resolutions formally protesting against the Federal occupancy of the State and expressing sympathy for the South; but within a month after the riot at Baltimore the State of Maryland was firmly subjected to Federal discipline and dutifully raised her quota of Union volunteers. It was the policy of the Government at Washington at first to belittle abroad and at home the gravity of the crisis.

Further Secession movements.—On the 20th of April, 1861, Governor Ellis of North Carolina, by the advice of a

convention of disunionists assembled at Raleigh, seized the United States mint at Charlotte, and on the 22d the arsenal at Fayetteville. Because of these acts on April 27 President Lincoln extended the blockade to the shore of Virginia and North Carolina; and on the 20th of May the Legislature of North Carolina passed ordinances of secession.

Upon the fall of Sumter Arkansas gathered a convention that on May 6, with one voice only against the resolution passed an ordinance of secession.

Tennessee soon after the surrender of Sumter began movements toward joining the Confederacy. The legislature, assembled at Nashville, authorized Governor Harris to appoint a commission to negotiate with the newly established government at Montgomery with regard to a military alliance. This was agreed upon on May 7, and on May 8 secession ordinances passes the legislature,—ordinances that were to be submitted to the vote of the people. On June 8 Mr. John Bell, who was the leading Unionist of the State, practically surrendered his leadership of his cause in the South, without making any strong effort to thwart the secession movement. A few unionist leaders, like Johnson and Brownlow, temporarily left the State.

Border slave States.—Maryland had strong sympathy for the Confederacy and her sister Southern States, but by the middle of May had submitted to the power of the Federal Government. Delaware never made any effort to secede, but, without resistance, joined the North.

Missouri's governor, Claiborne F. Jackson, and the legislature of that State were in favor at first of joining the Confederacy. The legislature on January 16 issued a call convention for the purpose of passing ordinances of secession, but on assembling (February 28) the sentiment of the convention proved to be opposed to seceding from the Union. After Sumter it was long doubtful which side would win the State. The old native population was in favor of joining the

Confederacy, but the more recent German population was opposed to it. Francis P. Blair, Jr., brother of Lincoln's Postmaster General, and Nathaniel Lyon, commander of the arsenal at St. Louis, prevented Governor Jackson from capturing the arsenal and thwarted the Secessionists' plans by taking Camp Jackson, May 9, 1861. Governor Jackson, General Frost, and General Price hastened now to Jefferson City to prepare to resist the Federal authority in Missouri. On June 11 a conference was held at the Planter's Hotel, St. Louis, between Jackson, Price, Lyon, and Blair. The conference came to naught.

On June 15 Lyon, who had followed Jackson with a strong force up the Missouri River, took possession of Jefferson City, the capital of the State, and placed it in the hands of the regular army. On July 22 the convention, which had assembled on February 28, was summoned and it formally repudiated secession movements.

Kentucky's position geographically was very valuable from a strategic standpoint. After Sumter the majority of the people of the State preferred to remain neutral, but it might have been seen that this was an impossibility. Gov. Beriah Magoffin and the legislature were all Breckinridge Democrats and were opposed to the Federal as well as to the Confederate troops entering the borders of the State. Early in May, William Nelson, a young Kentuckian who was in the Navy, was sent by Lincoln into the State to organize the Unionists in the central part of Kentucky. Major Anderson was in charge at Cincinnati.

The sympathy of Governor Magoffin was with the Confederacy, and he recommended that a convention be called to settle the issue. But the legislature now refused to call a convention and passed a law requiring an oath of allegiance to the Union to be taken by all the State guards; at the same time setting forth that the State would hold a neutral position. This action was very contradictory.

By the 1st of June it was evident that this farcical neutral ground could not be maintained. The Congressional election for the special session of Congress (July 4) showed nine for the Union and one against it,—an expression that was brought about to a great extent by military influence and one which also determined Kentucky's attitude toward the ordinance of seceding.

Preparation made by the Confederates for defense, preceding the bombardment of Sumter and afterward.

— Two days after Mr. Lincoln's inauguration the Confederate Congress at Montgomery authorized the raising of a military force of 100,000 men. A commission was sent to Washington to negotiate a peace settlement of their differences with the Union, but without success.

At the opening of the war there was in the South about \$50,000,000 in gold and \$50,000,000 in paper currency. Two days after Mr. Lincoln's call for troops a loan was advertised at Montgomery for \$5,000,000; \$8,000,000 was subscribed.

The three leading financial measures that now followed were:

First. The Confederate Government issued a \$15,000,000 loan at 8 per cent., payable in specie or export duty at one-eighth of a cent per pound of cotton levied.

Second. A negotiation of heavy loans was made from most of the banks in discount on notes drawn by the Secretary of the Treasury, and further loans were made on bonds ranging from \$1 to \$500, to expire at long dates and at stated intervals. By this means treasury notes were put in circulation.

Third. Cotton bonds were used by the Confederacy both at home and abroad.

The progressive depreciation of the value of Confederate money was very perceptible after 1861. In January, 1862, \$1 in gold was worth \$1.20 in currency; in January, 1863,

\$1 in gold was worth \$3 in currency; in the midsummer of 1863, \$1 in gold was worth \$12 in currency; and this decline continued proportionally until the end of the war. A great cause of disaster to the Confederacy was the effect of the blockade, which prevented the exportation of cotton,—the greatest source of income to the South.

At first voluntary enlistments were depended upon in the North and South, but toward the end of 1861 conscript enforcement in the South began. At first the basis of age was from 18 to 35 years; but later 45 years became the limit of enforcement.

Regular exchange of prisoners was initiated in the winter of 1861–1862. By the close of April, the Confederacy had 40,000 men under arms and 10,000 on the way to northern Virginia. The Confederate capital was changed from Montgomery to Richmond on the 20th of May, 1861.

Preparations and finances of the North.—At the beginning of the war the Federal finances were in an embarrassing condition. Obligations were satisfied by loans at a high rate of interest. The State and municipal governments felt the strain, and the financial institutions of the North suffered. By the close of the year 1861 all banks stopped specie payment. An increase of duties on imports was the principal way of raising revenue, and it was resorted to by Congress. In February, 1862, Congress issued \$150,000,000 in paper certificates and made them legal tender in payment of debts. By the end of 1863 this issue was increased to \$450,000,000. The issuing of bonds at a high rate of interest to be paid in the Government's depreciated currency was frequently resorted to. In 1864 gold was at 285 per cent., and the debts incurred by the Government were \$3,000,000,000.

In 1863 an internal revenue act was passed imposing an ad valorem tax on coal, paper, oil, iron, and countless manufactured articles not here mentioned. Licenses on profes-

sional occupations and income taxes on the gross receipts of steamboats, railroads and express companies were assessed and collected.

In 1863 the present system of National Banking was instituted to make a market for the sale of United States Bonds.

Theater of War in the East.—The low flat country of the Atlantic coast line of Virginia extends inward from the shore from 150 to 200 miles westward, with a gradual increasing elevation until it reaches the Blue Ridge Mountains,—the rampart range of the Appalachian system. This coast plain is bordered on the north by the Potomac River. Traveling south one crosses numerous other streams, all flowing in an easterly direction from the Blue Ridge. The first river of importance to be crossed is the Rappahannock. Its main tributary, the Rapidan, joins it from the southwest. South of the rivers near their junction is the region known as the Wilderness, with several hamlets located therein, such as Spottsylvania and Chancellorsville, while further down the stream is Fredericksburg, not many miles from the Potomac.

The next river is the York,—made by the junction of the Mattapony and the Pamunkey,—which flows into the Chesapeake Bay at Yorktown. The Chickahominy, lying south of the York, is one of its tributaries that flows into the James near Williamsburg; and further south is the James, upon which Richmond lies.

The Appomattox River, lying south of the James, flows into it near Petersburg at City Point.

The Blue Ridge Mountains are separated from the rest of the Alleghany by the Shenandoah River for 150 miles of its course northward. The northern section of the valley is divided into two parts by a mountain range situated between the North and South forks of the Shenandoah; thus making it easy for an enemy to play hide-and-seek and come out of the valley on the eastern slope with his opponent on the west.

The Shenandoah River flows into the Potomac at Harper's Ferry, which town could only be defended from the heights that surround it.

Early military operations in West Virginia.— West Virginia was that part of Old Virginia west of the Alleghany Mountains and southeast of the Ohio River. The people in that section had possessed few slaves and were more in sympathy with the non-slaveholding States.

After the ordinance of secession was passed in Virginia representatives of thirty-five counties assembled in convention at Wheeling on the 13th of May and sought assistance from President Lincoln and also from Gen. George B. McClellan, commander-in-chief of the Ohio militia. Governor Letcher of Virginia, hearing of these movements, sent some militia under Col. G. A. Porterfield to Beverly,— a village protected on the north by the rugged Rich and Laurel Mountains. Soon after reaching Beverly, he advanced toward Grafton on the Monongahela River, at the point where the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad branched to Wheeling.

The convention at Wheeling, West Virginia, adjourned to be assembled on June 11. In the meantime General McClellan occupied Wheeling and Parkersburg (May 27). On May 30 he advanced to Grafton. Porterfield now retired to Philippi about 17 miles to the south. By the 1st of June 7,000 men, under General Morris, were collected at Grafton; and they then advanced on Philippi to attack Porterfield, whose body of 800 men were scattered and forced to flee, to later join a Confederate command just south of Beverly at Huttonsville. President Davis sent General H. A. Wise to help Porterfield and while the Confederate forces were being reorganized in Beverly T. H. Pierpont was elected governor at Wheeling by the representatives of 40 counties (June 11).

General McClellan arrived at Grafton June 23, and in ten days had collected 30,000 men. Garnett, the Confederate general, had about 5,000 men at Beverly. Toward the last of

June he sent troops under Colonel John Pegram to the pass in Rich Mountain, between Beverly and Buchanan; and in person lead a detachment to the Laurel Mountains, between Beverly and Philippi, leaving at the same time troops at Beverly to cover his rear. On July 11 Rosecrans attacked Pegram with a large force at Rich Mountain, and overpowered him. General Morris at the same time moved against Garnett, who, having heard of the defeat of Pegram at Rich Mountain, retreated toward Beverly, but was cut off and forced to flee northeast. On July 13 he was overtaken by Morris at Carrick's Ford on the Cheat River. The forces of Garnett were scattered, and the gallant leader was killed.

Result: The Union losses were 12 killed and 40 wounded in these engagements. The Confederates lost 1000 prisoners and 100 killed. This campaign compared with later ones was on a small scale, but it was very important to the Unionists, for it saved them West Virginia.

CHAPTER IV

OLD VIRGINIA

On April 22, five days after the ordinance of secession was passed, Governor Letcher chose Gen. R. E. Lee as commander-in-chief of the Virginia militia, an office that Lee accepted, expressing to General Scott this sentiment: "Save in defense of my native State I never desire again to draw my sword." Lee assumed command April 23 and issued an order forbidding an attack on Washington. He furthermore ordered the army to act on the defensive, by collecting men and provisions along the southern line of the Potomac.

May 6, after Virginia's admission into the Confederacy, Lee became a brigadier-general while Beauregard and J. E. Johnston were chief in command.

In the early part of May the governor of Pennsylvania appointed Robert Patterson commander of the State troops which were being collected at Harrisburg and Philadelphia to oppose the gathering armies of the Confederacy. Slowly the two great powers were gathering their strength, to be hurled time and again at each other's throats.

The Confederate armies were placed under Joseph E. Johnston at Harper's Ferry, where he assumed command May 23, 1861. Here he found Gen. Stonewall Jackson in command. The Federal armies were under General Scott, whose chief general in the field was Gen. Irwin McDowell, who had crossed to Alexandria on May 24 with 45,000 men, and had established fortifications in a half circle from above Georgetown to the mouth of Hunting Creek, in order to protect Washington. Early in June General Beauregard, Presi-

dent Davis, and General Lee at Richmond and Gen. J. E. Johnston, who had 9,000 men at Harper's Ferry planned the Bull Run defensive campaign in northern Virginia and the Shenandoah Valley.

General Beauregard was to concentrate his forces at Manassas,—a junction situated on the Gap, Orange and Alexandria Railroad, just south of Bull Run, which is a small stream lying half-way between Alexandria and the Manassas and Ashby Gaps of the Blue Ridge. The Mt. Mitchell ford of the stream is half-way between Centerville and Manassas Junction, each place being a distance of three miles from Bull Run. The banks of the stream nearest the battle-field were nearly all very rugged.

General Beauregard's force by the last of July was about 21,833 men, with 29 guns.

The Confederate forces at Yorktown on June 10 under the command of Gen. John B. Magruder were 1800, and the Federal forces were 4000. The former advanced 9 miles to Great Bethel and were repulsed by General Magruder with a loss of 30 killed and 100 wounded. The Confederate losses were 1 killed and 7 wounded.

The Bull Run Campaign.—On June 29 President Lincoln and his council of war, yielding to the urgent sentiment of the public in the North, planned the Federal advance under General McDowell. This general had at his disposal 40,000 men in the van and 10,000 in reserve to make the initial movements against Beauregard at Bull Run; while General Patterson was to hold General Johnston in check at Winchester, and Butler, with his three to one forces, was to hold Magruder at Yorktown.

General Patterson on the 1st of July had advanced towards Harper's Ferry with nearly 20,000 men. Gen. J. E. Johnston, with a much weaker force, deemed it advisable to retreat to Winchester, 25 miles to the southwest. General Patterson then moved to Martinsburg, about twenty miles northwest of

Harper's Ferry. The two armies were now about 25 miles apart.

On July 15 General Patterson advanced to Bunker Hill, 15 miles from Winchester. A wagon road led from Winchester through Ashby Gap to the Piedmont Railroad and thence to Manassas Junction. Thus Johnston at the critical time was nearer the Bull Run field of battle than was Patterson.

On July 16 McDowell marched from the fortification in front of Washington toward Centerville, followed by a large crowd of non-combatants as onlookers to see the great victory that they were so confident the Federal army would win. On July 18 President Davis ordered General Johnston, if he deemed it advisable, to march to the formation of a junction with Beauregard. This Patterson had made possible by ordering his army to retire to Charleston, twenty-two miles northeast of Winchester and ten miles northeast of Bunker Hill. His reason given for this peculiar move was that he had received information that Johnston had 20,000 reinforcements.

Johnston, on receiving President Davis' order, and learning of Patterson's move, started at once with 8,000 men for Manassas, forded the Shenandoah, and passed Ashby Gap. At Piedmont Station he took the train and reached Manassas Junction Saturday morning, July 20. McDowell had already reached Centerville and on the 17th had driven in the Confederate pickets. General Tyler had had a sharp skirmish at Blackburn Ford, where he commanded 3,000 men, opposed to Longstreet with 2,000. Tyler was worsted and withdrew after losing 60 killed and 200 wounded. The Confederates lost 15 killed and 53 wounded. Two days were now passed by McDowell in reconnoitering,—days during which Johnston was hastening to join Beauregard, a junction which caused the defeat of McDowell.

The Battle of Bull Run.—July 21, 1861, came on Sun-

day. The morning dawned bright and clear over the land where the first great battle of the Civil War was to be fought. Throughout the preceding night rumblings of heavy wagons and artillery could be heard in the vicinity of Centerville and along the road approaching the historic little stream of Bull Run. Both armies were alert, preparing for the bloody trial at arms.

It was the purpose of both commanders to assume the initiative in the early morning.

McDowell had ordered Tyler, with the first division, to cross the Stone Bridge on the Warrenton Pike at 6 a. m. Hunter and Heintzelman were given orders to cross Bull Run at Sudley Ford, three miles above the Stone Bridge, but their movements were delayed, and it was near 9 a. m. before the left flank of the Confederates, under Colonel Evans and General Bee, was encountered. With only five regiments and six field-pieces, they obstinately resisted but were beaten back to the Robinson House, where General Jackson was posted with five regiments to assist the hard-pressed Confederates. General Tyler had now crossed the Stone Bridge and joined Hunter and Heintzelman; and with strong evidence of victory the enemy fiercely pressed their advantage.

At the crest of Henry's Hill for two hours the mighty conflict raged. As General Bee saw the heroic resistance of General Jackson, he exclaimed to his exhausted men: "There are Jackson and his Virginians standing like a stone wall. Let us determine to die here and we will conquer." Thus originated the name that clung to the great chieftain forever afterward.

In the meantime the Confederate reserves were rapidly moved up to support the well-nigh spent Confederates on Henry's Hill. Beauregard had reversed the order, which he had given in the early part of the morning, for Longstreet and Jones to make a demonstration on the Federal left at Mitchell's Ford.

At 2 p. m. General Beauregard and General Johnston were in immediate command; and after alternating successes all the reinforcements had been brought to the front. A grand effort on the part of the Confederates had driven the Federals, somewhat disorganized, from the plateau. However, they rapidly rallied their troops, and forming a wider circle, had apparently determined to crush the Confederates' left.

At this fearfully critical period the third and last stage of the battle began. General Beauregard observed a body of men approaching on the left about a mile away. To the great joy of the Confederates they were discovered to be the remainder of Johnston's command under Gen. Kirby Smith that was coming up from Piedmont Station. They were hurriedly ordered into line and thrown upon the slightly disorganized Federals, who began slowly to give way. Soon, however, the retreat became a confused and terrible flight. At Bull Run every ford was filled with fleeing soldiers, artillery, baggage-wagons, and horses. At Cub Run Bridge a veritable panic ensued. Great confusion extended to Centerville, and not until the Federals were behind the fortifications at Alexandria did the rout abate. In this fearful jumble, the fright of the terror-stricken non-combatants added greatly to the confusion. President Davis arrived on the battle-field about 4 p. m. and advised a pursuit of the enemy; but he yielded to the judgment of Beauregard and Johnston.

The Confederates did not attempt an active pursuit after driving the Federals across Bull Run, nor did they enter Centerville. This is considered by many competent military critics to have been one of the greatest opportunities the Confederates had to annihilate the Federal army and to carry the war to the Federal capital itself.

The Union army had 30,594 present for duty and 10,000 in reserve under Miles at Centerville. Their losses were nearly 2000 killed and wounded and 1600 prisoners, many of whom

were wounded. Five thousand small arms and 28 pieces of artillery were captured by the Confederates.

The Confederates had,—until 2 p. m.,—23,348 effective men, including Holmes' division and the arrival of Kirby Smith added 8,884 more, making a total of 32,232. Their losses were 378 killed; 1489 wounded, missing 12, total, 1879. No arms or guns were lost, but the two brave Generals Bee and Bartow were killed.

The effects of the Bull Run victory on the South and the preparations following it.—The fact that the Federal army was known to have outnumbered the Southern infused into the minds of the Southern people an over-confidence and a false sense of their power. Joseph E. Johnston said: "Our troops believed the war was practically ended and left the army in crowds to return to their homes." There was relaxed exertion on the part of the Confederates in following up their advantage and, worse than this, a laxity of discipline prevailed in holding the troops together.

President Davis warned his people and Congress of the long and bloody struggle he expected. Up to the battle of Bull Run 100,000 men were called for one year's service and \$66,000,000 had been authorized; by the 1st of January, 1862, a loan of \$125,000,000 had been made. By the 1st of August there were in the field 200,000 men and on the 8th the Confederate Congress authorized the enlistment of 400,000 men for 3 years' service and additional volunteers for local service.

The centers of organization for the Confederates during the summer and fall of 1861 were Yorktown and Centerville, where the troops were being disciplined under Beauregard and J. E. Johnston. Winchester in the Shenandoah Valley was the town where Gen. T. J. Jackson was collecting his hardy forces. Gens. R. E. Lee and H. A. Wise were at Lewisburg and Valley Mts., West Virginia; Gen. F. K. Zollicoffer was located at Knoxville. Gens. G. J. Pillow, S. B.

Buckner, A. S. Johnston and Leonidas Polk were stationed at Nashville and Memphis; Gen. Ben McCulloch was at Little Rock, and Gen. Sterling Price was gathering his Missouri volunteers at Springfield.

The problem of equipping the soldiers of the South was an enormous task. The country was not a manufacturing one. There were no iron foundries, nor powder mills; but after strenuous efforts by June 1, 1861, the Confederate Government had secured 250,000 pounds of powder, 140,000 muskets and rifles, 400 tons of sulphur had been found in New Orleans, and new uniforms, blankets, bridles, knapsacks, and many other valuable necessities of war had been provided. In the summer of '61 powder mills were established in South Carolina, North Carolina, Virginia, Georgia and Louisiana; eight arsenals were supplied with machinery for making clothes; the blockade runners were kept busy, and by the end of the year 1861, 300,000 men were fairly equipped and armed.

Preparations for the great conflict in the North.—

The United States Congress was holding a special session in Washington at the time of the battle of Bull Run. From July 22 to July 25 the President was authorized to call for 500,000 men for 3 years' service, with sufficient officers to command them and sufficient arms to equip them.

On July 29 an act was passed to raise for the regular army nine regiments of infantry, one of cavalry, and one of artillery. On August 5 it was authorized that a sufficient number of seamen be enlisted to place the navy in a good condition for active service. Financial measures were made in the act of July 13 to collect customs where laws could not be enforced at points of delivery and to declare insurrection in all parts of the United States where this enforcement had to be made.

The Secretary of the Treasury had been empowered by Congress (July 17) to borrow \$250,000,000 on the credit of

the Government by bond issue. On August 5 a large increase was made in the duties on imports.

By the act of August 6 President Lincoln was authorized to seize and confiscate all property employed or which might be employed in aiding the Confederacy.

Changes after Bull Run in the official arrangement of the Federal Army.— In the latter part of July Gen. G. B. McClellan,— who had, as we have seen, gained some minor successes in West Virginia before the battle of Bull Run,— was called to Washington to supersede McDowell. This change and the results of Bull Run caused the abandonment of the plan of the Unionists to force their way to Knoxville and help the Unionists of West Virginia, East Kentucky, and Tennessee. Gen. S. Rosecrans was left in command in West Virginia. Before this Gen. John C. Fremont had been appointed Commander of the West,— including Kentucky, Illinois, Missouri, and Kansas,— with his headquarters at St. Louis. Subject to General Fremont were Major Anderson at Louisville, Gen. B. M. Prentiss at Cairo, and Gen. Nathaniel Lyon at Springfield. In October Gen. W. T. Sherman assumed command in Major Anderson's place and was succeeded in November by Gen. Don Carlos Buell. About the end of September Gen. U. S. Grant, who was to become the foremost general in the Federal army, was placed at Cairo. General Fremont was superseded by General Hunter on November 1, and by the middle of the month H. W. Halleck was placed in command at St. Louis.

During the summer and fall of '61 over half a million men were organized, drilled, equipped, and placed in the field by the Federal Government. A large part of the credit of perfecting this great army belongs to General McClellan. The chief cities for organization were Washington, Cincinnati, Louisville, Cairo, and St. Louis. The manufacturers in the North were using all their ingenuity in producing clothing, arms, and ammunition; many iron and steel foundries were

changed to manufactories of arms, and by sending to Europe for supplies the armies were soon equipped.

The Federal navy was organized in order to facilitate the blockade. The West and Gulf squadrons were placed under Capt. N. W. McKean, the south Atlantic squadron was under Capt. S. F. DuPont, and the North Atlantic squadron was in command of Capt. L. M. Goldsborough. By December, 1861, the Navy consisted of about 260 ships, with 2500 guns and 2200 seamen.

CHAPTER V

THE MILITARY MOVEMENTS AFTER BULL RUN TO THE CLOSE OF '61

In Missouri, General Lyon,—after he had occupied the capital of the State on June 15,—proceeded up the Missouri River to Booneville, and on June 20 made an attack on 1800 Missourians, 600 of whom were armed with only imperfect small guns. One hundred Federals were killed and wounded, 3 Confederates were killed and 25 were wounded, while the rest were scattered in flight.

On July 3 General Price came from Booneville and General Jackson came from Lexington to form a junction near Warsaw on the Osage River.

Col. Franz Sigel, with 3,000 men, had been sent (June 23) to take possession of Springfield, Mo.,—the most important city in southwest Missouri,—and from there he had moved to Carthage, one and a half miles from which place General Jackson, then in command of the Confederates, had placed his army. Sigel had posted his army on a near-by hill, but was driven from his position and retreated during the night toward Springfield. He was joined July 13 by General Lyon, which made a Union force of 6000 men. The day after the battle General Price had arrived at Carthage with General McCulloch and Major Pearce, of Arkansas, with State troops numbering 2000 men.

On July 7 the whole force of Price was moved toward the boundary line of Indian Territory, where they remained several days organizing and drilling their raw troops. After this the Confederates decided to assume the offensive. The army now under McCulloch and Price advanced toward

Springfield; but a parley was held thirty miles from the city to settle a misunderstanding as to who was the ranking officer, it ended by General Price relinquishing the command to General McCulloch.

Battle of Wilson Creek.—General Lyon, now located at Springfield, had been fearful of the long retreat to Rolla,—one hundred miles away and the terminal of the railroad from St. Louis,—and had resolved to take the chance of a battle. On August 9 the Confederates stopped at Wilson Creek and Oak Hills, about nine miles to the southwest of Springfield. At sunrise of August 10 the Confederates were surprised and attacked both on the right flank and in front by Sigel and Lyon. The battle was fought where there was a heavy growth of underbrush, and for the number engaged it was a very desperate and bloody combat. At first the victory seemed to turn toward the Federals; but McCulloch saw the terrible strain on his right flank and sent heavy reinforcements. At the same time he placed himself at the head of two companies of Louisiana soldiers, and supported by Colonel Herbert's Louisiana Volunteers and McIntosh's mounted Arkansans, drove Sigel back, capturing every gun. General Lyon, hard pressed from the front by superior numbers, was making a desperate fight. Very anxious as to the result, he advanced to the nearest regiment, saying: "Forward, men! I will lead you," rode a short distance on his horse, was struck in the chest by two buckshot, and fell from his saddle dead.

The Federals had 5,600 men engaged. They lost 258 killed, 873 wounded and 300 prisoners, with 6 pieces of artillery captured. The death of General Lyon was a severe disaster to the army. He was an energetic, fearless man, and a capable officer. The Confederates had somewhat over 7,000 effective men in the battle. They lost 279 killed, 951 wounded,—a total of 1230.

Results of the battle.—The news of this success greatly

encouraged the Secessionists in Missouri; but the misunderstanding between McCulloch and Price caused a division of the Confederate army. Price held a commission from the State of Missouri and McCulloch from the Confederate Government. McCulloch now retired into Arkansas, while General Price, instead of pursuing Sigel's weakened army toward Rolla, moved northwest. On September 2 Price encountered the notorious General Lane at Drywood Creek, near the Kansas line, and drove his partisan forces back to Kansas. Price now captured Fort Scott and then moved to Lexington, Mo., on the banks of the Missouri River.

General Fremont's Movements.—Several weeks after General Lyon had started on the campaign that ended in his death General Fremont reached St. Louis and proceeded vigorously to organize and discipline troops for the purpose of gaining Federal control of Missouri and of holding Cairo, which is situated at the junction of the Ohio and the Mississippi. On the 1st of August he went to Cairo for the purpose of directing the control of organization, but returned to St. Louis (August 4), where he heard of the death of General Lyon, whom he had allowed to shift for himself instead of hurrying reinforcements to his aid.

On August 30 Fremont took to himself the authority of a military dictator and proclaimed martial law north of a line extending from Leavenworth, Kan., on the west, through Jefferson City and Rolla to Cape Girardeau on the Mississippi River. This law commanded that all persons taken with arms in their hands should be tried by court martial and, if found guilty, should be shot. It also ordered all slaves to be freed. This high-handed law created great excitement and received the disapproval of Mr. Lincoln.

Two months afterward Fremont was removed from the command of the Western Military Department; not, however, before he had committed another blunder. Before his removal

he had sent Colonel Mulligan, with 3,000 men and a battery of artillery, to fortify Lexington, 125 miles from Jefferson City, on the Missouri River. Mulligan reached the place September 9. General Price after the capture of Fort Scott (September 2) moved rapidly toward Lexington and appeared before the town on September 12, with a force of from 15,000 to 20,000 men. Fremont had sent Mulligan into a trap. On September 18 Price began the attack on Lexington, which was defended with marked bravery by the Federals; but they were forced to surrender (September 20). On Colonel Mulligan's giving his sword to General Price, the Confederate commander returned it, saying: "I could not see a man of your valor without his sword."

The Federals lost in killed and wounded 500 men, and surrendered 5 Colonels, 19 Commissioned officers, 3500 privates, 5 cannons, 3000 muskets and rifles, a large quantity of ammunition, 700 horses, and \$100,000 worth of commissary stores. The Confederate losses were very small.

General Price, followed by Fremont, now retreated to the southwestern part of the State with all the Missouri troops. At Neosha, Price formed a junction with McCulloch, who had again entered the State. Governor Jackson and part of the State legislature were assembled there, and a rump convention was held, in which ordinances of secession were passed.

General Fremont superseded by Hunter.—By slow marching Fremont reached Springfield on October 27, where he established his headquarters at Cassville, some fifty miles south,—in the Ozark Mountains, not more than fifteen miles from the Arkansas line. Fremont had planned to push the war into Arkansas, but at this juncture he was superseded by General Hunter, who deemed Fremont's plan a poor one, since he already found it difficult to provision his army at Springfield. He also felt that a large part of the Dutch and German division of his army was unfriendly to him; so

Hunter decided to move back to Rolla. Price now moved forward to Springfield, where he made headquarters, recruiting and gathering supplies for his army.

The record of Gen. Sterling Price's poorly equipped, ragged army of Missourians,— who had in four months marched 800 miles and been on the fighting line most of the time under the most adverse conditions,— was a wonder to the whole country. It had no parallel in the history of the war. We must leave the progress of affairs in Missouri for the present and turn to watch the great events that were happening in the States of Kentucky and Tennessee, and down the Mississippi River.

Kentucky had in August, '61 elected a strong Unionist legislature, and now rapidly abandoned the idea and sentiment of neutrality. On September 3 Gen. Leonidas Polk,— formerly the Episcopal bishop of Louisiana, now a major-general in the Confederate army,— had taken possession of Hickman, Chalk Bluff, and Columbus, Kentucky, on the Mississippi River. The legislature of the State sent a committee to him on September 9, requesting him to withdraw and respect the State's neutrality; but, as the Federal forces had for some time disregarded it, General Polk answered that he would withdraw provided the State would at the same time agree to make the Federal forces withdraw and would keep them out. The committee reported this answer to the legislature, and it at once passed resolutions declaring that the neutrality had been violated by the Confederacy. The governor vetoed the resolution, but a majority of the legislature voted for it; and thus the government of Kentucky was the declared enemy of the Confederacy. The neutrality of Kentucky had been a farce, the Government at Washington had ignored it, and were actively enlisting men and preparing with great activity to prevent any secession movements in that State, just as had been done in Missouri.

On September 19 General Zollicoffer, who had been col-

lecting Confederate forces from around Knoxville advanced from Cumberland Gap to Barboursville, Knox County, Ky., and scattered 1500 Federals. He then proceeded to London, Laurel County, where a Union camp was broken.

On September 18 Gen. S. B. Buckner, with a considerable number of Kentucky State guards and soldiers entered Bowling Green,—then an important point on Big Barren River and the Louisville & Nashville Railroad as it branched to Nashville and Memphis, Tenn.

On September 4, 1861, Gen. U. S. Grant, who had superseded General Curtis, occupied Cairo, Ill., with about 14,000 troops. He sent some of these to Paducah, Ky., at the mouth of the Tennessee River on September 5. General Polk had been fortifying and strengthening Columbus, in Kentucky, and Belmont, on the opposite side of the Mississippi River in Missouri. General Grant on the 1st day of November ordered Gen. C. F. Smith to make a feint with land forces from Paducah to aid his move against Columbus.

Battle of Belmont.—Grant, with 4000 men in large boats, dropped down the Mississippi River to a point 5 miles above Columbus, and on the morning of the 7th of November advanced on the Missouri side against General Pillow, who had three regiments at Belmont. Pillow was now driven back toward the river and the Federals began to plunder the Confederates' camps. General Cheatham was sent by General Polk across from Columbus with three regiments, rapidly followed by two more, to assist General Pillow's scattered troops, and landed above Belmont. General Grant saw the danger of being cut off from his transports and was forced to order a hasty retreat, and after great difficulty and in considerable confusion barely escaped with his own life.

The Federal losses were 120 killed, 383 wounded, and 104 captured or missing.

The Confederates lost from 500 to 600 killed and wounded, and two guns.

The battle of Belmont was a Confederate victory. The Federals were thoroughly repulsed; the Confederates, however, were prevented from sending any assistance to Price in Missouri, and for the time all aggressive movements of the Federals were diverted down the Mississippi River.

CHAPTER VI

MILITARY EVENTS IN THE EAST FROM THE TIME OF BULL RUN TO THE YEAR 1862

West Virginia after Bull Run.—The victories of McClellan at Rich Mountain and Laurel Hill had forced General Wise to fall back to Lewisburg on the Greenbrier River. On August 1, after the first battle of Bull Run, President Davis resolved to try to recover this part of Old Virginia. So he sent General J. B. Floyd,—who had been Governor of Virginia and Secretary of War under Buchanan,—with three regiments and a battery of cavalry to assume command in the Kanawha Valley.

General Floyd was now opposed to General Cox and forced him to fall back from Gauley Bridge to New River, the south branch of the Great Kanawha River. General Wise was left here to hold Cox in check while Floyd moved northeast to Carnifex Ferry, on the opposite side of the Gauley River about five miles from Summerville, Nicholas County. This move was to check reinforcements, under Colonel Tyler, sent by Rosecrans from Clarksburg. On the morning of the 26th of August, Floyd surprised the Seventh Ohio regiment at Cross Lane, near the Ferry, and scattered it.

The Federals lost 200 killed and wounded.

Floyd now fortified Carnifex Ferry.

On September 10 Rosecrans appeared with 10,000 men and assaulted the works, but was severely repulsed by Floyd, who had only 1750 men. Floyd had asked General Wise in vain to send him aid. During the night Floyd evacuated his fortifications and moved to Sewell's Mountain, which he strongly

fortified. Rosecrans did not follow, because his troops were much exhausted by their long march from Clarksburg and by the repulse they had received.

After General Garnett's death Gen. Robert E. Lee was sent at once to take his place, and with great patience and skill, moved his army to the upper valley of Greenbrier River, in front of the Cheat Mountain defiles. Most of the natives of that region were Union sympathizers and a great number of Lee's soldiers were sick with measles and from exposure, as he states to his wife in a letter written September 1. The roads were in a dreadful condition and almost impassable. When General Lee learned of Rosecrans' march to the Kanawha Valley he maneuvered against the brigade of Reynolds.

Lee's failure at Cheat Mountain.—The Federal commander, General Reynolds, held a strong position on the center summit of Cheat Mountain Pass. After twice reconnoitering the field Colonel Albert Rust, of the Third Arkansas regiment, reported to General Lee that he considered that the position could be taken. Therefore, on September 8 General Lee gave to Colonel Rust 1200 infantry and the rest of the army was divided into three divisions, one of which, under Gen. H. R. Jackson, was to move by the turnpike. General Anderson's division was to move to the rear of Reynolds on the west top of Cheat Mountain and Lee's was to move down the Tygart River valley and attack the Federals. The plan was to act on hearing Colonel Rust's guns. The night was stormy and the army, all in readiness, waited in vain for the signal of Rust's guns. The whole plan fell through, Rust had failed to attack, because he claimed that a few captured scouts and pickets had reported that the force he was to attack greatly outnumbered his own. Thus the best arranged and matured plans of a genius of war may be completely ruined by a subaltern or a colonel of infantry. Gen. H. R. Jackson with 2500 men was left by General Lee at Cheat Mountain to watch Reynolds, while on September 20 Lee

joined General Wise at Sewell Mountain and ordered Floyd to join them. On September 22 Lee assumed command and extended the defenses.

General Rosecrans now advanced and occupied Big Sewell Mountain with an army of 17,000 men. The combined Confederate army of Wise, Floyd, and Loring was 8000. The breach of friendship between Wise and Floyd was patched. Lee's army occupied a mountain parallel to Rosecrans. Each army now awaited an attack from the other, realizing that the attacking party in such a country would be at a great disadvantage. After 12 days of waiting and watching Rosecrans, on the night of October 6, retreated. The rain and mud prevented General Lee from following.

Gen. H. R. Jackson, with the withdrawal of Lee from Cheat Mountain, had taken up his position on Buffalo Hill, where he was attacked October 3 by the Federals with a force of 4000 men. These were repulsed with a loss of 250 to 300 killed and wounded. The Confederates' loss was 42 killed and wounded.

The severe winter terminated the West Virginia Campaign and that section was left in the hands of the Federals.

General Floyd was sent to Tennessee and Kentucky; General Wise returned to Virginia and afterward went to North Carolina, and General Lee was sent to improve the fortifications of the coasts of North Carolina and South Carolina.

The campaign in West Virginia rather impaired the military reputation of Gen. Robert E. Lee as a skillful commander. The Southern people had expected that Reynolds and Rosecrans would be defeated and driven from their strong situation. They did not consider the difficulties of the route, the sickness of the army, the rain, mud, and swollen streams,—they wanted only success and victory. This is the result by which military leaders are judged. President Jefferson Davis and Governor Letcher of Virginia were the two men of the Southern Confederacy who could clearly see

that capability and greatness were the characteristics of Gen. Lee. A great part of the glory that later came to the Confederate arms was due to the fact that President Davis' faith in Gen. R. E. Lee as a genius of war never wavered in the greatest trial and stress of the Confederacy's history.

Important events in Old Virginia from the Battle of Bull Run to the year 1862.—McClellan had been practically placed in full command of the forces at Washington and on the Potomac. He had allowed the Confederates to advance their outskirt lines to Munson Hill, within a few miles of Alexandria. August, September, and half of October were consumed by McClellan in drilling, organizing, and equipping the great army of 150,000 men, supplied with 200 pieces of artillery and all the necessary munitions of war. Nearly 75,000 men of this great force, possessing fifty artillery guns, were to be used for garrisoning the cities of Annapolis, Washington, and Baltimore. The other 75,000 men, with one hundred and fifty guns, were necessary for active service. They were divided into eleven divisions under Generals McDowell, Stone, Banks, McCall, Smith, Fitz J. Porter, Blenker, Keyes, Franklin, Heintzelman, and Hooker.

The Confederate Generals Johnston and Beauregard, with 50,000 men, moved back to Centerville from this advanced position in the stillness of the night of October 15. General Evans of the Confederate army was at Leesburg, on the left, General Johnston was at Centerville, Holmes was at Aquia Creek, and Magruder still faced Butler at Yorktown.

The insistence of the Northern people, the backward movement of the Confederates to Centerville, and the annoying blockade of Washington by the Confederate batteries on the lower Potomac caused McClellan to assume the offensive. General McCall, who had been sent on October 14 to reconnoiter in front of Centerville as far as Dranesville, fifteen miles from Leesburg,—reported to McClellan on October 19 that he had not encountered any of the enemy.

Ball's Bluff.—On October 20 General Stone, who was at Poolesville, Md.,—on the Potomac River just above Georgetown,—was ordered to keep a lookout on Leesburg and make a slight demonstration toward the town, which lay a few miles south of the Potomac. On the Virginia side of the river was a high bank, called Ball's Bluff, near which was a considerable forest.

Accordingly General Stone sent Colonel Devens, of the Fifteenth Massachusetts, over to Harrison Island, midway of the stream, on the evening of the 20th, with further orders to send a small scouting party to the Virginia shore in order to locate the Confederates. At 9 p. m. the scouting party reported to Colonel Devens that an unguarded camp of Confederates had been discovered a short distance from Ball's Bluff. General Stone was at once informed of the situation; and an hour later he ordered Colonel Devens to move five companies of his regiment to the south shore and at daybreak to attack the Confederate camp; and after the Confederates had been routed to return to the landing.

Colonel Devens in good time crossed to the Virginia shore and at daybreak was ready to attack the supposed Confederate camp, which turned out to be a myth. He marched to within a mile of Leesburg before any Confederates were observed (7 a. m., October 21). He now fell back to the open space on the Bluff to await reinforcements. His position was exposed. He was surrounded by woods on one side and the deep, rapid river on the other; and he was without sufficient means to cross in an emergency. Meanwhile Colonel Lee had reinforced Devens with part of the Twentieth Massachusetts, which now had about 1000 men.

The firing began from the Confederate lines a little after noon. Colonel E. D. Baker of the California regiment,—who had been ordered by Stone to assume chief command,—hastening to the Bluff, arrived about 2 p. m., with the remaining regiment of Devens in addition to Lee's and a part

of the New York Tammany regiment,— nearly 2500 men,— just at the time when Colonel Devens was most sorely pressed. Colonel Baker now assumed command and formed a line; the fighting became fierce; the odds were against the Federals, and at about 4 p. m. Colonel Baker was shot through the head. General Evans' Confederates now ordered a charge of all the forces; whereupon the Federal soldiers gave way in a terrified rout, hundreds being driven over the Bluff in utter dismay. The whole army, with the advancing reinforcements, was panic stricken and several hundred perished in the river. They were raw troops and had never seen battle, and instead of assisting in the victory they had expected, they were met by an enthusiastic, exulting foe. In the fearful disaster of Ball's Bluff the Federals lost 1000,— killed, wounded, and drowned,— and 100 prisoners. The losses of the Confederates were 150, killed and wounded.

The North was much humiliated by the Ball's Bluff disaster; but the authorities at Washington minimized the loss, and made a scapegoat of General Stone in order to shield others higher in rank, as is often the case. He was imprisoned for six months and released without trial.

General McClellan continued to drill and equip his army. On December 20 Gen. J. E. B. Stuart with an army of 2500, while foraging at Dranesville, was attacked by General Ord, with a force of 3500, and compelled to retire, with a loss of 200 Confederates. This was the last conflict of 1861 and the only success McClellan had achieved since the Rich Mountain victory in West Virginia.

Romney and Bath Campaign.—In September Gen. Stonewall Jackson commanded in and around Winchester. He was accompanied by Colonel Turner Ashby, with 1200 cavalry, and General Loring's command, which, after 250 miles march from West Virginia, had joined Jackson at Winchester. On 1st day of January, 1862, he began the march to Romney with 9000 men over the roughest country

in the East and through the bitterest winter weather. It was a severe trial. Many of his soldiers were without tents, boots, and hats. He accomplished his purpose, which was to force the Federals, 11,000 strong, to ford the Potomac River in the coldest weather. He captured many of the enemy and large quantities of supplies for his army; but a great number of his soldiers succumbed to the cruel exposure.

This closed the military movements on land for the severe winter season.

CHAPTER VII

INSTITUTION OF SOUTHERN BLOCKADE

Naval operations during 1861.— The Federal navy was almost disorganized in May, 1861. Many of the officers had joined the Confederacy, and at the beginning of the war much naval material and several vessels had been seized by the Confederates.

One of the wisest measures that Lincoln instituted on his entrance into office was the establishment of the blockade system along the Southern coast. This seemed to be an almost impossible task, but it had become practically effective by the end of 1861.

At the opening of the war the Federal navy consisted of 90 ships-of-war and 1800 guns. One year afterward there were 386 ships and 3027 guns. In every available harbor of the East and on the Mississippi River and the Ohio River vessels were being built, and foundries worked day and night to supply them. Mr. Mallory, Secretary of the Confederate Navy Department, was slow in his efforts and administration, leaving the seacoast of the South exposed and defenseless in many places.

On August 28, 1861, General Butler and Commodore Stringham led a successful expedition against Hatteras Inlet, which was a very important point and a rendezvous for the Confederates. The Federals lost 5, wounded. The Confederates lost 23, killed and wounded, and 665 prisoners.

On October 9 Fort Pickens off Pensacola was preserved and it was held during the remainder of the war by the Unionists, while Fort McRae on the west side was held by the Confederates. In October at Old Point Comfort a great

naval expedition was organized to operate against Port Royal. Captain Samuel F. Dupont was the commander of the 15 war vessels, and General Thomas W. Sherman of the 15,000 soldiers on 30 transports.

On November 3 this force was observed approaching the harbor of Port Royal, S. C. First Fort Walker, on Hilton Head, and Fort Beauregard, on the opposite side were taken, with 50 guns and 2000 prisoners. The Confederates also lost 100 killed and wounded. The Federal loss was 31, killed and wounded. Dupont also captured Fort Tybee Island at the mouth of the Savannah River. This was a great Federal success, as it gave to them early in the war a strong foothold on the Southern seacoast.

The Mason and Slidell Affair.—On November 8, 1861, an incident occurred which almost precipitated war between the North and Great Britain. James M. Mason and John Slidell, with their families, had been sent by President Davis to England in order to represent the Confederacy in that country. An English vessel at Havana, called the *Trent*, had taken them on board. Captain Charles Wilkes, of the United States war-ship *San Jacinto*, waylaid the *Trent* in the Bahama Channel and forcibly overhauled it, demanding the surrender of Mason and Slidell, and upon the refusal of the demand, without the consent of the English captain, Mason and Slidell were by force transferred to the *San Jacinto*. They were then sent to Fort Warren in Boston Harbor.

This event was looked upon by the British Government as an insult to their flag, and for a while it seemed as if the release of the prisoners would be the only way out of the trouble.

The public of the North approved of the action of Captain Wilkes and praised him accordingly. Lincoln declared that the United States must respect the rights of neutral nations and that their war vessels had no right to detain and take

Mason and Slidell without trial by a regular prize court of the United States. He then authorized that Mason and Slidell be released. This was a wise piece of diplomacy on the part of the Federal Government; but was a great disappointment to the Confederates, who had hoped that the naval efficiency of the North would be injured, thus destroying the blockade. The Southern people also considered it an act of cowardice on the part of the North to make concession so readily to England's demands.

This practically closed the main events of the Civil War for the year 1861.

CHAPTER VIII

MILLS SPRINGS AND FORT DONELSON

The Year 1862.— At the beginning of this year the forces of the North as well as those of the South were well organized. The line of defense of the Confederates extended from Yorktown on the eastern coast of Virginia, along the southern Potomac to Aquia Creek, Centerville, Leesburg, Winchester, thence to the head of the Great Kanawha Valley to Cumberland Gap, and from there to Bowling Green, Ky.,— on the Big Barren River,— then westward to Fort Donelson on the Cumberland River, and Fort Henry on the Tennessee, and taking in Columbus on the Mississippi and Springfield, in southwestern Missouri.

The year 1862 opened with a series of terrible reverses to the Confederates, the reason for which was want of material to supply their soldiers and a proper appreciation of the mighty preparations the Federal Government had been making after the humiliation at Bull Run and Ball's Bluff.

On January 10, 1862, Gen. James A. Garfield, with 2000 men, met the Confederate forces commanded by Colonel Humphrey Marshall at Middle Creek, a very short distance west of Prestonburg, Ky. It was a drawn battle, both parties claiming the victory. The Confederates withdrew to Pound Gap and General Garfield to Pointsville.

Mills Springs.— Soon after the conflict at Prestonburg the Federal forces occupied Somerset and Columbia; this caused the Confederates to abandon Barbourville and the extreme eastern part of Kentucky. A few days later 4000 Confederate soldiers, under Generals Zollicoffer and Critten-

den advanced to Mills Springs on the south side of the Cumberland River, about 15 miles from Somerset.

General George Thomas, who was located at Columbia, and General Schoef, who was at Somerset, had been ordered by General Buell to form a junction and attack the Confederates. Crittenden was very anxious to attack these armies separately, for the condition of his men was anything but encouraging, since they had been almost destitute of supplies for some time on account of the poorness of the country about them. Their supply-boats had been prevented from coming up the Cumberland by the Federals stationed at Columbia. Crittenden had fortified Mills Springs on the south bank of the Cumberland, and had then crossed to the north side, fortifying Camp Beach Grove with earth-works.

At midnight of January 19 Crittenden ordered his army forward, hoping to surprise General Thomas. However, before his arrival the Federal generals had joined their forces. In the early morning hours, with an impetuous charge, the Confederates caused considerable confusion in the Federal ranks. While reconnoitering General Zollicoffer with his staff rode by mistake into the part of the Federal lines that were under Colonel Fry. The general saluted, and being mistaken for a Federal officer, was riding away when one of his staff with foolhardiness fired at the line. The volley that immediately followed caused the general to be pierced by several balls. The dead body of Zollicoffer was recognized by the Federals and insulted by the soldiers.

After the fall of Zollicoffer the Confederates were depressed. Crittenden, with great heroism, tried to turn the tide, but without avail. General Thomas rushed his fresh troops to the front and at the same time started a flank movement. The Confederates were forced to retreat to Camp Beach Grove, which they reached about dark. This stopped

the Federal advance. During the night Crittenden retreated across the river to Mills Springs.

The battle of Mills Springs was a severe blow to the Confederate cause in eastern Kentucky. It was a fight against great odds. The Federals had nearly 10,000 men in active service,—all well provisioned and abundantly supplied with artillery. Crittenden had somewhat more than 4000 men,—hungry, poorly supplied with arms, and with only six or seven guns.

The Confederates lost 500 men, killed and wounded, besides their brave commander, also a great amount of their ammunition and stores, horses, wagons, and artillery. They were forced to retreat to Nashville.

The Federals lost only about 250, killed and wounded.

Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston was in command of the Confederate forces on the Mississippi River from Bowling Green to Columbus. He was supposed to have a large force, but in reality at the time of the battle of Mills Creek his whole army,—which stretched over this immense territory, with three great rivers to guard,—did not exceed 25,000 men.

General Buell had an army of 40,000, situated in front of Johnston, and extending to Louisville. Thomas was on Johnston's right, with 12,000 men; Gen. C. F. Smith, with 5000 men, was at Paducah; and Gen. U. S. Grant, with 15,000, held Cairo. At the same time that Thomas was ordered against Crittenden at Mills Springs, Grant was ordered against Columbus and also to make a demonstration toward Fort Henry, on the Tennessee River, and Fort Donelson, on the Cumberland. This strategy was successful, it prevented Johnston from sending reinforcements to Crittenden, leaving him to be defeated by a far superior force at Mills Springs. General Smith's report to Halleck of his reconnoissance up the Tennessee River caused Grant to urge Halleck to allow him to make a campaign against Forts Henry and Donelson.

By order of Halleck in the early part of February, 1862, Gen. U. S. Grant and Commodore Andrew H. Foote with a force of seven gunboats and 17,000 men moved up the Tennessee River. On the 4th of February the Federal forces arrived at a place three miles below Fort Henry; and on the morning of February 6 Grant, with 12,000 men, moved up the east bank of the river, while General Smith, with other troops, made ready to assault Fort Heiman near the south-east edge of Calloway County, Ky., on the west side of the river. Commodore Foote was to attack the fort from the river.

General Loyd Tilghman had very cleverly withdrawn his forces from Fort Heiman and sent them together with 2500 men from Fort Henry to Fort Donelson; and, in order to make good their retreat, had remained with 80 artillerists at Fort Henry, which was badly situated and was rendered almost ineffectual by the high water. On February 6, at 1 p. m., Commodore Foote began a vigorous attack on Fort Henry; and after it had lasted two hours General Tilghman was forced to surrender. The Confederates lost 20, killed and wounded, and 60 were taken prisoners. The Federal loss was 73, killed and wounded.

Fort Donelson.—After the battle of Mills Springs General A. S. Johnston had decided to move south of the Cumberland, twelve miles from Fort Henry. General S. B. Buckner had retired with troops from central Kentucky, after the capture of Fort Henry, to the little village of Dover. General Pillow arrived at Fort Donelson on February 9. On February 13 General Floyd, senior officer, with a brigade of Virginians, reached the fort and assumed command. Thus fortified General Johnston had determined to fight for the defense of Nashville and the whole of Tennessee. The fortress,—as was often the case with those of the Confederates,—covered too large an area for the number of troops available to hold it. General Johnston made the mistake of

not being present in person to encourage and command this critical point, instead of leaving it to less experienced officers. The fort guarded the river effectually but was in turn commanded in the rear by an elevation somewhat higher than the fort.

The day following the capture of Fort Henry, General Grant, with his staff and a few companies of cavalry, reconnoitered to within a mile of Fort Donelson, and outlined his method of approach. By noon of February 12 he had marched 15,000 men from Fort Henry, under McClelland and Smith, and had left General Lew Wallace temporarily at Fort Henry and Fort Heiman. Commodore Foote had been sent around to come up the Cumberland.

McClelland was placed on the right wing and Smith formed the left, covering the ridge opposite the fort.

Fort Donelson consisted of fortifications extending two miles along the river, supplied with one 32 pound rifled gun and one 8 inch gun; 32 eight-pounders and 33 two-pounders. A strong fort commanded the river, and a line of rifle-pits extended up-stream one mile to a slough. Hickman Creek on the down-stream side ran back of the fort, which prevented a force from moving up the bank of the stream to make an attack; beyond the rifle-pit was the higher ridge, which Grant's quick eye discovered would make the fort almost untenable, if heavy artillery was placed on it.

Grant did not wait for Foote to arrive with his boats but attacked at 11 a. m., February 13. However, the gun-boat *Carondelet*, under the command of Captain Walke, had arrived in the early hours of the 13th and had fired a few shots against the lower forts; but they were without effect. Colonel Morrison's brigade was ordered by McClelland to begin the attack; but was severely repulsed. The Federal infantry was badly beaten on the afternoon of the 13th and was much dispirited, while the Confederates were victorious and hopeful. The fearful cold and exposure during the fight at

Fort Donelson was responsible for the death of many a soldier. No truce was allowed, and many of the wounded were frozen to death. During the night of the 13th the Confederates were much harassed by the Federal sharpshooters; and that same night Foote arrived with 5 gun-boats, and 6 full regiments of Thayer's brigade on transports. General Lew Wallace arrived in the early morning of the 14th from Fort Henry, with the 2000 soldiers who had been left there.

Grant now had an army of 23,000 men, besides the forces on the gun-boats. He now made a third division to be placed under the command of Gen. Lew Wallace. This division was to form the center in order to hold the Confederates while the fleet attacked the forts from the river and made a junction with McClernand's right wing. At 2:30 p. m., February 14, Foote with 6 gun-boats and 46 guns, began his attack on the river forts. The flag-ship *St. Louis* was badly damaged early in the action and Commodore Foote was severely wounded. The Confederate fire was very destructive, all the Federal vessels were more or less injured and the gun-boats were forced to retire down-stream with 54 killed and wounded men. There had been no one killed in the Confederate batteries, nor were any seriously injured.

The two days' fight had been favorable to the Confederates, yet their sufferings from the cold had been fearful, for the thermometer had been 10 degrees above zero. Their casualties had not been as great as those of the Federals, but Grant was constantly receiving large reinforcements, and his army now consisted of fully 27,000 soldiers, besides Foote's command, whereas the Confederates had scarcely 13,000 effective men.

The night of February 14 General Floyd held a council of war, where the plan devised for the early morning was for General Pillow to attack McClernand on the Federal right and S. B. Buckner to attack the left and center of the Federal army along the Wynn Road Ferry. On the morning of February 15, after a fearful and stubborn fight, the right of

the Federal army fell back to Wynn Road Ferry. The Confederate attack had been successful all along the line. The Wynn Road was opened. Forrest's cavalry had charged on the right, and Pillow's division had forced McClernand's command to retreat in confusion. It seemed as if the crisis of the stubborn conflict had come and that victory was only waiting for the Confederates to seize it, but as often happened during the dreadful years of the Civil War, for lack of coördinated action, a blunder, or the absence of some strong commanding spirit ready to seize the opportunity, the golden moments were lost. Buckner instead of being urged to follow up his success had been ordered back to his intrenchments by General Pillow, who at the critical period failed to measure up to the standard of a wise, farseeing commander. The hesitation was fatal.

General Grant, who had been five miles down the river to see the wounded Foote, on returning was met by the confused and disordered troops of McClernand, whom he urged back into line. Grant was evidently very anxious and sent a despatch to Foote for aid. He now ordered General Smith to assault and, if possible, carry the works vacated by Buckner on following up his success. Smith's troops, with great persistency and courage, carried out the order of their leader successfully; and what had seemed to be a Confederate victory was turned into a severe defeat, partially due to the blunder of the Confederate commander but mainly to the foresight and timely presence of General Grant.

The Confederates had fought as bravely and heroically as was possible for men to do; but the artillery of Smith commanded the Confederate position, which was now untenable. The night of February 15 closed over the Confederate army with a choice of three alternatives: to be slaughtered, to surrender, or to make an attempt to escape in the darkness. At midnight a council was held between Generals Pillow, Floyd, and Buckner. In the midst of their discussion the indomit-

able Forrest, returning from an inspection tour, appeared among them and reported that he considered it possible for a great part of the army to escape. The command was turned over to General Buckner. General Floyd and General Pillow, with a portion of their command, escaped on two small steamers to Nashville; for they considered it probable that they would be hanged if they were captured, as they had been United States public officers before the beginning of hostilities. General Forrest returned to his hardy soldiers, and by fording the backwaters of the slough, escaped with nearly a thousand men to join A. S. Johnston. They always claimed that a great part of the army could have done the same, if the senior officer had made the effort. In the morning Buckner raised a flag of truce and opened parley with Grant, whose ultimatum was "Unconditional Surrender."

This was truly a very great disaster for the Confederates. They had engaged 14,850 men; there were killed and wounded in the three days' fight 2000 men, 1134 of whom had been sent out of the lines. From 800 to 1000 men had followed Forrest and nearly 1000 went with Pillow and Floyd up the river on that dreadful night or escaped in some other way. Forty guns and 11,916 prisoners fell into the hands of the Federals.

The victory of the Federals was dearly purchased, for they lost 500 killed, 2152 wounded, and 224 missing.

Results: A. S. Johnston had ordered the evacuation of Bowling Green while the fight was going on at Fort Donelson, and, on hearing of the loss of Fort Donelson, his troops passed through Nashville to Murfreesboro, where he was joined by Crittenden. Here he remained a few weeks collecting the fugitives from Fort Donelson and Nashville, which places were occupied by the Federals. By the middle of March he had an army of 17,000 men. He then moved over the Memphis & Charleston Railroad to join Beauregard; and the two generals were later joined by General Polk, who had been forced to

evacuate Columbus because of the Confederate defeat at Fort Donelson. Half of his forces had been retained to fortify Island No. 10,— 45 miles south of Columbus,— which was at first under the supervision of General Beauregard.

An unpleasant controversy between Grant, Halleck, and Buell retarded to some extent the Federals from following up their victory at Fort Donelson. By an order of McClellan, Buell on February 15 moved toward Nashville. Halleck was Grant's superior, but the latter after the capture of the fort had sent General C. F. Smith to occupy Clarksville. Nelson, by General McClellan's orders to Buell, was sent to reinforce Grant at Fort Donelson; but as Grant had no need of more troops he ordered Nelson (February 23) up the river to form a junction with Buell. They landed on the south bank and occupied the city much to the trepidation of Buell, who feared that Johnston would return and annihilate him. Grant had previously written to Halleck for orders but receiving none had gone to Nashville, and according to envious and slanderous reports, neglected his command by getting drunk; for which lack of respect for his superiors, he was released from his command by Halleck,— Gen. C. F. Smith being placed above him.

The army had by March 9 returned to Fort Henry. Smith had selected Pittsburg Landing,— a place about 20 miles from Corinth, Miss.,— as their basis of operations. Some 25,000 troops were now ordered up the Tennessee River. Smith, who was an active, capable soldier, established headquarters at Savannah, and concentrated several divisions at Pittsburg Landing under Sherman, McClernand, and Hurlbut. General Lew Wallace was stationed at Crump's Landing, four miles above Savannah, on the west bank of the Tennessee, to protect the Purdy Road.

On the 22d of February, 1862, the second inauguration of President Davis took place at Richmond. The fall of Fort Donelson had produced a feeling of gloom in the capital, and

the day itself was remarkable for its extraordinarily dismal appearance and for the torrents of rain that fell. The President did not minimize the great obstacles the South would have to overcome in order to become a separate and distinct nation.

On April 16, 1862, the leader of the Confederacy considered it wise to put into effect the conscript law.

CHAPTER IX

SHILOH

A few days after the appointment of General Smith to the command of the army that had captured Fort Donelson, General Grant was exonerated of the charge preferred against him. On March 17 Grant reached Savannah on the Tennessee and assumed command of all the forces on the river, having under his command 40,000 men.

Buell had been ordered to proceed from Nashville, to form a junction with Grant on the Tennessee, but fear of an attack by A. S. Johnston and swollen streams caused him to delay. His army would have given Grant the enormous force of 65,000 effective men. Buell lingered until March 30 at Columbia, 50 miles south of Nashville and 75 miles from Savannah. Nelson at length became impatient of Buell's delay, and hastened to join Grant, pushing his division rapidly forward before the main army moved; which accounts for his arrival on the first day of the battle of Shiloh.

Gen. A. S. Johnston had been severely and unjustly criticised for the defeat at Fort Donelson and for his evacuation of Tennessee and was very eager to crush Grant before he could be reinforced. He arrived at Corinth, Miss., on March 23 and assumed full command of all the Confederate forces in this vicinity on March 29, with Beauregard as second in command, and Gen. Braxton Bragg, chief of staff.

Beauregard had drawn up a plan of battle, which was approved by Johnston, his commanding officer. He determined at once to attack the Federal army at Pittsburg Landing before Buell could come to Grant's aid. The Federals, though aware of the near presence of the Con-

federate forces, did not anticipate the fearful ordeal they were to undergo. The division of Sherman was stationed on the right of the Federals and that of Prentiss on the left, in the vicinity of the Shiloh log church, about one mile in advance of McClernand, Hurlbut, W. H. L. Wallace, and Smith, who were near Pittsburg Landing. Lew Wallace with 7000 men was at Crump Landing five miles down the river. Sherman's forces rested on Owl Creek, and Prentiss' forces extended to Lick Creek. These creeks were about three miles apart, intersected by a small plateau and the roads that extended from Pittsburg Landing to Corinth, from Hamburg Landing to Corinth, and one to Purdy, a Tennessee town, just north of Corinth. A road also extended from Pittsburg Landing to Crump's Landing and westward across Snake River,—about one mile from the Tennessee River.

The Battle.—On the morning of April 4 Johnston ordered his army to begin the march from Corinth, which was twenty miles from Pittsburg Landing. He fully expected to reach the field of action in one day in order to make the attack on the morning of April 5; but the roads were so heavy from rain that the movement of the army was slow. It was late in the afternoon of April 5 before his forces arrived at the intersection of the Pittsburg Landing and Hamburg Roads, where he proposed to deploy his troops. His army consisted of 40,335 infantry, artillery, and cavalry, in three lines of battle, under General Hardee, and General Bragg, supported by Generals Polk and Breckinridge. It was decided to begin the attack as early as possible on the following morning.

In the early morning hours of Sunday, April 6, 1862, Johnston ordered his first line to make rapid advance. A musketry fire was opened upon them by the advance forces of the Federals. The impetuous charge of the Confederates drove the Federal battalions before them into the angle between Snake Creek and Pittsburg Landing, and by 10:30 a. m. the fearful and deadly conflict raged all along the line.

The Federal left wing had suffered severely, many guns and prisoners had been captured, while General Prentiss' division had been cut to pieces and he himself captured. Sherman on the Federal right bravely tried to check the enthusiastic onrush of the victorious Confederates. The army was saved from total annihilation by his skill and pluck, to a greater extent than by that of any other Federal general. His obstinate resistance and quick judgment delayed the Confederate advance on the Federals' right. This delay was one feature that prevented a successful termination of the first day's battle for the Confederates.

The irreparable loss to the Confederates of their general, A. S. Johnston, at two o'clock, helped to turn the tide of events and possibly saved the Federal army from a complete overthrow. As Johnston was leading his army to victory in advance of Breckinridge's and Bowen's forces, he was struck by a minié ball in the calf of the leg. He did not at first realize the seriousness of the wound and neglected it for a few moments until he felt great faintness. The bullet had cut an artery, the loss of blood causing his death in a very short time.

The news of Johnston's death was kept from the Confederates for a short time. General Beauregard now assumed full command. The Federal division of W. H. L. Wallace was next shattered and he himself was killed.

Late in the evening of this eventful day the Unionists were terrified. Thousands of them were huddled under the banks of the Tennessee River at Pittsburg Landing; all organization was gone, and it seemed as if their complete destruction could have been accomplished had there been one grand united effort on the part of the Confederate forces.

General Bragg was to make the final charge on the Federals' left; but fortune seemed to say, "Thus far thou shalt go and no farther." At this critical period, under the guiding hand of Grant, Webster's battery had been placed in

a commanding position on the heights that were just above the Landing and overlooking the ravine and slope up which Bragg had to come. The well-directed batteries, with the timely support of two gunboats and one of Nelson's brigades, caused a temporary halt in the line of the charging Confederates, who now fell back into the ravine to reform. The gunboat fire was causing more noise than damage, as the shots were passing over the Confederates. Night was falling fast, the Confederates were exhausted from their previous day's march and twelve hours of hard fighting. The soldiers, excited by their enormous booty, were beginning to become disorganized. General Beauregard thought that Buell could not reach Grant until the next day. This was the great mistake of his military career, and was so considered by many Confederate officers and privates who were in the battle. Many Federals who were present at Shiloh regarded the action of Beauregard as the cause of their success. It is, however, a question that will never be settled. It looks as if the guiding hand of providence or the lack of a masterful military genius at the helm caused the Confederates to lose several golden opportunities of this character during the great war.

The night of April 5 was wild and stormy, but that historic Sunday morning, April 6, 1862, dawned bright and clear. The night after the first day's battle was chilly; and a drizzling rain was again falling, as if nature were sorrowful over the woes of mankind. During the night Buell was transporting 24,000 fresh troops to the relief of Grant. Wallace with his 7000 men reached the field soon after nightfall. The Federals were busy reorganizing their forces; while the Confederates, disturbed by the gunboats, felt considerable uncertainty as to their victory, for they had no fresh troops to aid them on the morrow. Beauregard on the morning of April 7 had only 30,000 effective troops, who had all fought the previous day. Grant and Buell had a great army

of 58,000 effective men,—practically double the force of the Confederates,—half of whom were fresh troops.

Nelson opened the battle early on the morning of April 7, but was repulsed. From then on the whole Confederate army was gradually forced back by the largely superior Union forces.

The Confederate retreat began slowly and in perfect order at 2 p. m. The gallant Breckinridge had been commissioned by Beauregard to act as rear guard, and with the intrepid cavalry leader Gen. N. B. Forrest, he was wonderfully successful. The night of April 7 the Confederates rested practically on the same ground they had occupied April 5. No pursuit of importance was made by the Federals; and Beauregard retired leisurely to Corinth on the 8th,—an act that redounded greatly to his military fame. The losses on both sides were fearful. The Confederate loss was 1723 killed, 8012 wounded, 959 missing; a total of 10,694. The Federals claimed Shiloh as a victory, but it was purchased at the fearful price of 1513 killed, 6601 wounded, and 2830 missing in Grant's army; and 241 killed, 1807 wounded, and 2158 missing in Buell's; a grand total of 13,047.

The results of Shiloh. General Grant fails to follow up his advantage.—The loss of A. S. Johnston was a great blow to the Confederate cause in the West, for he ranked among the greatest of the military leaders of America. President Davis paid a beautiful tribute to his memory; and on his burial at New Orleans the city was wrapped in grief.

Fort Pillow on the Mississippi River was evacuated and Memphis was forced to surrender to Captain Davis. The great river was now opened to Vicksburg. The Federals had accomplished this with a force averaging three to one. In a week after the battle of Shiloh, Beauregard was joined at Corinth by Van Dorn and Price, who had come from Missouri after the battle of Pea Ridge.

CHAPTER X

CAMPAIGN OF '62 IN MISSOURI

In the later part of the year 1861 we left Price recruiting and organizing his forces at Springfield in southwest Missouri, while McCulloch had retired to the northwest part of Arkansas. The Federals under Gen. S. R. Curtis were encamped at Rolla. On January 26, with 12,000 men, he advanced toward Springfield. Price, with about 10,000 men, retired to the Boston Mountains, on the southwest border of Missouri and in the northwest corner of Arkansas. In this vicinity he was joined by McCulloch, McIntosh, and a brigade of Indians under Albert Pike.

On March 3, Gen. Earl Van Dorn,—a capable and energetic man, sent by President Davis,—arrived and assumed command of the entire forces of the Confederates in the Boston Mountains. He decided as soon as possible to attack Curtis, who had pursued Price as far as Fayetteville, thirty miles south of the Missouri line. But for protection Curtis had retreated to Pea Ridge,—a series of large hills, cut from east to west by ravines. The south ravine was known as Cross Hollow, the middle as Sugar Creek Valley, and the northern as Cross Timber Hollow. All these ravines ran parallel and were crossed at right angles by the road extending from Springfield to Elk Horn Tavern, which was situated where the road crossed the upper ravine. On March 6 Curtis joined Sigel, and then occupied the ridge between the two upper ravines with his line facing south, with the extreme right flank of his army extending to Leetown, and the left to Mottville. During the night of March 6 the Con-

federates had moved up the road from Bentonville and were coming in on Curtis's rear, threatening to cut off his communication with Springfield. This forced Curtis to change front; and on April 7 he fought the battle in that position.

Battle of Pea Ridge.—General Price commanded the left wing and McCulloch the right. The Federal forces were repulsed on the 7th and would have been forced to surrender had not McCulloch and McIntosh both been killed on the very verge of victory. Van Dorn and Price pushed back the Federal right flank; but the lack of proper discipline in their forces prevented them from gaining a great victory. The Confederates were excited by their success and plundering was difficult to control. Van Dorn now ordered the sick to be carried to the rear and began a retreat. The Federals at the close of day were in a very precarious situation, for their line of retreat to Springfield was held by Van Dorn. It was to be a severe fight or a surrender.

During the morning of the 8th Sigel attacked the right flank of the Confederates; Van Dorn gave the order to fall back, and the main army moved northward; Sigel followed for a short distance. Curtis had saved his army from an overwhelming defeat, but at a terrible loss of life,—a loss that amounted to 1500, killed, wounded, and missing. He had 10,500 men engaged and 49 cannons.

Van Dorn had 14,000 men engaged, but part of them were undisciplined Indians, unused to artillery. The Confederate loss was reported by Van Dorn to have been 600, killed and wounded.

The battle of Pea Ridge closed for a long time the warfare in Missouri. The Confederate forces were very badly needed by Beauregard and Bragg at Corinth.

Curtis was given great credit for resourcefulness in his conduct of the Missouri Campaign. Though he did not pursue Van Dorn's forces, yet later he followed Price almost to Helena, Ark. General Schofield was now placed in com-

mand of the Department of Missouri, and most of the Confederate troops having joined Beauregard, comparative peace was established over the State.

One of the features concerning the battle of Pea Ridge for which the Confederates were greatly censured was that they employed some 5000 Indians under Col. Albert Pike, a former Boston man. It was claimed by the Federals that these Indians resorted to their former savagery and had scalped the dead. But the counter-charge was made by the Confederates that it was perfectly excusable for them to use these people, if the Federals incited the slaves to take up arms against their former masters. This is one of the sad features of the war. However, it was the last time that Indian warriors were used by either side in regular warfare.

New Madrid and Island No. 10.— At the time the battle of Shiloh was being fought important events were also taking place on the Mississippi River at New Madrid, Mo., and Island No. 10. The Island was about 45 miles below Columbus, Ky., and had been fortified by Beauregard and McCown after the evacuation of Columbus. McCown reached the Island February 24, with a force of 5000 effective men and 5 wooden boats commanded by Commodore Hollins. The Mississippi River at this place makes a great loop, with Island No. 10 situated at the southern end of the loop. New Madrid is 12 miles distant and situated at the northern end of the loop. From New Madrid to Tiptonville is 16 miles. To Tiptonville by the road from Island No. 10 is 4 miles, and across the land at the upper neck is only two and one-fourth miles. Lying eastward and southward of Island No. 10 was swampy ground and there were practically only two ways leading from it; by the river or the road to Tiptonville, Tenn. At New Madrid the Confederates had established Fort Thompson, with 14 guns, and just above this place, at the mouth of the Bayou St. John, was constructed Fort Bankhead.

By March 1 the Confederates had also established on Island No. 10, five batteries of 12 guns each and others on the Tennessee shore, 120 guns in all. There was one feature that they seemed to have failed to take into consideration,—a lesson which should have been taught them by the experience at Fort Henry. The great floods of the winter season often rendered fortresses that had been considered impregnable of no avail.

General Pope, who was at Cairo after the fall of Fort Donelson, had been ordered to advance against these forces. He marched from Commerce on the Missouri side and on March 3 appeared with his whole force in front of New Madrid, which he found had been fortified by McCown. While Pope waited for siege-guns he took possession of Point Pleasant, twelve miles below. On March 12 the siege-guns were placed in position and he opened fire on New Madrid the morning of March 13,—a fire which continued all that day.

The night following was a fearful one to attempt a retreat by the river. The rain fell in torrents, accompanied by heavy wind and lightning. The Confederate commander ordered his heavy guns spiked; but he safely carried the greater part of his provisions and ammunition on the transports to Island No. 10. Pope had lost 60 men at New Madrid. He now, with the assistance of Commodore Foote, proceeded to capture Island No. 10. About 10 a. m., March 17, he ordered an attack on Ruckers Bar, situated on the Tennessee shore one mile above the Island. The attack was made by five gunboats and it lasted nine hours. The boats finally withdrew, after having disabled three guns out of five. It had been a terrible ordeal for the Confederates, as they had manned their guns standing knee-deep in mud and water.

On the night of March 17 General McCown, by order of General Beauregard, left Island No. 10 with six regiments;

which were sent to reinforce the army at Corinth. But on the 19th McCown in person returned to the Island to assume command.

The Federals continued to shell the Island at long range until March 30. McCown had been building canoes and flatboats in order to afford means of retreat for his men across Reelfoot Lake. On April 1 General McCown was relieved of command by General Mackall. For the greater part of two weeks the Federals,—under the skillful engineer, Gen. Schuyler Hamilton,—had been preparing a huge canal across the peninsula formed by the upper bend of the great loop. This was covered by backwater; and by cutting the trees and clearing out the stumps it made a navigable channel to New Madrid, without having to pass Island No. 10. Pope had great need of the transports, which were above the Island, to convey his troops from Point Pleasant to the Tennessee shore, in order to hold the Tiptonville Road and prevent the Confederate retreat.

On the night of April 4 Captain Walke, of the gunboat *Carondelet*, passed Island No. 10 while a heavy rain and thunderstorm was in progress. By the middle of the night, April 7, nearly all the transports had passed through the canal and crossed over to the Tennessee shore in front of the Tiptonville Road, thus cutting off the Confederate retreat from Island No. 10. The Confederates were unable to utilize their flatboats and canoes across the Reelfoot Lake. After a short resistance General Mackall was forced to surrender several thousand small arms, 123 cannons, 6600 men and a large quantity of provisions and ammunition.

Results: This was a great and bloodless victory for the Federal forces. The construction of the canal was a great task; but it was the real key to the situation, for it allowed the Federal forces to be landed below the Island on the Tennessee shore. The Confederates had fought bravely, but they made little use of the material at hand to effect a retreat.

General Pope's name was much exalted by this success among his friends at Washington,—a fact that was responsible for his rapid promotion. The Mississippi River was now opened to Fort Pillow.

After Shiloh.—After the battle of Shiloh Grant again gained the ill favor of General Halleck. It had been reported that Grant on that occasion had allowed his army to be surprised and that he had been under the influence of drink.

It is very probable that Sherman and Grant both had been taken by surprise, for on the 5th Sherman had reported that he “did not apprehend anything like an attack.” Grant was at Savannah and had ordered no breastworks to be thrown up at Pittsburg Landing; nor did he display any marked military ability during the battle, allowing on the second day a great opportunity to pass by not following the 25,000 worn and weary Confederates. He had a fresh army of almost double that number, but gave as his reason for not pursuing the retreating forces that he did not have the heart to push his men on a campaign after the severe test they had just gone through.

Soon afterward Halleck assumed chief command of the army, which was now increased by Pope and others to 100,000 men. Grant was left second in command, which practically meant no active position. General Thomas was to command the Army of Tennessee on the right, General Buell the center, and General Pope was in charge of the left wing, or Army of Mississippi.

Halleck's movements were slow and overcautious. He moved by making intrenchments from May 1 to May 28, daily expecting Beauregard with 60,000 men to pounce upon him.

On the night of May 30 the Confederates evacuated Corinth,—where they had been since the battle of Shiloh,—and retreated with masterly skill to Tupelo, Miss. Here they selected and fortified a good position so as to protect

the southern branch of the New Orleans & Mobile Railroad. General Beauregard had fortified Corinth, had held Halleck in check with an army half as strong, and had retreated to Tupelo, outwitting the Federal general and at the same time saving Mississippi from the Federal army.

Pope had very nearly drawn Beauregard into battle on the 8th of July, but was recalled to Corinth by Halleck. In the meantime Mitchell had been sent to Huntsville, Ala., with an army of 7000 men, but had failed to capture Chattanooga as was his purpose. He was finally transferred to South Carolina, where later he died.

Capture of Memphis, Tenn.— The withdrawal of Beauregard from Corinth caused the fall of Fort Pillow, which was evacuated by the Confederates on June 4, and entered by the Federals on June 5. The Confederates possessed eight vessels of twenty guns each. These, commanded by Captain Montgomery, were situated below Fort Pillow and near Memphis. On the morning of June 6 the Confederate fleet moved forward to encounter the Federal fleet, commanded by Captain Davis. It consisted of five gun-boats and four rams, besides a number of mortar-boats and transports. The fight lasted two hours; seven out of eight of the Confederate boats were disabled, most of the damage being accomplished by the rams. The Confederates lost in killed and wounded 50, while 100 were made prisoners. Everything of value to the Confederate Government had been removed from Memphis, which was occupied by Captain Davis after 12 a. m., June 6, 1862.

Beauregard's troops after his retreat to Tupelo were finally divided, and sent to different points. This caused the division of General Halleck's forces.

CHAPTER XI

THE EXPEDITION AGAINST NEW ORLEANS

While General Grant was making preparation for his movements up the Cumberland River and the Tennessee River, the military authorities at Washington were preparing to send a powerful naval force against New Orleans in the early part of the year 1862.

The Confederate authorities at Richmond were no doubt guilty to a great extent of negligence in not properly preparing to forestall this powerful movement. They imagined the city to be impregnable, made so by the two powerful forts situated on the opposite side of the river, sixty miles below New Orleans.

Fort Jackson on the left bank, was fortified with 75 guns; Fort St. Philips was built on the right bank, 800 yards upstream, and was protected by 53 guns. This fort had been constructed in the shape of a star.

Gen. Mansfield Lovell, who was in charge of the attack, had about 4000 effective men. He had, in accordance with orders from Richmond, sent several thousand men to Beauregard at Corinth. Gen. J. K. Duncan had charge of the artillery and Cap. J. K. Mitchell, under the superior command of Commodore Whipple, had nine or ten armed vessels in the Mississippi River above the forts. One mile below the forts General Lovell had constructed a large raft of eleven schooners connected by heavy chains, which was anchored to the bank; but a great storm caused a rent in it, making it unfit for use. In the rear of the city, toward Lake Pontchartrain, fortifications had been built.

Farragut had been placed in command of the great Federal fleet with Porter second in command. The combined forces consisted of 46 vessels, 300 cannons and mortars. Besides the immediate fleet, Gen. B. F. Butler had arrived on March 24 at Ship Island with a land force of 12,000 New Englanders. The mud in the river's mouth and a shortage of coal detained Farragut until the 17th of April. On the morning of the 18th he appeared in front of the forts and began a bombardment which lasted five days without doing much material damage.

The raft which had been placed in the river by the Confederates, had been effectually opened by the gunboats. General Duncan on April 23 reported only two disabled guns, and six killed and wounded as the result of the prolonged bombardment. But the small force of Confederate defenders was much fatigued. About 3 a. m., April 24, Farragut ordered a two-column advance up the great river. The left column of nine vessels, commanded by Farragut in person, was to be actively engaged with Fort Jackson, and the right column, under Cap. Theodore Bailey, and consisting of eight vessels, was to deal with Fort St. Philips.

The guns of the forts opened a tremendous fire on the fleet, but 14 out of 17 vessels steamed past them, and at daylight anchored above the forts and well beyond the range of their fire. The Confederate fleet, which had delayed their appearance, being too late to actively assist the forts at a critical time, now came on the scene and attacked the Federal boats. In less than one hour most of the Confederates' boats were *hors de combat*. The ram, *Manassas*, had rendered some assistance to the forts, but lack of concerted action on the part of forts and fleet left the way to New Orleans open to the foe. The Federal fleet now headed up-stream toward the great city, where a veritable panic reigned. General Lovell had sent every Confederate soldier to Vicksburg or Camp Moore, beyond Lake Pontchartrain,

All the shipyards and steamboats, with an enormous quantity of cotton, were destroyed. General Lovell turned the command of the city over to the Mayor when the fleet anchored at the wharves of the city, but he had removed the greater part of his arms, ammunition, and military stores.

Farragut anchored in front of the city on April 25 and demanded the surrender of New Orleans, but the correspondence was protracted until the 28th. Meanwhile General Butler had invested both forts, which General Duncan, owing to an uprising of the soldiers, had been forced to surrender to Captain Porter on April 28. Butler with his transports reached New Orleans May 1 and bivouacked in the squares of the city.

Farragut left the control of the city to Butler, and on the 9th of May occupied Baton Rouge, on the 12th Natchez, and on the 18th he appeared before Vicksburg; but Lovell had sent guns from the forts below New Orleans and fortified the place, and this checked Farragut's progress up the river.

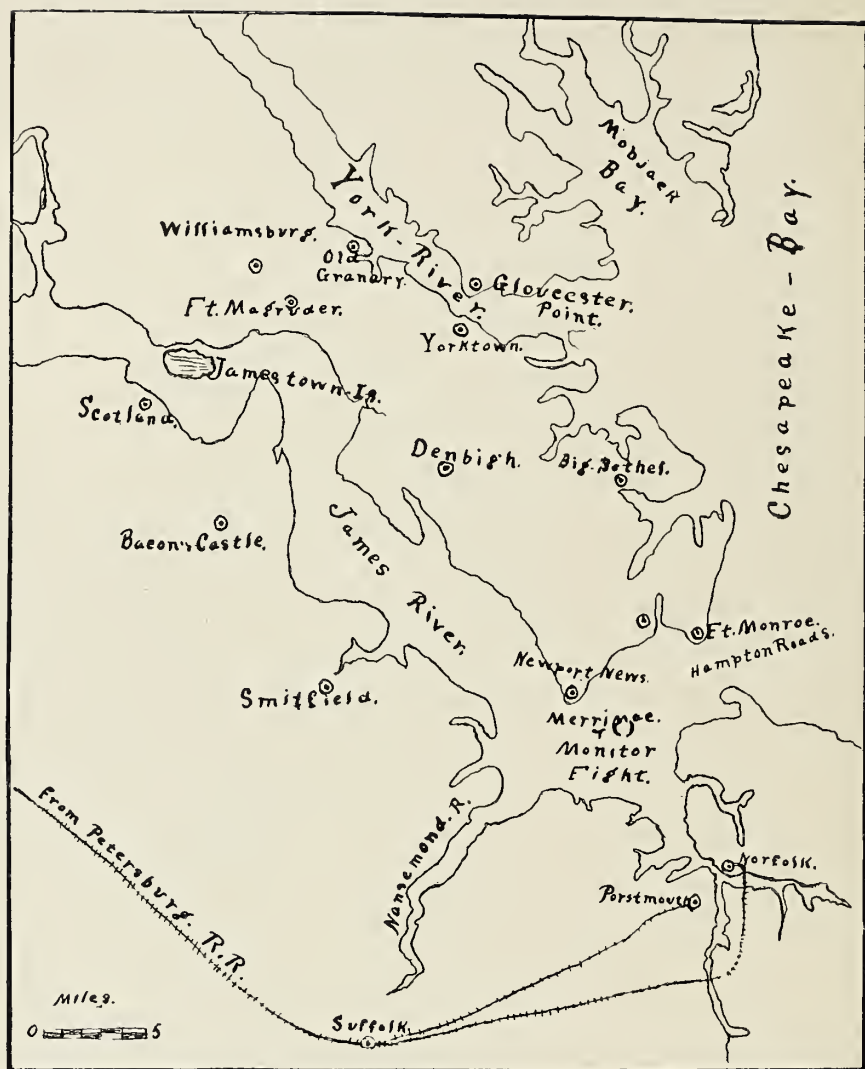
In the West on February 21 the able Gen. Henry H. Sibley with his Texans, had defeated General Canby on the Rio Grande and had also occupied Sante Fé and Albuquerque; but by May 1 all Sibley's forces were so badly needed that they were forced to return to Texas.

General Butler's occupancy of New Orleans was full of vulgar tyranny. He was so objectionable to the citizens that they, with one accord, gave him the name of "The Beast." He issued orders that excited the disgust of the whole civilized world. One of the most singular ones was for the execution of a citizen by the name of William B. Mumford, who removed the United States flag off the Mint. Notwithstanding his weeping family and a petition of a large number of leading citizens for his release Mumford was executed. There is no doubt that Butler was unscrupulous, and sacrificed every good instinct to the getting of money. His order with respect to women showed his utter

lack of gentle feeling; and justly obtained for him the undying hatred of those whom he so cruelly tortured.

The general results of the war in the West during the first half of 1862 were of the most disastrous nature to the Confederate cause.

The State of Missouri had been practically cleared of Confederate forces. The capture of Forts Henry and Donelson had completely broken the backbone of the Confederates' first line of defense. The second day's retreat from Shiloh had caused the line of battle to be pushed into the very heart of the Confederacy. The capture of New Orleans was a great blow to Southern pride and practically overwhelmed the State of Louisiana, cutting off to a great extent the States east of the Mississippi River from the great granary of Texas. The victories at Island No. 10, New Madrid, and Memphis opened the river to Vicksburg. The successful capture of this place was to test the skill of the North's greatest generals and be the source of great and critical disaster to the Southern arms. If the fortunes of war in Old Virginia during this trying year had been as dark and foreboding to the Confederacy as those just recorded, it is more than probable that the history of the Civil War would have ended long before it did.



HAMPTON ROADS AND VICINITY, 1861-1865

CHAPTER XII

THE WAR IN THE EAST IN 1862.—OUTSKIRT EVENTS OF EARLY '62

In January, 1862, Capt. C. H. Davis had made a careful and thorough inspection of Fort Pulaski, which was the main protection to the city of Savannah, Ga. On April 10, 1862, after great preparation at Tybee Island, under General Hunter, Fort Pulaski was captured and during the remaining years of the Civil War Savannah was thoroughly cut off from commerce by sea.

Roanoke Island.—During the first part of January, 1862, an expedition was fitted out at Hampton Roads consisting of twenty-six gunboats, under the command of Commodore Goldsborough, supported by 16,000 men under Gen. A. E. Burnside. They left on the 12th of January for Pamlico Sound, where they arrived on the 24th. Gen. H. A. Wise was the Confederate officer in command of the fortification at Roanoke. He had with him only about 6000 men. He had used every means in his power to urge the Confederate Government to reinforce him, but without avail. In addition to the troops he had seven gunboats.

On February 7 the Federals attacked the Confederate fleet and the fort called Barlow, which was the southern defense of the Island. The fight lasted until 5 p. m. Two of the Confederate vessels became disabled, and the others went into Albemarle Sound.

When on the morning of February 8, the Federals made a landing on the Island, the Confederates were taken by surprise. They lost in killed and wounded 81; 2000 of them

were made prisoners, several thousand small arms were taken, and the control of Roanoke River and the granary of Norfolk, were lost. This disaster was declared by many in the Confederate Congress to be due to the negligence of Benjamin, Secretary of the Navy.

Merrimac and Monitor.—One of the most dramatic events that ever happened in naval warfare occurred in Hampton Roads on March 8 and 9, 1862. The *Merrimac* renamed the *Virginia* by the Confederates was a frigate that had been scuttled by the Federals when they evacuated Norfolk. It had been raised later by the Confederates and converted into a huge casemated, iron-plated hulk, with sides and ends well submerged, and with a ram and eight broadsides on each side. The Federals had in Hampton Roads the morning of March 8 a strong fleet, consisting of the *Cumberland* with 24 guns, the *Congress* with 50 guns, the frigates *Minnesota* and *Roanoke* with 40 guns, and the *St. Lawrence* with 50 guns. Captain Buchanan, the Confederate commander of the *Virginia*, approached the *Cumberland* and the *Congress*, which were anchored off Newport News. With his untried craft he attacked first the *Cumberland*, whose guns made no impression on the *Virginia*. The *Cumberland* was rammed and sunk in a few minutes in water 54 feet deep, drowning 100 of those on board.

The *Congress* had run into shallow water and could not be rammed, but she was so harassed by the guns from the *Virginia* that she was forced to surrender. Captain Buchanan at once ordered the *Congress* to be destroyed. By this time the *Minnesota* was attacked by the victorious boat; but night falling, the *Virginia* was forced to draw off until morning.

In the early morning of Sunday, March 9, the *Virginia's* captain, fully anticipating another day of victory, was prepared to destroy the rest of the Federal fleet. As the Confederate gunners were ready to begin their work they noticed

a very strange looking craft laying in their path. It was Ericsson's *Monitor* under the command of Lieut. John Worden. This vessel consisted of a round revolving tower turret twenty feet in diameter, with two eleven-inch 168 pound Dahlgren guns,— all resting on a flat hull, 172 feet long by 41 feet wide, with armed decks.

The battle began at once and lasted for four hours, during which the armor of neither vessel was materially affected. The *Monitor* moved its position with such rapidity that the *Virginia* was unable effectually to use her ram. About noon Lieutenant Worden's vessel was injured, and for better protection he drew it into shallow water, and as the engines of the *Virginia* had about given out from the continued strain of two days' fight, she withdrew to the Norfolk Navy Yard.

On March 8 the Federals lost 250 officers and men; two great vessels were destroyed, and two shoaled. The Confederates had 2 killed and wounded on board the *Virginia*, and 4 killed on other vessels. On March 9 no one was killed, but both commanders were wounded. The opportune appearance of the *Monitor* probably prevented the complete destruction of the Federal fleet in the Potomac. The *Virginia* was used for a while afterward to guard the approach to the James River, but finally was ordered to be destroyed by the Confederates to prevent her capture. This was a serious mistake and gave the Federals free access up the James River to within a point of danger for Richmond.

CHAPTER XIII

MC CLELLAN'S PENINSULAR CAMPAIGN

By the early part of 1862 the Federal Government had gathered under McClellan and in the vicinity of Washington a disciplined and thoroughly equipped fighting army of fully 200,000 men to avenge the defeat at Bull Run and the disaster of Ball's Bluff. At the same time they had in view the ultimate capture of Richmond. McClellan's sickness with typhoid fever in January delayed the Federals' movements. Against this formidable host, Gen. Joseph E. Johnston had under his command at Manassas 30,000 men; 12 slim regiments had been sent under Jackson to the Shenandoah Valley to face Banks and Shields and about 10,000 men were stationed on the lower Potomac and York Rivers under Magruder. McClellan on March 8, with the sanction of President Lincoln, decided to change his base of operations against Richmond to the York River Peninsula,—a narrow strip of land that lay between the York and James Rivers and that was divided higher up by the sluggish Chickahominy. The purpose of McClellan in making this move was to avoid the necessity of crossing the deep rivers that lay between Washington and Richmond. Johnston had early been informed of the proposed change, and with great skill had evacuated Manassas and moved across the Rappahannock to await McClellan's plans. On the 11th of March the Federals occupied Manassas, and on the 13th they proceeded to convey the army to the York Peninsula by means of transports, sending forward 125,000 men and leaving 35,000 under McDowell to protect Washington.

Kernstown.—Meanwhile, on March 23, 1862, General

Jackson, with a force of 2742 men and 18 guns was attacked at Kernstown by Shields, with 6000 infantry, 750 cavalry, and 24 guns, and was forced to retreat. The Confederates lost in this battle 465 killed and wounded, and 263 missing; and the Federals 118 killed, 450 wounded, and 22 missing.

But very important events were soon to transpire in the York Peninsula. McClellan disembarked his troops April 2 near Fortress Monroe, and on the 7th he arrived in front of Yorktown. Magruder was located here with 11,000 men to defend the Peninsula until Johnston could concentrate his forces before Richmond. McClellan laid siege to the old town for a month; and as soon as he was prepared to bombard it Magruder retreated to make his junction with Johnston, which the delay of McClellan had given him an opportunity effectually to do. McClellan had been tricked into this costly delay by the Confederate general, who had placed his troops in position so as to give an impression to the Federals of having a much larger army while the Confederates were moving toward Williamsburg.

Battle of Williamsburg.— Though McClellan was disappointed at the empty surrender of Yorktown he now pushed forward and attacked Longstreet's rear guard at Fort Magruder on May 5. General Hooker led the advance, but lost five guns and was forced to draw off after five hours' fighting in which he was assisted by Generals Hancock and Kearney. Hancock had made a strong attack on Longstreet's left; which, however, accomplished nothing. Longstreet retreated undisturbed during the night toward Richmond, having temporarily checked the advance of McClellan's army. Men on both sides of the conflict now rapidly distinguished themselves on the scene of strife — men whose names will ever be symbols of honor and bravery to Americans.

The Confederates lost in killed and wounded 1570; missing, 133.

The Federals had killed 456, wounded 1410; a total of 1866, missing 373.

The Federals were compelled to stay at Williamsburg 10 days in order to organize.

Destruction of the Virginia.—On the evacuation of Yorktown and after the battle of Williamsburg it became necessary for the Confederates to evacuate Norfolk.

Captain Tottal undertook to navigate the *Virginia* up the James River by removing the guns so as to lighten her over the shoals; but he failed; and fearing capture, ordered her to be burned. The court of inquiry gave the decision that it was an unnecessary procedure. It left the James River open to Federal vessels at a critical time and they advanced up the river to Drury's Bluff, within twelve miles of Richmond. The guns of the forts here, however, were strong enough to guard the approach.

Events in the Shenandoah Valley Jeopardize the Success of Peninsular Campaign.—The most brilliant campaign of the war was conceived by President Davis and confided to General Jackson, who extended its scope and carried it out successfully, with the assistance of General Ewell.

Jackson, after his junction with Ewell, had 17,000 men and made his headquarters and base of operation at Staunton. The main purpose of the campaign was to divert McDowell,—who was stationed at Fredericksburg,—from helping McClellan. Jackson on his own responsibility assumed the aggressive. The Federal forces in the valley were under Banks and Shields, while Milroy and Blenker were in West Virginia at Franklin. Jackson at once sent Ewell down the Shenandoah Valley to engage Banks and Shields; and he moved toward Franklin to meet Fremont. On May 8 at the village of McDowell Jackson met Milroy and Schenck, and forced them to retire.

Jackson now hastened to carry out the second part of his military plan. He joined Ewell at New Market. Here he

learned that General Banks was at Strasburg. Crossing the ridges that divided the valley into two parts — Jackson moved down the east branch of the Shenandoah to Front Royal,— which was situated at the junction of the two branches of the Shenandoah, twelve miles east of the town of Strasburg and due west of Manassas Gap. On May 23 Jackson attacked and overpowered the rear of Banks' forces, driving the whole army through Winchester and capturing a large and useful quantity of supplies. By May 25 Banks' whole army had been driven in frantic retreat through the town.

The Federal army reached the Potomac River at Williamsport late in the evening of the 25th. The losses of the Federals were 1000 men, killed and wounded; 4000 prisoners, and millions of dollars of supplies. But this was only a small part of the advantage to the Confederates gained by this victory. It produced a scare in Washington which forced Lincoln and Stanton to change their plan of sending McDowell to aid McClellan. The President and the War Secretary planned now to trap Jackson. On May 25 and 26 Generals Shields and McDowell were ordered to the Gap. Shields reached Front Royal on the 30th; but Jackson had passed the Gap going up the valley, eluded Fremont, and pushed rapidly toward Port Republic. On June 7 he had reached this point, which lies on the south bank of the east fork of the Shenandoah. General Ewell was now four miles distant at Harrisburg. June 8 and 9 Ewell defeated Fremont at Cross Keys, where the Confederates lost 329 men killed and wounded. The Federal loss was about 625 killed and wounded.

Jackson now crossed and then burnt the bridge at Port Republic. He then attacked General Carroll, who after a stubborn fight was forced to retreat.

The loss of the Confederates in this last fight was 1000 killed and wounded and the loss of the Federals was about

the same, but with the addition of 450 prisoners and several guns.

The campaign under Jackson had been marvelously successful. In two weeks three large armies, or a total of 44,840 men, had been scattered; several thousand soldiers had been made prisoners, and millions of dollars of supplies belonging to the Federals had been captured or destroyed. McDowell had been prevented from coöperating with McClellan at a critical time, which might have given him success. Jackson was now free to join Johnston before Richmond and to give him aid. He had lost since leaving Winchester only 1167 men, while the Federals lost 15,000 men during the campaign. Jackson now hastened by Gordonsville toward Richmond.

McClellan's Advance.—While Jackson's campaign was in progress McClellan was advancing with 130,000 men up the Peninsula to confront Johnston, who had 80,000 men with whom to defend Richmond. In the last days of May McClellan had reached Bottom Bridge and the railroad across the Chickahominy. Keyes' and Heintzelman's divisions had been posted on the right bank of the Chickahominy River along the turnpike to Seven Pines. These two divisions composed the left wing of McClellan's army. The center was commanded by General Sumner, the right wing by Fitz-John Porter and Franklin was far to the northwest near Gaines' Mills, on the left bank of the river. Johnston saw the danger of the great army's position, thus divided by the river, and at once determined to take advantage of it by attacking the left wing before assistance could be rendered it by the right wing.

On June 7 at Eltham Landing Franklin's brigade was attacked by the Confederates and severely beaten until the artillery was landed and forced them to retire. By June 10–11 McClellan had advanced his army to a permanent basis.

Seven Pines.—On May 31 Gen. D. H. Hill was ordered to march out and support the attack against the Federal left. He thought that the heavy rain of the night would be in the Confederates' favor. Upon the morning of the 31st, when Hill attacked Casey at Seven Pines the line extended as far as Fair Oaks Station. Longstreet supported Hill and Couch reinforced Casey; but the Federals were driven back, after suffering severe losses, as far as Savage's Station. Huger, on Hill's extreme right, was prevented from rendering much assistance to the Confederates on account of swollen waters. This failure on Huger's part prevented Hill and Longstreet from gaining a complete success.

General Johnston,—who with General Smith's division, had gone to Old Tavern, three miles to the northwest of Fair Oaks,—on account of the changed wind possibly did not hear the sound of the battle which was in progress; and it was 4 p. m. before he was informed of the condition at Fair Oaks. He then hastened to his general's assistance, and struck Kearney's division, which had been brought up to aid Casey and Couch. The tide of the great battle was going against the Federals; it seemed as if victory lay in the Confederates' hands, but Sumner, on the left bank of the river, considering that his presence was much needed, on his own responsibility urged his men across the new-made bridges and came up almost directly in the rear of Smith's division when the Federals were in the greatest stress. Johnston at this juncture was severely wounded, night was falling, and the retreat toward Richmond was ordered. General Huger, fortunately for the Confederates, came up in time to cover their retreat.

The Confederates lost in the first day's battle between 4000 and 5000 men.

The Federals lost 5739 men, 10 cannons, 6000 small arms, and a large number of tents and equipages.

On June 1 the battle of Fair Oaks was renewed. McClellan had sent two divisions from the left bank as reinforce-

ments, but Longstreet withdrew. Gen. G. W. Smith had assumed command upon the wounding of General Johnston. Sickles and Meagher reconnoitered to within four miles of Richmond but were recalled by McClellan.

At 1 p. m., June 5, Gen. R. E. Lee was appointed commander-in-chief of the Confederates. Lee was at this time 55 years of age, of fine appearance, and robust in health; he was a practical general,—had been chief of engineers for General Scott in the Mexican War,—and he was beloved of all, and without a rival.

The battle of Fair Oaks had been well planned by Johnston; but the orders to his generals were verbal and, as might be expected, became confused. Longstreet and Hill would have had more than they could do without the aid of Huger. The loss of the Federals, however, was so severe that it effectually checked McClellan until Lee, who was conferring with President Davis, could have Jackson hasten his troops from the valley to Gordonsville. In order to blind the Federals to their intents, Whiting's division was sent from Richmond to Lynchburg and Staunton, care being taken that the Federal commander should become aware of the move. At the same time Whiting was sent to join Jackson at Gordonsville. Jackson was ordered to move to Hanover Court House and the railroad between this place and the Chickahominy. On the morning of June 25 General Jackson, coming from the northwest, arrived at Lee's headquarters on horseback and informed Lee that his army was twenty-five miles away. He arranged to attack McClellan's right wing. By night Jackson was again with his army at Hanover Court House.

CHAPTER XIV

SEVEN DAYS' BATTLE BEFORE RICHMOND

One of the most daring cavalry raids of the war occurred between the 11th and 25th of June. General Lee had sent Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, with a thousand picked men, to make a complete circuit of the great Federal army. It was a startling revelation to McClellan that such an undertaking could be accomplished. With the loss of only one man Stuart and his command, after destroying numerous supplies of the Federals and engaging in several skirmishes, arrived safely in Richmond by the Charles Road.

McClellan's position was thought by the Confederates to be critical. Porter was on the north side of the Chickahominy; Franklin joined him on the south; Sumner and Heintzelman's forces extended on the left to White Oak Swamp, with Keyes' corps held in reserve.

Of Lee's army, Huger and Magruder were opposite Sumner. A. P. Hill fronted Franklin, while Longstreet and D. H. Hill were held in reserve. On the 26th of June Jackson, with 25,000 men, joined Lee.

Battle of Mechanicsville, June 26, 3 p. m.—Gen. A. P. Hill made the initial attack of the Seven Days' battle against Gen. Fitz-John Porter, who was forced to retreat. It was a terrific fight. Porter, with 27,000 men, took an elevated and strongly fortified position at Beaver Dam Creek. D. H. Hill's division attacked the Federals here, but was repulsed, and thus closed the first day's assault. The Federals had been driven back, but the Confederates had suffered severely, losing 1484 men, while the Federals lost 361.

Gen. A. P. Hill was a brave, resolute, highly intelligent, and much beloved commander; but at times he did not use quite enough caution.

Battle of Gaines' Mill, Friday, June 27.— During the early morning of June 27 McClellan had ordered Porter and his division to retreat toward New Bridge over the Chickahominy River behind Gaines' Mill. About 1 p. m. A. P. Hill's advance division struck the Federal line, and the bloody battle of Gaines' Mill began. The losses on both sides were very heavy. Lee on his arrival saw that he was dealing with a whole corps of the Federal army and sent for Jackson to fall on the flank of the Federals. At 5:30 p. m., when Jackson approached, the fighting was very bitter and obstinate on both sides, but the Federals were driven back, losing fourteen pieces of artillery. Night closed the bloody battle of Gaines' Mill and prevented the Confederates from pushing their success. The valor of the Confederates in this battle was very marked. Their loss was 6000, killed and wounded. The Federals lost 6837, killed and wounded, and 22 guns.

On the evening of June 27 McClellan ordered a general retreat toward the James River as the way lay open. A bridge was ordered to be built across the White Oak Creek.

By the morning of June 28 the whole Federal army was on the south side of the Chickahominy River. Magruder and Huger, with only 25,000 men, were the only Confederate forces between McClellan and Richmond. The Federals had no idea of stopping the retreat. Keyes' corps occupied Frazier Farm on the 28th of June.

McClellan now marched toward Glendale. One way was around the head of the swamp; the other was to go across the middle of White Oak Swamp over the bridges. On the evening of June 28, McClellan's movements were delayed by the necessity of sending forward 2500 head of cattle, 2600 wagons, 700 ambulances and 350 guns. On the night of

June 28 and the morning of June 29 the Federal movements were greatly aided and covered by the fog and darkness, and at daylight of the 30th the greater part of their supplies had safely reached the James River. June 29 found Keyes, Porter, McCall, and Slocum at Glendale.

After the battle of Gaines' Mill it was evident to Lee that McClellan was preparing for a retreat; however, what route the Federals would take Lee did not know; but he kept the greater part of his army on the north side of the Chickahominy. On account of a certain lack of watchfulness on the part of some of his division commanders and scouts, he was not fully aware that McClellan was moving toward the James until the night of June 28.

Hill and Longstreet were at once ordered across the Chickahominy at New Bridge, and passed to the rear of Huger. Most of the 29th was spent by Jackson in rebuilding the Grapevine Bridge over the Chickahominy in order that he might come upon the rear and flank of the Federals near Savage Station. Early in the afternoon of the 28th Magruder had attacked Sumner at Allen's Farm near Savage Station; but the night terminated this short but sanguinary fight. During the night of June 29 the Federals continued their retreat across White Oak Swamp. They had gained a precious day.

Frazier Farm.—Early in the morning of the 30th of June Jackson arrived at Savage Station on the north side of the Swamp. McCall, of Franklin's division, had his artillery well stationed on higher ground that was well protected by a grove of trees. The battle raged until 9 p. m. The Federals were driven from the field, after having held the Confederates at bay for nearly the whole afternoon.

At Glendale, about five miles from Darbytown, at 2 p. m., Longstreet and Hill attacked Sumner and Heintzelman. They had anticipated the help of Jackson, but he was prevented from crossing White Oak Bridge. Huger and Magru-

der were also unable to come to their aid. The Confederates fought with determination, realizing that it was their last chance before McClellan reached the James. The Federals were badly beaten but not put to rout. By July 1 McClellan had gathered his army along the Malvern Hill plateau, where he placed his artillery so that it could be aided by the gunboats from the James. Lee, immediately after his victory at Glendale, proceeded to gather his scattered forces. Magruder and Huger joined and relieved the exhausted troops of Longstreet and Hill about midnight, and Jackson joined them the morning of July 1.

Malvern Hill.—On July 1 at 3 p. m. D. H. Hill, commanding one of Jackson's divisions, made a premature attack on the Federal position, but he was not supported at the opportune time by Magruder and Huger. A final desperate charge was made about 6 p. m., but the Confederate forces, not working in concert, were repulsed. It was 9 p. m. before they accepted defeat all along the line. Their hope of destroying the great Federal army had not been realized.

The Confederates no doubt sustained the heavier loss in men; there being 3286 killed, the large number of 16,261 wounded (the greater number fully recovered and reentered the army), and 875 captured. The total loss in the Seven Days' campaign was 20,322 men, but practically no supplies.

In the Seven Days' battle, the Federals lost 1734 killed, 8062 wounded, 8000 missing and captured,—a total of 17,796 men. They lost 52 superior cannons, and 3500 small arms. The Confederates captured enormous quantities of supplies, and no doubt McClellan was forced to destroy an equal quantity.

The much boasted and cherished design of capturing Richmond was at the time completely blocked. The Confederates were much elated over their relief from such imminent danger and the great Federal Government was just as greatly

depressed. In the whole Peninsular Campaign the Confederates had lost in killed, wounded, and captured about 26,500 men. The total number of men they had brought into action was 93,481. The Federals had lost something like 25,700 men killed, wounded, and captured, and enormous military equipments. They had brought into action 115,239 men.

McClellan, by the order of President Lincoln, withdrew his army by August 23 to Acquia Creek on the Potomac, after he had remained at Harrison Landing on the James for one month.

CHAPTER XV

POPE'S CAMPAIGN IN VIRGINIA

After Pope's victory at Island No. 10 and his service under Halleck near Corinth, Miss., influential friends had obtained his appointment as the commander of about 50,000 men on the Rappahannock which consisted of Banks', Fremont's, and McDowell's commands; but Fremont refused to serve in this subordinate position and Gen. Franz Sigel was put in his place the last of June.

General Pope was a very pronounced abolitionist and made many vain boasts as to what he would accomplish. On July 14, 1862, Pope sent Banks with 8000 men from Culpeper to Gordonsville; but Jackson was there, and Banks was forced to return to Culpeper. On July 29 Pope arrived and concentrated his forces, which now consisted of 45,000 men, fifteen miles northwest of Culpeper at the foot of the Blue Ridge.

Battle of Cedar Mountain.—On August 8 Jackson crossed the Rapidan and on the 9th advanced toward Culpeper. Banks with 10,000 men now moved to Cedar Mountain, forcing Jackson to retire during the night; and about 4 p. m. on August 9, the battle of Cedar Mountain began. Jackson's whole force amounted to 15,000; while Banks was supported by Ricketts' division. For the shortness of the engagement and the small number that took part it was a very sanguinary fight. The Federals were driven from their position and lost 25 per cent. of the troops brought into action. The Confederates lost 223 killed, and 1000 wounded. Jackson now awaited Lee south of the Rapidan.

After Lee learned of McClellan's purpose to send the army

to Acquia Creek he endeavored to crush Pope by reinforcing Jackson, so on August 13 Hood and Longstreet were sent for that purpose. They joined Jackson on the 20th and decided to surprise Pope.

Pope, who was trying to protect Washington and Acquia Creek, then drew his army to the north bank of the Rappahannock. On the 21st of August Lee sent Jackson up to the headwaters of the Rappahannock River so that he might make a flank movement through Thoroughfare Gap upon Pope's right. Pope learned of Jackson's movement, and at first sent only two brigades to attack him. These were routed as any wise commander might have known they would be. While Jackson was moving near Sulphur Springs Pope sent word to his forces that he proposed to cross the river and attack Longstreet; but torrents of rain on the night of the 22d caused Pope to discontinue this plan and recall the forces already sent across the Rappahannock. Gen. Jubal Early's troops were at this time on the same side of the river as Pope's. The Federal general now considered it an opportunity to entirely destroy this stubborn fighter before assistance could reach him. Early, however, had eluded Pope's army by the morning of August 24 and had joined Jackson on the march.

Gen. J. E. B. Stuart with a regiment of cavalry had been sent directly into the rear of Pope's army, and on a dark and stormy night at Catlett Station captured several hundred prisoners, Pope's papers, and nearly captured the general himself.

Pope's army was much scattered and used up by the marching and counter-marching through the rain and mud in search of Early; but most of Lee's army had obtained a good rest.

McDowell was at Warrenton on August 24, Reynolds' division and Porter's corps were marching up the Rappahannock from Acquia Creek to Kelley's Ford; Heintzelman was moving from Alexandria to Manassas Junction, and on the

same day McClellan arrived at Acquia Creek. Sigel's corps had reached Waterloo by August 26, and Sumner's forces were still at Acquia Creek.

General Lee now prepared to attack Pope before he could gather his scattered army together. On the morning of August 26 Jackson took Thoroughfare Gap, and by the evening of the 26th his cavalry had reached Bristoe's Station on the Orange & Alexandria Railroad, and cut off Pope's communication with Manassas Junction. On August 27 Jackson's infantry took Manassas Junction and occupied the old Bull Run battlefield, practically the same position that the Federals held during the first battle.

Jackson, however, was in a dangerous position. Pope's whole army lay between him and the remainder of Lee's forces; McDowell's forces occupied Gainesville and Haymarket, which were between Jackson and Longstreet; but during the night of August 27 Jackson left Manassas Junction,—after destroying what he could not use,—and moved to Coverton and Sudley Station, eight miles north of Manassas. He hoped thus to make a junction with Longstreet and place McDowell southeast of him.

Pope ordered McDowell to Manassas on the morning of August 28, leaving one division under Ricketts to hold Longstreet. The flank of McDowell's army had come in touch with Ewell when Jackson ordered an attack. This fight, which took place on the Warrenton Pike near Groveton, lasted for three hours,—from 6 p. m. to 9 p. m. General Ewell was wounded, but the Federals, being unsupported, withdrew to join the main body, which was moving toward Centerville.

About 6 p. m. on the 28th of August Longstreet's corps appeared in the defiles of Thoroughfare Gap; after a short conflict with Ricketts' division the Federals were forced to retreat toward Manassas. During the entire night of the 28th Lee's army was pushing its way through the Gap, hastening to join Jackson at Groveton on the morrow.

Second Battle of Manassas.— On the evening of August 28 Pope was still in the dark. Jackson's maneuver in sending Hill toward Centerville had again misled the astute general, and he was still unaware that Longstreet would be ready to aid Jackson. Pope now had with him the troops of Hooker, Kearney and Reno. In the early morning of the 29th Pope ordered Sigel to attack Jackson's front near Groveton. Hooker, Kearney, and Reno were ordered to move against the Confederates' left over the Stone Bridge and McDowell was ordered to move against Gainesville. The Confederates and Federals were reversed in the position they had held in the battle of one year before.

First Day.— The Federal line extended in a curve about ten miles long from the Bull Run stone bridge to Gainesville; while that of the Confederates,— shorter and straight,— was protected by railroad embankments yet unfinished. The conflict was begun by the hardy German fighter Sigel, who struck Jackson's center about 9 a. m.; and it was at 10 a. m. before the wings were brought into battle. By noon of the 29th Longstreet had joined Jackson's right and faced Porter on the railroad. McDowell had attacked Longstreet but made no headway. Hill and Early defeated Hooker and Kearney before the unfinished railroad embankment, and though the impetuosity and courage of the Federals here was remarkable, no amount of effort could dislodge the obstinate Confederates. The soldiers of Jackson, joined by Longstreet, were ordered to charge with bayonets. Porter at an opportune time failed to support the Federals' center. Darkness now prevented further carnage. The Federals had been outgeneraled and repulsed at every point; but it was not a decisive day, the awful tale of war would be repeated on the morrow. Lee's whole army in the early morning of August 30 confronted Pope, whose army was much fatigued and disordered by the previous day's fight. The Confederate troops occupied practically the same position as on the previous day.

The Federal right was under Heintzelman, the left under McDowell, and the center, commanded by Porter, consisted of Sigel and Reno's division of Burnside's army.

The Second Day's Battle.—Pope had strengthened his right wing. The greater part of the morning was taken up in maneuvering, and the firing of artillery. Early in the afternoon Porter was ordered to make a charge on the Confederate line to the right of their center. They met Jackson's forces at close range and came also under the deadly effect of Longstreet's artillery. A second and third Federal line was formed, but each in turn was driven back in great confusion and with heavy loss.

General Lee now ordered a general advance of the whole army, whereupon Longstreet urged his men against the Federal left and center.

The Federals were now in a critical place if Longstreet's corps should seize their line of retreat and command the stone bridge over Bull Run. His advance, however, was partly checked by Buchanan's regulars of Porter's corps, supported by Reynolds' and Ricketts' divisions, which had seized the plateau about the famous Henry House. However, the Confederate advance was steady and determined. The Federals were forced across Bull Run to Centerville, where the forces of Franklin and Sumner, 19,000 strong, were ready to reinforce them. On August 31 Jackson was sent by way of Sudley Ford to Chantilly,—in Pope's rear,—but on account of the inclemency of the weather and the great fatigue of his fearfully tried troops he did not reach his destination until about 5 p. m., September 1. A cold and drenching rain-storm beat in the Confederates' faces as they made their attack against Reno and Kearney. The Federals lost their brave leader, General Kearney, and were forced to retire.

While Jackson was making his favorite flank movement toward Chantilly Longstreet had pushed forward toward Centerville. Pope fell back to Germantown, and, after Jack-

son's attack, ordered his whole army for safety back to the works of Alexandria.

Results of Second Manassas Campaign.— The Union force engaged in this campaign from August 16 to September 2 amounted to 75,696 men. They lost in killed 1724, in wounded 8372, in missing 6000, and 30 pieces of artillery, 2000 small arms, many supplies, and numerous colors.

The number of Confederates engaged was 48,527 men. They had lost 9108, killed and wounded, and scarcely 100 prisoners.

President Lincoln was greatly depressed over the fearful failure of Pope. On September 2, 1862, General McClellan was reappointed commander-in-chief of all the troops for the defense of Washington.

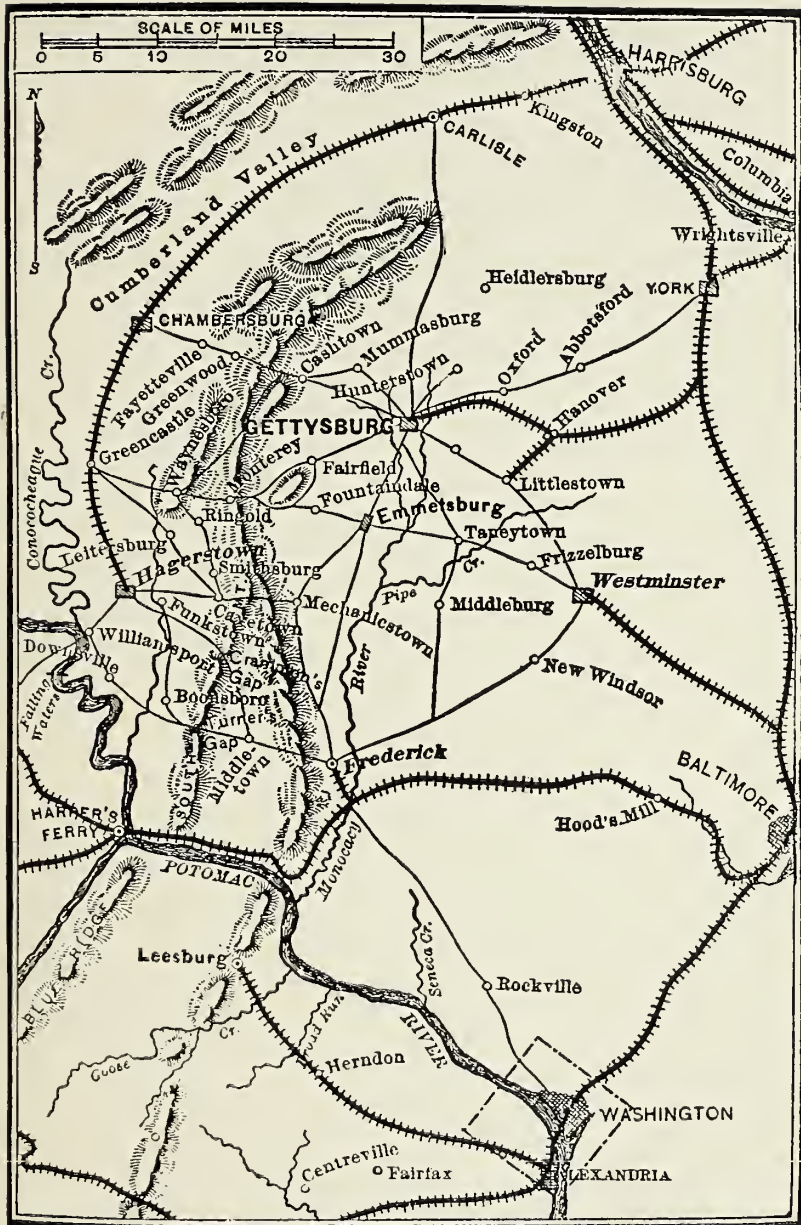
The Confederates,—soldiers and people,—were again greatly elated, and rejoiced over their triumphs. They had every confidence in their leaders, and in their eventual success.

CHAPTER XVI

LEE'S FIRST INVASION OF MARYLAND

After the second battle of Manassas had been fought, Lee was reinforced by D. H. Hill's fresh troops. Wishing to push his great victory and hoping thereby to stimulate anew interest in the Southern cause among the inhabitants of Maryland, he headed his army (September 3) toward Leesburg and, unopposed, he crossed the Potomac at Frederick. Here on September 8 he issued an address to the people of Maryland; but the section he was in had been more closely allied with Pennsylvania than with Virginia, and the people were either indifferent to the Southern cause or in sympathy with the Federal Government. Baltimore was held in the hands of the powerful Federal Government; consequently few recruits were gathered. Most of the Marylanders who were in hearty sympathy with the Confederates and had been able to join its armies had already cast in their lot with the Southerners. The ragged veterans of the Confederacy, who had defeated the brilliant and splendidly equipped armies of the North, were regarded with a lack of confidence. General Lee had anticipated that as he advanced into Maryland Harper's Ferry, where 12,000 Federal soldiers were stationed, would be evacuated. This not being the case, he was compelled to divide his forces and send Jackson to capture it.

At this juncture there occurred one of those curious incidents, which have many times in history caused the plans of the greatest generals to be frustrated. A letter, which had been sent to D. H. Hill fell into the hands of McClellan at the most opportune moment and gave to him the line of



The Country from the Potomac to Harrisburg.

march and plan that Lee's army intended to follow. It had been picked up from the ground, where perhaps it had been carelessly thrown. Why so valuable a paper should not have been more carefully preserved is one of the strange facts of history. McClellan, who had been in the dark as to Lee's movements, was now enabled to make the most intelligent disposition of his great army. The letter was dated September 9 and was given to McClellan on September 13. McClellan now hastened to attack Lee's right wing, which was commanded by Longstreet and Hill. On September 14 Hooker and Reno, who led the Federal troops, found Hill at Turner's Gap or South Mountain.

Battle of South Mountain.—About 3 p. m. on September 14 D. H. Hill's forces were attacked by a greatly superior army of the Federals. The battle was fought with determination on both sides. Longstreet, with part of his command, came to Hill's aid late in the afternoon. The Confederates, with great difficulty, were able to hold their position until 9 p. m., when darkness put an end to the conflict. The Federals had 28,500 men engaged; and lost in killed 325, in wounded 1403, and in missing 100,—making a total of 1828. The Confederates had only 5000 men in the early part of the engagement; and as Longstreet had brought only a third of his command of 13,000 men,—the rest being with Jackson,—the total number of Confederates engaged at the battle of South Mountain was a little over 9000. The Confederates' position aided them greatly; for it saved Lee and Jackson not only a great amount of trouble but their supply wagons as well. Hill retired during the night after a loss of less than 2000 men. There were few more courageous defenses than this during the whole war.

Battle at Crampton Pass.—General Franklin, at noon on the 14th of September, attacked the Confederates' left at Crampton Pass,—some seven miles south of Turner's Gap; and after a hard fight of three hours General McLaws, the

Confederate commander, was forced to retreat. The Federals lost here 500 men; but the stubborn resistance the Union forces had encountered in the passes had given Jackson time to invest Harper's Ferry, which he did on the morning of September 15.

Capture of Harper's Ferry.— This place was under the command of Gen. Dixon S. Miles. The attack began at dawn of the 15th from the heights around the town, and in about two hours the garrison was forced to surrender. General Miles, as he was raising the flag of truce, was killed by a stray bullet. Nearly 13,000 men, 73 guns, 13,000 small arms and enormous quantities of military stores were taken as the result of this rapid move by the Confederates.

Battle of Antietam, or Sharpsburg.— After the capture of Harper's Ferry Lee decided to concentrate his army at Sharpsburg. By the 16th of September the army of the Confederates was in a strong position. Longstreet and D. H. Hill were on the hills between Sharpsburg and Antietam Creek; with Longstreet on the right of the Boonesboro road, Hill on the immediate left, and Jackson on the extreme left. The place of battle chosen by Lee was well located for the defensive. The little village of Sharpsburg was surrounded by a group of hills; due west flowed the Potomac River, while on the east side Antietam Creek wound its way through the valley in sinuous, sluggish fashion. In front of this little country town lay well-cultivated fields of wheat and corn,—most of them fenced. Toward the east the peaks of the Blue Ridge were outlined against the sky. The beauty of the surroundings seemed to protest against the fearful storm of battle that was soon to occur here.

The great curve of the Potomac allowed each of Lee's flanks to rest on the banks of the river, but his center was two or three miles to the front. Lee had crossed Antietam Creek September 15 and formed his line of battle on the hills lying to the west. The creek was spanned by four bridges

leading to Sharpsburg. In the afternoon of the 16th there had been a skirmish between Hood's brigade and that of Hooker, but no effect had been made on the Confederate line. Almost the whole of the 16th had been spent by McClellan in arranging his commands and studying the problem before him. General Lee was scarcely able to ride owing to severe injuries to both hands that he had received just previous to this battle.

About sunrise of the 17th the Federal artillery opened upon the Confederates' left, concentrating an especially severe fire against Hood's brigades. There was alternating success; but as rapidly as the Federal forces were repulsed new troops filled in the gap. At 7 a. m. Mansfield, with 10,000 fresh troops, moved to the support of Hooker; but as he was arranging his forces the veteran general was killed. Conditions were becoming serious for the Confederates' left; but the timely arrival of McLaws, with four brigades, changed the tide of battle. The Federal lines gave way and were driven beyond the position that they had occupied in the beginning. The assaults were renewed several times on the left by the Federals; but they were repulsed. When the fearful carnage had lasted six hours McClellan, with heavy forces under Franklin and Sumner, endeavored to crush the Confederate center. It was not until after 3 p. m. that Burnside started his movement against the Confederates' right. His delay had allowed Gen. A. P. Hill to arrive with 4000 men from Harper's Ferry (4 p. m.). His arrival was at the most opportune time to aid Gen. D. R. Jones, and the two together succeeded in driving Burnside's troops back toward the bridge across Antietam Creek. General Toombs now charged the Federal flanks supported by Archer. Burnside's forces finally retired to their batteries beyond the river.

The loss on the Federal side was very heavy. Generals Mansfield and Reno were killed, while Hooker and Meagher were wounded. The heaviest loss was on the Union right.

The total loss was 13,000 killed and wounded, and 1000 missing. McClellan had 60,000 men actively employed, but there were 87,000 that he could have used.

The Confederates lost 10,000 killed, wounded and missing. According to Lee's figures he had only 27,255 infantry, and 8000 cavalry and artillery engaged in this fearful contest. The combat on the Confederate side was fought with the greatest skill and judgment. While McClellan had allowed his troops to fight only in successive charges and assaults, there was a lack of unity and a great number of available troops were not employed.

Both armies were so exhausted that the battle was not renewed on the following day. Lee did not have a sufficient force to assume the offensive, so he withdrew during the night of the 18th to Shepherdstown, south of the Potomac.

After Lee's withdrawal McClellan proclaimed the battle of Antietam a Federal victory, although the Federal army had lost the greater number of men. The Maryland Campaign had cost the Federals some 26,000 men and large quantities of supplies, captured at Harper's Ferry by Jackson. The Confederates had lost in the whole campaign about 12,000 men. But Lee had been prevented from carrying the war into the North on account of his small army, and he found that the Confederacy could not look north of the Potomac River for any material assistance.

Proclamation of Emancipation.—Lincoln had prepared the Proclamation of Emancipation some time before the events just narrated and had anxiously waited for a favorable opportunity to make it public. After McClellan had proclaimed Antietam a victory, he believed that the time was ripe to publish it to the world. This document, which had been read to the Cabinet on July 21, was issued September 22, 1862.

The effect upon the whole South was a firmer consolidation

in its efforts to carry the war to a successful conclusion. This was one of the most trying periods to the border States, where there were large numbers of slave-holders.

The attitude with which the Proclamation was received in the North was variable. Among the Abolitionists it was hailed with favor, while the Republicans were surprised, and the Democrats denounced it as contrary to their faith and refused it their support. Lincoln was worried over the discord with which it was received and was very anxious now that the Federal army gain a real victory instead of a questionable one. He visited the army under McClellan October 1, and on October 6 ordered McClellan across the Potomac. McClellan said that delay was absolutely necessary to supply his men with shoes, horses, and tents. However, urged by Lincoln, McClellan crossed the Potomac below Harper's Ferry on October 26, and marched along the eastern slopes of the Blue Ridge with an army 100,000 strong. But the frequent differences that had arisen between the Washington authorities caused McClellan to be released from the command of the Army of the Potomac, November 7, 1862. The explanation for this sudden action of President Lincoln and his advisers has never been satisfactorily made. General Burnside was placed in McClellan's position.

CHAPTER XVII

LEE'S MOVEMENTS AFTER ANTIETAM

Meanwhile Lee had moved to the south side of the Potomac as far as Winchester. He had ordered General Stuart, with 1500 cavalry, to reconnoiter as far north as Chambersburg, Pa. General Stuart destroyed many valuable stores of the Federal army, paroled several hundred troops, and his own small force passed completely around the Federal army.

When Lee learned of the movements of McClellan toward Warrenton, Longstreet was sent to Culpeper Court House, November 3, and Jackson moved toward Richmond.

Fredericksburg.—When Burnside assumed command (November 9) by agreement with President Lincoln and General Halleck, he at once began to move his army toward Fredericksburg, situated on the Rappahannock. Sumner, with his advance, on November 17 arrived at Falmouth, on the north side of the river; but delayed the time of crossing his 33,000 men in accordance with Burnside's orders. The Confederates had only four companies of infantry, a regiment of cavalry and one battery at Fredericksburg. Four days afterward Longstreet arrived and fortified Marye's Heights. Not until November 28 was Jackson ordered by Lee to unite with Longstreet.

On the 21st of November most of Burnside's army was at Stafford Heights; but Burnside delayed further action until November 25, awaiting the pontoons.

The town of Fredericksburg lies in a small plain on the right side of the Rappahannock, back of which the Confederates were fortifying a range of hills called Marye,

Willis, and Telegraph. By December 10 Burnside had concentrated on the left bank of the river his magnificent army of 104,903 infantry, 5884 cavalry, and 5896 artillery. The town of Falmouth lay on his left, one mile above Fredericksburg, and from here Stafford Heights, reaching to the water's edge, extended down the river. The Federal army from this position completely commanded the river, town, and plain beyond. Either army in assuming the offensive would be exposed to a most destructive fire of artillery and small arms. The Federal general had by a threat of bombardment forced the inhabitants to abandon Fredericksburg.

Burnside had given Lee ample opportunity to perfect his line of defense. At 3 a. m., December 11, Burnside began crossing the river, and for the next sixteen hours the army was annoyed but not seriously hindered, by the skillful marksmanship of the picked Confederate sharpshooters. By the night of December 12 Burnside's army, with 220 cannons, had crossed the river. On December 13 at 7 a. m., the Federal general had 87,000 men in line of battle. Sumner's command (27,000) was on the left and Franklin's (60,000) held the ground on the right and along the old turnpike leading to Richmond. General Hooker with 26,000 men remained on the north side to give support to whatever part of the army most needed it.

Burnside had ordered Franklin to attack the Confederates on the left flank. Meade's division was ordered forward and it drove A. P. Hill back from his line of defense at 1 p. m.; but the divisions of Early and Taliaferro compelled the forces of Doubleday and Gibbon backward, while the command of Meade was unsupported. This caused the Federals to withdraw from trying to force the Confederates' right flank.

At noon Sumner was ordered with all his forces to storm the front of Marye Heights. Generals French, Hancock, and Howard, with brave zeal, made an effort at the fruitless task

but were repeatedly repulsed. At 2 p. m. Hooker, with 26,000 reserves, was ordered to assist Sumner. He tried to reason with Burnside, telling him that it was only a useless slaughter of his army, but to no avail. He too was driven back with fearful loss. The assault was made six times by the brave soldiers of the Union army, but at nightfall the Federals had been repulsed at every point.

Darkness now covered the plain along the Rappahannock where lay a very much shattered and demoralized army. General Lee did not realize the fearful carnage that had been wrought in the army under Burnside's command, and he expected a renewal of the battle on December 14.

The Union army, however, remained in Fredericksburg on the 14th and 15th of December and crossed to the north side of the river on the night of the 15th during a storm of wind and rain.

The Federals had lost 1284 killed, 9600 wounded, and 1769 missing,—a total of 12,653. The Confederates lost during these movements 608 killed, 4116 wounded, and 653 missing,—a total of 5377. Among the Confederates killed were two men, not only conspicuous as brave and capable military leaders but distinguished as brilliant statesmen. One of these, Gen. Maxey Gregg, of South Carolina, as he was dying uttered these words of the most sublime patriotism and heroism: "Tell the Governor of South Carolina I cheerfully yield my life for the independence of my State." The other, Gen. Thomas R. Cobb, the noted and brave Georgian, fell fatally wounded at the stone wall he had so bravely defended.

After nearly half a century has passed children and grandchildren of these brave Federals and Confederates, who fought for the right as they saw the right, can well recall and be proud of the magnificent valor and self-sacrifice of their soldier sires.

At the time of the battle of Fredericksburg General Lee

was severely censured by some of the Confederates for not leaving his fortifications and following up this great victory; but he did not comprehend fully the dreadful blow the Federals had received on the 13th. Besides, his army was 30,000 less in number than that of his adversary, who had means of retreat over the pontoons and who could have seriously injured the Confederates with their inaccessible batteries along Stafford Heights, had Lee left his fortifications. Lee expected further assaults on his position until the morning of December 16 revealed the fact that the Federals had crossed the Rappahannock.

Franklin was censured for not supporting Meade at the only time the Federals had any hopes of success; and Burnside lost by this disaster the confidence of the army. He, however, tried again to cross the river above the town of Fredericksburg on January 20,—a move that had been protested against by his corps commander,—but a severe wind-storm prevented him. He now recognized that it would be best to resign and asked the President to accept his resignation. After a few days, on January 25, an order was issued by Lincoln relieving Burnside of command of the Army of the Potomac and placing Gen. Joseph Hooker in command.

This fearful battle closed the campaign of 1862 in the East. There had been terrible fighting. The Confederates had more than held their own under the leadership of such men as Lee, Jackson, Longstreet, and Hill. They had, with inferior numbers, time and again repulsed the well equipped and gallantly commanded armies of the Federals. Had the war in the West been as constantly favorable to the Confederate cause as that in the East during the year 1862, the Confederacy could have looked, with brighter hopes, for ultimate success.

CHAPTER XVIII

THE WESTERN CAMPAIGN DURING THE LATTER PART OF THE YEAR 1862

After Beauregard had retreated to Tupelo, Miss., his health having to a certain extent become impaired, about the middle of June he sought rest. At this period Gen. Braxton Bragg assumed command of the army, which consisted of 50,000 men. Gen. Kirby Smith was then in command of 11,000 troops at Knoxville, Tenn. General Van Dorn was sent to strengthen and fortify Port Hudson and Vicksburg and the great difficulty that the Federals had to surmount in their capture speaks well for his work. Preceding the great field campaign which Bragg made, the line of communication in Buell's rear was seriously hampered and greatly demoralized by the cavalry raid of Gen. John H. Morgan, who had left Knoxville on July 4 with less than two regiments of cavalry. He passed through 17 towns to Glasgow, Harrodsburg, and Cynthiana destroying millions of dollars of United States military stores, capturing a thousand Federal soldiers, and by July 28 was back in Livingston, Tenn., with a loss of only 90 men.

At the time that Van Dorn was ordered to Vicksburg Bragg discerned that Chattanooga on the Tennessee was a strong strategic point. Divisions of the Hardee and Polk corps were sent to occupy the city, where they arrived during the early part of July. Halleck on June 10 had also ordered Buell to send sufficient forces to occupy Chattanooga; but on account of delayed transportation and repairing of railroads the Federals arrived only in time to see Bragg's army strongly fortifying the city.

The Federal armies in the West consisted at this time of the Army of Tennessee and Mississippi,—under the command of Generals Grant, Sherman and Rosecrans,—which extended from Corinth to Holly Springs and Memphis. General Buell was at Nashville in command of the Army of the Ohio; and the Federal General Morgan was at Cumberland Gap in command of 12,000 men.

About July 11, shortly after Gen. John Morgan had started on his raid to Kentucky, Gen. N. B. Forrest left Chattanooga with 2000 men, went to Altamont and McMinnville, and surprised Gen. T. T. Crittenden at Murfreesboro, capturing the whole force of the Federal general. This broke Buell's connection between Chattanooga and Nashville and aroused the hope of the Southerners. On the 21st of July Morgan destroyed the important railroad bridges on the Louisville & Nashville five miles from Nashville. On August 12 General Morgan again appeared at Gallatin, capturing 200 men and blockading the tunnels on the railroad so completely that it took over a week for the Federals to open the road for traffic.

The rest of the summer and fall passed without any special incident happening in Morgan's command. By a hard night's march on the 6th of December, 1862, Morgan crossed the Cumberland River near Hartsville, Tenn., and at daybreak on the 7th, with 700 infantry and 500 cavalry, attacked and captured in about two hours 1800 Federal soldiers, 2 cannons, 2000 small arms, and considerable supplies.

In the early part of August General Bragg had concentrated his forces at Chattanooga, where he awaited all his artillery and baggage, preparatory to his expected movement northward.

About August 17 General Nelson was sent to central Kentucky to organize a command to protect Buell's communication.

Battle of Richmond.—Gen. Kirby Smith, as agreed

upon after his conference with Bragg at Chattanooga early in August,—with 10,000 men assisted by two brigades under the energetic leadership of Gen. P. R. Cleburne and Col. Preston Smith,—had left Knoxville and turned the right flank of Cumberland Gap. On August 26 Smith's advance passed Barboursville and late August 29 arrived within five or six miles of Richmond, where 7000 Federal troops, under Gen. M. D. Manson were stationed. This force Smith attacked in the early morning of the 30th,—the same day on which a fearful battle was being waged for the second time on the old field of Bull Run. The tide of victory was rapidly going toward the Confederates, the Federals were being driven in rout back into Richmond, and though at about 2 p. m. General Nelson arrived on the field, his efforts were of no avail. Nelson was wounded and narrowly escaped capture, while Manson was captured. None of the Federal regiments was left intact; 200 men were killed; 1000 wounded, and 5000 made prisoners. The Confederate reward was 10,000 small arms, 9 cannons, and a large supply of war material.

Smith reported a loss of about 500 killed and wounded. The Federal forces now retired to Louisville and Covington; on September 2 Smith entered Lexington and on the 17th he marched into Frankfort.

Bragg's Invasion of Kentucky.—On August 28 General Bragg, by a sudden and rapid movement, crossed Walden's Ridge into the Valley of the Sequatchie, and marched up the valley to Pikeville, then to Sparta,—going around Thomas at McMinnville while he sent a force toward Nashville as a blind,—crossed the Cumberland River and entered Kentucky September 5. Bragg now continued to the east of Bowling Green and reached Glasgow September 13. General Buell was at Nashville when, on September 7, he discovered Bragg's design, and at once started in pursuit in a race toward Louisville. On September 15 Buell reached

Bowling Green, 30 miles southwest of Glasgow, at the very time that Bragg left the latter place.

On September 17 Bragg captured the Federal garrison at Munfordville, an important town on the Green River twenty miles north of Glasgow. There were surrendered 4267 men, 10 cannons, 5000 small arms, a large quantity of ammunition, and many horses and mules.

Bragg had so far been markedly successful in his movements and as he was now directly in Buell's path toward Louisville, it seemed as if this was a great opportunity for the Confederates to give battle to the advancing Federal army. Bragg claimed that he was not sufficiently strong to do this without a union with Kirby Smith and that, too, the army had only three days' rations; and he now turned his army's face in the direction of Bardstown. General Buell reached Louisville September 29, while Bragg made his junction with General Smith (October 1-4) at Frankfort and Lexington.

Perryville.—On October 1 General Buell ordered his army from Louisville to force a battle with Bragg. Gen. A. McD. McCook was in command of Buell's left corps and moved toward Frankfort; Generals Gilbert and Crittenden were in command of the center and right corps and marched toward Bardstown.

On learning of Buell's move, General Polk was ordered by Bragg to move toward Harrodsburg; and by October 6 the head of Polk's column reached the town. Bragg received word by the 7th that Hardee's division at Perryville was being pressed by the Federal force. Polk was now given written orders to hasten with Cheatham's division to aid Hardee at Perryville, where they arrived at midnight of the 7th. The Confederate army and the Federal were both very much scattered. The Confederate forces on the morning of October 8 at Perryville consisted of 14,500 infantry and 1500 cavalry. The Federals had 25,000 actively engaged in this movement.

It was past noon before the battle began. Bragg hoped to defeat McCook's corps before it could be reinforced. A fierce fight began for the control of the meager water supply; but the brigade of Col. Dan McCook supported by the divisions of Mitchell and Sheridan were able to hold their ground.

Cheatham's troops attacked the Federal center and left, thoroughly discomfited the brigade under Terrell, and killed Webster, Terrell, and General Jackson, the division commander. About the same time General Buckner drove the Federals back on the right. At about 4 p. m. Buell, after an appeal from McCook, forwarded to him a division under Schoepf; but night came on before they were able to render any effectual assistance. The Confederates held the field.

For the number engaged Perryville must be recognized as one of the most stubbornly fought and sanguinary battles of the Civil War.

The Federals lost 910 men killed, 2945 wounded, and 500 captured.

The Confederates lost 510 killed, 2635 wounded, and 251 missing.

Bragg allowed his army to rest upon the field until midnight, but realizing that Buell had an army that was vastly superior in number, he ordered his force to move back to Harrodsburg at daylight. At this place he made a junction with Kirby Smith, and on the 11th of October retired to Bryantsville.

Bragg deemed it far best now to retreat from Kentucky before the roads became impassable from the rain, for his army was not large enough to cope with Buell's. On the 13th of October, with Polk and Smith, the Confederates moved toward Cumberland Gap, which they safely passed (October 20-24). One month later the Confederate army was facing Nashville from the south.

Buell did not start in pursuit of Bragg until October 11.

The Confederates were at no time seriously embarrassed or impeded; they moved slowly and deliberately, taking all the provisions and supplies the country afforded. The Federals followed as far as London, Ky., and then gave up the pursuit. Buell now decided to send his army by rail through Bowling Green to Nashville.

Results of Bragg's Invasion of Kentucky.— The plan and results of Bragg's invasion into Kentucky were subjected to violent criticism in the South, but they could hardly be sustained. It seemed as if his great opportunity had been lost when he failed to attack Buell on the way to Louisville, thus preventing the Federals' entrance into that city. Bragg claimed that his supplies were nearly out and that a defeat or an undecisive battle would be disastrous. The general outcome of the campaign was in the main very advantageous to the Confederacy, and particularly to its Western soldiery. With scarcely 40,000 effective men at any time, 20,000 of the Unionists had been killed, wounded or captured, 30 pieces of artillery had been taken, and 20,000 small arms and 2,000,000 cartridges had been captured. The army had lived for two months on the country and had carried off enormous numbers of horses, wagons, military supplies, and large quantities of clothes of which the army was much in need and which helped the soldiers over the winter of '62-'63, making it possible to prolong the war around Chattanooga.

Results to the Federals.— General Buell was severely censured by the authorities at Washington for allowing Cook's corps to be so fearfully beaten at Perryville,— when he could have supported him with other corps that were resting only a short distance away,— and for the slowness of his pursuit of Bragg, whom he could possibly have drawn into battle and prevented from escaping with so much valuable material for prolonging the war.

Buell was removed when he reached Bowling Green (October 30), and Gen. W. S. Rosecrans was appointed in

his place. However, the removal was due to a certain extent to political jealousy and also to the small successes of Rosecrans in northern Mississippi, while Buell was intercepting Bragg.

CHAPTER XIX

IUKA AND CORINTH

From September 19 to October 4 Rosecrans had been left at Corinth while Buell's army was moving toward Chattanooga. Gen. Sterling Price at this time occupied Iuka, a town thirty miles southeast of Corinth, on the Memphis & Charleston Railroad.

Rosecrans, who was with Grant during the middle of September, now determined to drive Price from his position, therefore on the 19th of September, without any aid from Grant, he attacked the "Old Missourian" on the Jacinto Road, but was beaten back after losing one battery and many men. Price now retreated by the Fulton Road, joining Van Dorn and Lowell at Ripley, Tipton County, September 28, when their united force amounted to 30,000 men. Price had lost about 800 men.

Van Dorn Attacks Rosecrans.—Van Dorn, with the addition of Price's troops, marched toward Pocahontas and crossing the Hatchie River he surprised Rosecrans on October 3. The division of Rosecrans was driven back into the inner intrenchments by the impetuous attack of Price, and two guns were captured. By October 4 Rosecrans had strengthened his position, and during the forenoon the battle was conducted with great valor and determination. Some of the Federals' strongest positions were captured and a hand to hand contest took place in the yard of Rosecrans' headquarters; but at an opportune time the Federal reserves were brought up, and this addition to the Federal strength caused the now thinned ranks of Van Dorn's army to fall back. It

was not a rout of the Confederates, but their repulse had been severe. They fell back to Hatchie River, where an attack by General Ord was repulsed.

Van Dorn had miscalculated the strength of the Federal army. The Federals had 20,000 men behind intrenchments, — men who were well equipped. The loss in this campaign to the Confederates was 594 killed, 2162 wounded, 2100 prisoners, and 5 pieces of artillery. It caused Van Dorn to be superseded by Pemberton (October 23), which, however, proved to be one of the greatest mistakes of the war. The loss of the Federals was about half that of the Confederates, — 2500. This success of the Federal general in command caused him to be placed in the position that Buell had occupied.

The failure of Grant's Campaign against Vicksburg in 1862.— After the Battles of Iuka and Corinth Grant's headquarters were located at Jackson, Tenn. His command was considerably enlarged, including the Mississippi divisions. McPherson's army, consisting of 11,500 men, was added to his department. In the meantime Van Dorn (August 5) had sent an expedition against Baton Rouge; but it had failed. However, after this failure Van Dorn had, with great judgment and foresight, fortified Vicksburg.

On November 11 Grant, with 57,000 men, moved to Oxford, Miss. Pemberton had now (November 26–27) concentrated 40,000 men at Jackson, Miss.

On December 21 General Sherman, with 30,000 men, proposed to go down the Mississippi River and attack Vicksburg.

On December 20, 1862, Van Dorn, assisted by Forrest, made a sudden attack upon the forces left at Holly Springs under Colonel Murphy, of the Eighth Wisconsin. All Grant's supplies, valued at more than \$2,000,000, were either captured or destroyed in addition to the loss of 2000 soldiers. Grant was forced to give up his campaign and return to Memphis, to escape starvation, for Forrest had intercepted the Fed-

eral line of communication almost to Columbus, Ky. Pemberton now began to concentrate his army at Vicksburg.

Chickasaw Bluffs.—By December 25, 1862, Sherman and Porter reached the mouth of the Yazoo River and ascended the river 13 miles to Johnson's plantation where they disembarked, expecting to make a junction with Grant, of whose failure they had not heard.

To appreciate the events that transpired here we must understand the topography of the land. The hills upon which Vicksburg is built take their rise a little below the city and extend for 15 miles in a northeasterly direction. The Mississippi River touches their base at Vicksburg. About nine miles above Vicksburg the Yazoo skirts the base of Haines Bluff. These bluffs are as a rule precipitous and about 200 feet high. The country between the Yazoo and the Mississippi is low, flat, and full of streams; and the bluffs from Vicksburg were fortified with batteries; while rifle-pits and abatis protected some of the narrow strips of land between Chickasaw Bayou and the Bluffs. These were some of the obstacles confronting Sherman, who had expected Pemberton to be detained in the front of Grant.

On December 29 at about noon the signal was given to begin the battle, which was initiated by an artillery duel. This was followed by an infantry advance of the Federals across a slough and a sloping plateau. Two strong attacks were made by Generals Blair, Morgan, and Thayer, who were severely repulsed at all points, sustaining a heavy loss of 2000 men. On the night of December 29 a terrific rain-storm occurred. During Tuesday, December 30, firing continued on both sides, but a flag of truce was sent in for the combatants to bury their dead and remove their wounded. Sherman had suffered a great failure and the Confederates the comparatively small loss of 267 men.

Arkansas Post.—On January 4, 1863, General McClelland,—a special friend of Lincoln's,—joined the army

under Sherman and assumed command. Soon afterward he conducted a strong expedition against Fort Hindman, or Arkansas Post, situated 50 miles up the Arkansas River, and on January 11 captured it, with its garrison of 5,000 men and 17 guns under the command of Gen. T. J. Churchill. The fort was strong, but the Federal forces,—which numbered 27,000,—without great difficulty overwhelmed the Confederates. The Federals lost 977 men, killed, wounded and missing. The Confederates had 60 killed and 80 wounded.

Grant joined McClelland on February 2, 1863, and moved toward Vicksburg, assuming the chief command of the forces.

Transmississippi Operations. Later Months of 1862. Prairie Grove.—General Holmes, commanding the Transmississippi Department, was stationed at Little Rock and Gen. T. C. Hindman was at Van Buren, with 8000 Confederates. On November 28, 1862, General Marmaduke had arrived at Cane Hill with 7000 Confederates. There he was confronted by Blunt in the Boston Mountains, and a skirmish ensued with a loss to the Federals of 40 killed and wounded, and 75 to the Confederates. The Confederates then retreated toward Van Buren. By December 5 Marmaduke learned that General Herron, with 5000 men, was moving to reinforce Blunt. General Hindman now proposed to engage each army separately; so on December 6 he attacked and drove Blunt's outpost back and ordered his own army to move at 2 p. m. toward Fayetteville. Here they attacked early in the morning and captured 200 prisoners from Herron. Hindman now divided his forces and sent part of them to intercept Blunt; but General Blunt had fallen back.

Hindman had lost much valuable time and did not begin his general attack on Herron until the afternoon, which allowed Blunt to reinforce him before nightfall. When darkness came on the Federals had lost 1000 killed, wounded, and

captured, and had retreated six miles. The Confederates had lost only 700 and had won a victory, but Hindman did not follow it up; instead he left the northern part of Arkansas in the Federals' hands.

The general conditions in Arkansas were almost intolerable to the inhabitants on account of raiding bands of hostile Indians, who were incited by Federal cavalrymen, bands of lawless partisans, and guerillas. The tyrannical, extravagant rule of General Hindman was much blamed for this condition; for he extended no protection over large areas and by his command crops were ravaged, cotton and houses were burned, and straggling soldiers committed many lawless acts. Yet, with all of these discouragements, the general masses of the people were devoted and loyal to the Confederacy.

CHAPTER XX

BATTLE OF MURFREESBORO

The fearfully bloody year of 1862 was brought to a close by one of the most stubbornly contested battles of the war. General Rosecrans, with a fine army of 46,910 men, on December 26, 1862, left Nashville with the purpose of driving Bragg from Murfreesboro, Tenn., where he had taken up headquarters for the winter. In the meantime he had sent Forrest to west Tennessee and Morgan to cut the railroad between Nashville and Louisville,—supposing the Federal army to be established for the winter in Nashville.

The Federal army was commanded by McCook on the right, Thomas in the center, and Crittenden on the left near Stone River, where the latter was facing the right wing of Bragg's army under Breckinridge on the east side of the small stream. Bragg's army was commanded on the left by General Hardee and in the center by General Polk.

The opposing generals had planned the same character of offensive battle. Both were strongest on their left flank. On the morning of December 31, 1862, at about sunrise, Bragg's left wing, under General Hardee, made a furious assault on Johnson's division of McCook's corps. The weather was mild for the time of year, but a dense fog hung early in the morning over Rosecrans' right. The Confederates' attack was sudden and came as a surprise. Johnson's and Davis' divisions were in succession swept away and driven before the impetuous charge of the divisions of Withers, Cheatham, Cleburne, and McCown.

Gen. Phil. Sheridan's division next tried to stay the tide of the Confederate success. By an effectual arrangement of his forces and concentrated fire on the advancing divisions of Withers, he momentarily repulsed the Confederates. Sheridan was now driven back and McCook urgently sent word to Rosecrans to hurry reinforcements. The commanding general now realizing that it would be necessary to countermand the orders to Crittenden and Thomas, sent Rousseau's division, of Thomas' corps, and Van Cleve's division, of Crittenden's corps, to Sheridan's aid. Meanwhile Negley's division of Thomas' corps had prevented Sheridan from being annihilated, and their powerful and heroic resistance had given time for Rosecrans to reform his battle line. By 11 a. m. Sheridan was forced to retire; and from then until the Federals' left was rearranged, the brunt of the fight fell on Thomas. The Confederates continued to move toward the rear of Rosecrans' left.

Rosecrans and Thomas succeeded in forming the line of battle on high ground, and by their coolness and determined resistance at an opportune moment the Federal army was saved from being completely routed. The battle of Murfreesboro was alternately carried over cleared cotton fields and cedar thickets. The mistake of having no cavalry support at the critical moment possibly caused Bragg to fail in winning a great and advantageous victory.

The night of December 31 was almost cloudless. Both armies were much exhausted. The left wing of the Federals had not changed its position a great deal, but the other part of Rosecrans' army had been driven four miles back from their former position. The first day's battle had been one of the most sanguinary of the war.

January 1, 1863, was spent by both generals in reorganizing their forces and preparing for further test of their strength.

The morning of January 2 was for the greater part consumed in an artillery duel between Polk's command and the

Federal center and right, without any material gain by either side. About 4 p. m. a grand charge was made by Breckinridge's corps on the right, which succeeded in driving Van Cleve's division across Stone River; but reinforcements from Crittenden's artillery and Negley's two brigades were hurried to the Federals' aid, and the Confederates retreated from their position. It was now dark and had begun to rain heavily, and this ended the day's fight.

January 3 was a rainy, dreary day. Neither army was willing or in a position to begin another battle and Bragg decided to withdraw during the night. By dawn of January 4 his rear guard was several miles south of Murfreesboro. Only a cavalry force was left in the town. Here Rosecrans established his headquarters.

Results.—The Federals had lost in killed, 1677; in wounded, 7543; missing, 3717,—a total of 13,249 out of 43,400 men engaged. Middle Tennessee was now firmly held by them.

The Confederates had 37,000 men actively engaged and had lost in killed, 1294; in wounded, 7945, and missing, 1027. They had captured 28 guns and a large supply of ammunition.

The closing scenes in the West during the year 1862 and the depressing effects upon the North of Burnside's severe repulse at Fredericksburg had changed to some degree the prospects of the Confederate cause. The stunning blow at Fort Donelson and the fall of New Orleans had been offset by the repulse of Sherman at Chickasaw Bluffs, Grant's failure and retreat from Mississippi, and the successes of Forrest and Morgan in severing the lines of communication between the Federal generals. Bragg's spectacular invasion of Kentucky and the large captured supplies of military stores and clothing for the soldiers aided the Southern cause greatly. The bloody battle of Murfreesboro was undecisive and so was the fate of the Confederacy.



CHARLESTON HARBOR AND APPROACHES, 1861-1864

CHAPTER XXI

EARLY MILITARY OPERATIONS OF 1863

The year 1863 saw the great Civil War reach its climax. During that year the Confederate armies suffered such decisive misfortunes both in the East and in the West that the permanent establishment of the Confederacy became a matter of doubt.

The military operations of the winter and spring, in the majority of which the Confederates were successful, were of necessity almost altogether on the coast.

General McClellan had left General Keyes and his corps at Yorktown, Williamsburg, Suffolk, and Norfolk at the time when he was recalled from the Peninsular Campaign.

Major-Gen. John J. Peck, with 9,000 men, occupied Suffolk,—an important city on account of the railroad and the rich agricultural country behind it. Peck made a great effort to fortify the place securely late in January, 1863, an act that was interpreted at Richmond to mean that he was preparing there a base for great military action. The Confederates, under General Pryor, moved toward Suffolk, and half-way between Blackwater River and the city they defeated a force of the Federals and retired.

Plan of the Richmond Authorities to Recover the Virginia and North Carolina Coast.—General Longstreet was sent to Petersburg in February and Gen. D. H. Hill to North Carolina in order to organize the militia. However, these two generals were first to operate against Suffolk and Norfolk, and after relieving these cities, were to regain the command at the mouths of the rivers of North Carolina, especially the Tar, Neuse, and Roanoke.

The Federal General Foster, who was in command of the North Carolina coast, had been weakened by having to send a great part of his forces in the expedition against Charleston, S. C. On March 14 the Confederates commanded by General Pettigrew attacked the Federals' fort on the River Neuse across from Newbern; but the Federal gunboats came to the aid of the fort and prevented its capture. On March 30 Gen. D. H. Hill laid siege to the town of Washington, situated on the Tar River; but General Foster reinforced the place and prevented its capture. General Foster at this juncture sought aid of General Peck, which was precisely what the Confederates hoped he would do. The Federals, however, learned of Longstreet's strategy and prepared with greater care to receive the expected attack of the Confederates against Suffolk.

On April 12 Longstreet, with 25,000 men, arrived in front of Suffolk; but he was soon convinced that he could not capture the place without siege-guns. It was the 30th of April before these arrived and at the same time he was reinforced by 10,000 men under Hill; and everything was in readiness for the attack. Hooker now initiated his movements in front of Fredericksburg, which caused President Davis to recall Longstreet and Hill, thus relieving Suffolk.

Expedition Against Charleston.—A large fleet under Admiral Dupont had been assembled at Port Royal, S. C., and on the 1st of April appeared in front of Charleston. This fleet numbered fourteen vessels, which included seven Ericsson monitors, the ironclad *Keokuk*, and the frigate *Iron-sides*.

The harbor had been rendered almost impregnable by the genius of Beauregard. In the afternoon of April 7 the Federals entered the channel, passed Battery Bee, and sailed along Morris Island. The sea was smooth, and at 3:10 p. m. the vessels came within range of Fort Sumter and soon within reach of the fire of Morris Island and Sullivan's Island.

The fire soon became terrific; and in a short time the batteries at Fort Moultrie and Battery Bee added their power of destruction. The ironclads concentrated most of their fire on Fort Sumter, and the *Keokuk* pushed within a third of a mile of the fort, but was soon so badly disabled that she had to creep back to safety. In forty minutes after the fight began, five of the ironclads were so badly damaged that it seemed like folly to continue the combat. Dupont now ordered a withdrawal of the whole fleet to Port Royal. The casualties on both sides were very small; but the Confederates won a complete victory, and the monitor type of vessel lost to a great extent its prestige.

Expedition at Galveston.—A fleet of Union gunboats had captured, without any effectual resistance, Galveston (October 8, 1862), and also Sabine Pass. On December 28, 1862, companies sent by General Banks from New Orleans at the request of Commodore Renshaw, arrived at Galveston. In the meantime General Magruder, who had charge of this department under the Confederacy, had gathered a fleet of mercantile vessels, and having manned them, after careful inspection he prepared to surprise the Federal forces at Galveston.

The Confederate general planned to make his assault after midnight of December 31. It was a bright moonlight night when Magruder, with his troops and field-guns, crossed the long railroad bridge between the mainland and the Island. It was 4 a. m. and still dark when his troops attacked with great zeal the Federal troops and while his cannon bore upon the Federal gunboat. At the same time the Confederate fleet attacked the Federal boat *Harriett Lane*, her commander was killed, and the vessel forced to surrender. Renshaw and Law refused to surrender the boat *Westfield* which had run aground, and determined to blow her up; but the order was executed too soon, causing the death of Renshaw and a dozen or so of the crew. The regiment that was in the city

was forced to surrender. Law now escaped with a few remaining vessels to New Orleans.

Sabine Pass.—This port of entry,—which lay between the boundary of Louisiana and Texas,—was an important place for the exportation of cotton. Two gunboats,—the *Morning Light*, with nine guns, and the *Velocity*, with one howitzer,—blockaded the river. The Confederates now purposed to retake this place and prepared four vessels, carrying five guns. On the 21st of January they steamed down the Sabine and forced the gunboats to seek the ocean where they were captured. This left the coast of Texas free and temporarily unblockaded.

Expedition Against Vicksburg in the Early Part of 1863.—In the spring of 1863, after Sherman failed and was defeated at Chickasaw Bluffs, General Grant made several ineffectual attempts to get in the rear of Vicksburg by way of the Tallahatchie, Sunflower, and Coldwater Rivers, as well as by Yazoo Pass and Steel Bayou to the Yazoo River. An immense amount of labor had been wasted in attempting to divert the great Mississippi River at Milliken Bend.

On the night of March 14 Admiral Farragut, hoping to coöperate with Porter above Vicksburg, attempted to pass Port Hudson. The night was exceedingly dark, but the Confederates were on their guard, having lighted immense bonfires on the hillsides. Farragut's flagship, the *Hartford*, took the lead, followed by the *Richmond*, *Mississippi*, *Genesee*, *Kinel*, and *Monongahela*. There were six schooners with mortars, the ironclad *Essex*, and the gunboat *Albatross*.

As Farragut's fleet approached the bluff the Confederates opened a most destructive fire from their batteries. The *Hartford* and the *Albatross*, though hit, had been able to get past the batteries. All the vessels were so seriously injured that they were compelled to fall back down-stream; and the *Mississippi* was so badly disabled that she ran aground, and her officers spiked the guns and abandoned her. She then

drifted off, burning, and her ammunition soon exploding, she sank near Providence Island. On the *Mississippi* out of 133 officers and men, 20 lost their lives and the 21 heavy guns and two howitzers were a total loss. Farragut's fleet now sought protection at Baton Rouge.

This was a severe repulse to the Federals; but neither Banks nor Farragut lost faith in their efforts to capture Port Hudson.

For the present we must leave the interesting military movements of the great commanders in the West and follow the maneuvers of the Eastern armies,—maneuvers that led to the decisive battle of the Civil War.

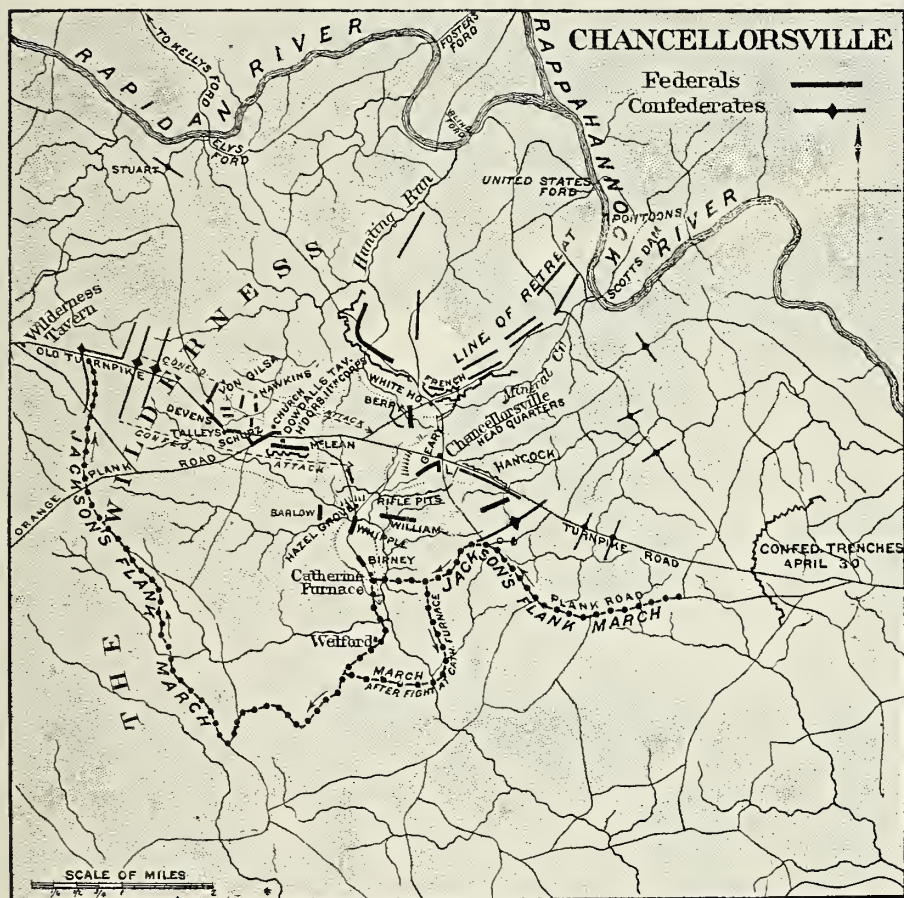
CHAPTER XXII

CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF CHANCELLORSVILLE

When Gen. Joseph Hooker was placed in command he found the Army of the Potomac in a fearfully disorganized condition. It was still encamped at Falmouth occupying Stafford Heights. Desertions were having a terrible effect on the army; there was much discontent prevalent among the soldiers due to former bad generalship and to the effects of the Proclamation of Emancipation.

Over 80,000 soldiers were absent without leave from the Federal army. Hooker, who was a brave and skillful corps commander, set himself busily to the great task of reorganizing and disciplining this force. He divided the army into seven corps, each consisting of from 15,000 to 20,000 soldiers. Over these he placed Reynolds, Couch, Sickles, Meade, Sedgwick, Howard, and Slocum. All the cavalymen, consisting of 13,000 men, he placed under General Stoneman. The artillery and infantry amounted to 123,000 men, with 400 cannons.

Until April, 1863, the Federal army lay inactive on Stafford Heights. During this time General Lee's army was stationed on the heights back of Fredericksburg. Above the town the hills run close to the river, but for five miles below the town there is a stretch of level ground from the river to the hills of more than a mile in extent. Longstreet had a large part of his corps at Suffolk. The Confederate Government, assisted by the zealous efforts of its commanders, was able by early spring to raise the number of the Confederate army under Lee to nearly half that of the Federal



CHANCELLORSVILLE

army under Hooker. Lee never displayed greater sagacity, courage, cheerfulness, and military genius than in this great campaign.

Hooker's Movement Begins.—There had been several cavalry skirmishes during the three months before Hooker made his movement. On April 17 Stoneman proceeded to the upper fords of the Rappahannock in order to interfere with Lee's line of communication and cut it off, if possible; and on April 21st he sent part of Sedgwick's corps that was below, at Port Royal, to make a feint on Lee's right with the intent of disguising his real purpose. Lee's communication had been somewhat disturbed by Stoneman, but the real movement did not begin until April 27. By Tuesday the 28th the three large corps of Meade, Howard, and Slocum, had reached Kelley's Ford,—27 miles above Fredericksburg,—where they crossed the same night and the following morning, without any resistance. On the evening of the 29th Stuart had reported this movement to General Lee, who rightly concluded it to be Hooker's main purpose to attack his left wing. The Federal troops now crossed the neck of land between the Rapidan and Rappahannock and forded the Rapidan at Germania Ford. At the junction of the two rivers was United States Ford. Here on April 30 the Second Corps, under Couch, crossed and joined Slocum, and the two commands moved to Chancellorsville, where they were joined by Hooker. Sedgwick with three corps on April 27 moved ten miles below Falmouth and crossed on the pontoons. On April 29 Sickles was detached and joined Hooker on the morning of May 1. Reynolds was to join him later. Lee's position was apparently critical, for there were 75,000 well-equipped soldiers in his front, over 30,000 in his rear, and a strong active army of over 10,000 cavalymen intercepting his communication.

On May 1 Hooker actively advanced his troops eastward

beyond Chancellorsville, intending to get clear of the forest near the river; but at the last moment his purpose seemed to waver and he decided to draw back and concentrate his forces around Chancellors' house. Meade's corps and one division of Couch held the eastern side, or left flank; Slocum and one division of Sickles' composed the center, Howard commanded the right flank, and two divisions of the Second Corps and two of the Third were held in reserve. The army was in the form of the letter U, with limbs pointing towards the Rappahannock River. The Federal general now awaited an attack, having protected his front with rifle pits and abatis.

The Battle.—General Lee on May 1 made a feint attack on the Federal advance under Slocum. On the night of April 30 Jackson's corps had left its situation at Hamilton crossing and by noon of May 1 was only a few miles from the Federal forces around Chancellorsville.

In the evening of that day, while Lee and Jackson were studying out the great problem of self-preservation Stuart brought word that the Federal right flank at Dowdall Tavern in the Wilderness was exposed and vulnerable. Jackson at once proposed to march his corps of 30,000 men secretly and attack Howard on the right; to which proposal Lee acceded.

In the early morning of May 2 Jackson, hidden by the forest and covered by Stuart's cavalry, started on the most dramatic, tragical, and effective flank movement of the Civil War,—a movement that was taken by the Federals to be a retreat toward Gordonsville. Hooker was at Chancellor House unprepared for the great reverse his army was about to receive. The first real warning the Federals on the right had of the fearful attack was the presence of frightened deer and other wild animals that had been driven from their haunts by Jackson's advancing column.

Between 5 and 6 p. m., while the evening meal was being prepared and many of the Federal arms were stacked,—the mighty and terrific rebel cheer was heard followed by the

crashing volleys of thousands of muskets. The surprise was complete. In a few moments division after division of the Federal right was in a wild retreat for safety and preservation of life. A short resistance was made at Dowdall's Tavern by Steinwehr's regiment and Schurz's; but in one hour the rout of the right wing was complete, the greatest confusion prevailed, and there was not left at this point any semblance of an organized army. In the wild disorder it looked as if the wing would be totally annihilated.

Hearing of the fearful disaster on his right Hooker hurried to Howard's relief; and Sickles and Pleasanton were able to concentrate sufficient artillery on the plateau near Chancellorsville to check Jackson's advance. After this there was a lull in the battle. General Jackson realized the necessity of pushing his advantage, though it was night. Accompanied by A. P. Hill, and part of his staff he rode somewhat in advance of his skirmish-line to reconnoiter. On returning, as they approached the Confederate line, they were mistaken by a North Carolina regiment for Federal cavalry and were fired on. Several of the party were wounded and some killed. General Jackson himself was mortally wounded; two balls pierced his left arm and another the palm of his right hand, and in falling, the general's side was severely injured. He was conveyed in a field ambulance to the hospital at Wilderness Run. This was on Saturday night; the great commander suffered through the coming week and died on Sunday. His last words were: "Tell Major Hawks to send forward provisions to the men. Let us cross over the river and rest under the shade of the trees."

The fall of Jackson was a great calamity to the Confederacy; there is no doubt that he was the greatest lieutenant-general of the Civil War. After Jackson was disabled General Stuart assumed command. The battle continued until midnight when nearly the whole right wing of the Federals was doubled upon its own center. General Lee saw Jackson

at 4 a. m., Sunday, and he decided to press the Federal army back upon the Rappahannock. At daybreak of the 3d Jackson's corps, assisted by Anderson, renewed the attack. Gen. A. P. Hill had also been disabled shortly after Jackson was wounded.

Second Day's Battle.—Hooker had now about 80,000 men in a good defensive position; while Lee had not over half that number to oppose the Federal force. The Confederates advanced into the battle with the cry: "Charge and remember Jackson." Sickles had been ordered by Hooker at daylight to abandon his position at Hazel Grove and draw back to the plateau at Chancellor's house. Stuart at once took advantage of this second blunder on Hooker's part and placed thirty pieces of artillery so as to command the plateau. The Federals were gradually forced back by the obstinate charge of the Confederates. Early in the day General Hooker was severely stunned by the force of a cannon ball, which struck a pillar of the balcony at the Chancellor House.

Lee's army on the east and south had driven Slocum and Hancock back; and Anderson and McLaws now united with Stuart. By midday the whole Federal army had been pressed back into a corner near the Rappahannock. About midday Sedgwick had, after three assaults, taken Marye Heights and captured General Barksdale's command of less than 2000 men and six pieces of artillery. After the capture of Marye's Hill the Confederates retired from Lee's Hill and were joined to Early's command, which came from Hamilton Crossing and took up a position at Salem Church, five miles from Fredericksburg, where they were united to McLaws' command. When the Federal troops came up they were received with a severe fire of musketry and driven back toward Banks' Ford, with great loss, and were completely hindered from uniting with Hooker.

This Sunday had been a most disastrous day for Hooker, who had been defeated at every point except on Marye's Hill,

where 25,000 men had forced Barksdale's brigade to surrender after a terrible loss.

May 4, 1863.—By Monday morning, May 4, Early's troops had been reorganized by Lee, and Anderson had been drawn from the left to reinforce him. A little before mid-day, Early had moved back into the rear of Sedgwick. Marye Heights were retaken from the Federals. The position of Sedgwick had become critical. However, it was late in the afternoon before the Confederates were in the position to make an attack on Sedgwick's army which gave way and in the darkness of the night crossed the river after a loss of over 5000 men in the two days' fight (May 3 and 4). Hooker had allowed Sedgwick on the 4th to retreat and had remained passive behind his intrenchments.

The Federals had been driven from every point; the defeat of Sedgwick on the 4th had decided the great battle; Hooker was thoroughly beaten.

The great fatigue of Lee's troops prevented their rapid movement; but McLaws' and Anderson's corps were ordered back to Chancellorsville the morning of the 5th.

Early in the afternoon a severe rain-storm began, and it was late before the Confederates reached their destination. Hooker had already begun to make arrangements for retreat, but the elements were so adverse that only part of the Federal army crossed in the night; however before the following morning the whole army was safely transported across the Rappahannock and was at Falmouth on the 7th. The weather conditions and the severe ordeal through which his soldiers had passed, prevented Lee from destroying or capturing a great part of the Federal army.

Results: The Federals had unquestionably met one of the most terrible reverses of the war. The soldiers had lost confidence in their commander, and the army was greatly disheartened. The losses of the Federals in killed and wounded were 13,000 and in prisoners, 5000. Hooker also lost 20,000

small arms and 14 large guns. The Confederates lost 1581 killed, 8700 wounded, and 3000 prisoners. Lee, with 57,352 effective men, had completely routed 100,000 of the Federal army besides 12,000 cavalry that had crossed the river on the 8th.

CHAPTER XXIII

THE VICKSBURG CAMPAIGN

After Grant assumed command of all the forces under Sherman and McClelland (Feb. 13, 1863) he placed McClelland in command of the Thirteenth Corps, the Fifteenth Corps under Sherman, and the Sixteenth under Hurlbut, who was sent back to Memphis to watch the railroad connections. The Seventeenth Corps came under the command of General McPherson.

Sherman, McClelland, and McPherson moved down to Young's Point and after six weeks of hard work failed in the endeavor to cut a canal across Milliken Bend, which was about one mile in width. The great river refused to be guided by the works of men, and during a freshet destroyed all their labor. Porter's repeated efforts to open a passage and get to the rear of Vicksburg by the upper Yazoo failed. So, after five failures, sufficient to destroy the resolution of a less tenacious commander, General Grant determined to transport his army below the city,—a most hazardous undertaking.

On March 29 the movement began. McClelland was to begin the march toward New Carthage, twenty miles below Vicksburg. The route was through flooded land; roads had to be made, and bridges built, and when the forces arrived near New Carthage they found the town surrounded by water. This fact made it necessary to go 12 miles farther south, around Bayou Vidal. McPherson had followed closely after McClelland and Sherman's corps was left at Milliken Bend and later brought up the rear. On the night of April 16 Porter, with two fleets of gunboats, ran past Vicksburg, with

little loss, and joined Grant below the town. On April 22 the five transports safely ran past the batteries and reached position held by Grant, who now had means of transportation to the east side of the Mississippi. Grant moved his army to Hard Times, a place almost opposite Grand Gulf on the east side.

Grierson's Cavalry.—In the meantime to prevent reinforcements reaching the Confederates and to draw their attention, Sherman was ordered to Haines' Bluff in the middle of April. At the same time that Porter started his move down the river Gen. B. H. Grierson, with 1700 cavalry, started from La Grange, Tenn., which was in the Confederates' rear, to ascertain the Confederate strength. In sixteen days Grierson had traveled six hundred miles; had destroyed the Southern Railroad from Meridian to Jackson, burning depots, cars, manufactories, magazines, and taking all forms of supplies. Pemberton was much distressed by this cavalry raid for it had cut off his supplies and jeopardized his interest to a great extent. At noon, May 2, half-famished and thoroughly exhausted, Grierson's troops entered Baton Rouge,—where Banks was located,—after a brave and daring raid that had done a good deal to demoralize the Confederates' rear, and to reveal to Grant the weakness of the Confederates.

Grant Crosses the Mississippi.—On April 30, 1863, Grant crossed the Mississippi River opposite Briensburg, with 50,000 men, hoping to take Pemberton in the rear. Grant had accomplished nothing of importance since Shiloh, and even there his actions had been criticized. Should he fail now, his future was ruined. Opposed to Grant, Pemberton had about 21,000 men stretched from Haines' Bluff to Grand Gulf, 11,000 men at Grenada, and 5000 at Jackson.

Battle of Port Gibson.—On May 1 Grant sent McClermand with 24,000 men in advance to Port Gibson. About

four miles from this point General Bowen, with 6000 men, had taken a strong position on both sides of the road, which forked at this point and was protected by a small stream. Here the Federals met a most determined resistance from the Confederates, who had only one-fourth their number but engaged them for an entire day. At sunset Bowen fell back in good order toward Port Gibson, after a loss of three guns and 700 men. The Federals had lost 910 men and found in the morning that Port Gibson had been abandoned and that the Confederates had burned the bridges in their rear. General Grant now turned his forces toward Jackson, which place Johnston reached May 13, finding General Gregg in command of 6000 Confederate soldiers.

Battle of Raymond.—McPherson's corps was now moving rapidly northward and was eight miles or so west of McClernand and Sherman when, on May 12, about two miles from the town of Raymond the advance under Logan encountered the Confederates, with about 6200 men under General Gregg and General Walker,—who were well located because of the thick woods and irregular ground. The struggle was a severe one of over three hours; but repeated charges and the effects of the Federal artillery broke the Confederate lines, and they were forced to retreat toward Jackson. The Federals lost in this engagement 69 killed, 341 wounded, 32 missing; while the Confederates lost about 800 men.

When Johnston arrived at Jackson, on the 13th of May, he ordered Pemberton to move up to Clinton, so that they could coöperate in Sherman's rear. A council of war advised Pemberton to follow Johnston's order, but he delayed 28 hours, his purpose being to cut Grant's communication. It being almost impossible to join Johnston's command, he directed his force of 17,500 men toward Raymond.

McPherson's and Sherman's forces approached Jackson by different roads and appeared before the town on the 14th of May, forcing Johnston to retreat. Gen. H. T. Walker

covered the retreat, and in the battle before Jackson lost several hundred men and a number of guns.

On the 15th Sherman occupied the little city and had small respect for any form of property; a large number of the private houses, cotton factories, hotels and public buildings were destroyed by fire.

Grant's united army was larger than the combined forces of Johnston and Pemberton, who were separated. Grant now moved rapidly towards Bolton Station, and occupied it on May 15.

Battle of Baker's Creek or Champion's Hill.—Pemberton had by May 15 found out his mistake in going south of the railroad instead of north and tried to correct it. At Baker's Creek, where it was crossed by the Jackson and Vicksburg Railroad, he assumed a strong position, posting his left flank, under Gen. C. L. Stevenson, on the slopes of Champion's Hill where the road turns to his left; Gen. W. W. Loring commanded his right wing at a point where the slope was more gentle, and Gen. John Bowen commanded the center. Grant's army moved up the road early in the morning of the 16th, with McPherson on the right, Hovey in the center, and Smith and Blair on the left.

About 11 a. m. the battle began in earnest. General Stevenson bore the brunt of the battle being continually pressed by the large Federal division under the gallant General Logan. Hovey's division of McClernand's corps, after a fight of one hour, was driven back one-half mile by Bowen's command and part of Loring's. The Federals were reinforced by Crocker's division of McPherson's corps. Two brigades of Bowen gave aid now to Stevenson, who, with only 6500 men had sustained for several hours the fearful attack. General Loring had failed to render assistance to the left as he had been ordered. About five o'clock the Confederate left was broken and in confusion retreated from the field. One of the most gallant fights of the day was now made

by General Tilgham of General Loring's command, who, with 1500 men and several fine guns, kept the 8000 Federals at bay and repulsed them until the retreating Confederates were safe beyond the bridge. General Loring's command was completely separated from the rest of Pemberton's army and prevented from crossing Big Black River. General Tilgham's stand had saved a large part of the Confederate army; but he was killed during the engagement while handling a twelve-pound howitzer. General Loring's command,—after the loss of his artillery and several days' wandering south of Champion Hill battle-ground,—made a junction with Johnston's forces on the east.

The Confederates now retreated to Big Black River and on the 17th took up a strong position there.

Results of Battle of Champion's Hill: The Federals lost 430 killed, and 2100 wounded. The Confederates lost in addition to General Tilgham, 1400 killed and wounded; 2400 prisoners, and 24 guns. Their army was demoralized and permanently separated from Johnston.

Battle of Big Black River.—On Sunday morning, May 17, McClellan,—only part of whose army had participated in the fight of the 16th,—led the pursuit toward Big Black River. The Federals were soon halted by the strong position of the Confederates on the eastern shore and the fortification on the high ground on the western side. Above the railroad bridge hulks of boats had been placed for crossings. At the first charge and volley of the Federals the Confederates fled, and left in their hands 18 guns and considerable stores and small arms. A large part of the Confederate forces were captured; but by burning the bridge, Pemberton delayed the Federals 24 hours and gathered his army into Vicksburg. On May 19 Sherman occupied Haines' Bluff, much to his gratification.

Pemberton's scattered and discouraged army on arriving at Vicksburg had the assistance and encouragement of 8000

fresh troops that had not yet been weakened and disheartened by defeat. Grant's operations since he left Grand Gulf had been rapid, effectual, and highly successful. He had completely discomfited and separated the Confederate commanders. In two weeks he had lost about 5000 men, but even then his armies numbered 15,000 more than the combined forces of Johnston and Pemberton.

Siege of Vicksburg.—Against the advice of Johnston the Confederates were now cooped up in Vicksburg. Pemberton had from 25,000 to 30,000 men and over a hundred guns with which to defend the place. Grant's army and the fleet on the 19th had cut off all outside communication, so starvation threatened the besieged. Pemberton now placed his command on the right under Stevenson, Major-General Torney commanded the center, and Major-Gen. M. L. Smith the left. Generals Baldwin and Lee commanded part of the left and right respectively.

Sherman commanded the Federal right along the Bluffs, McPherson the center, and McClernand the left.

On May 19 the divisions of General Blair, of Sherman's corps, made an unsuccessful assault, being severely repulsed. On May 22 General Grant attempted a concentrated assault. At great loss McClernand gained a foothold, but was dislodged. Grant now withdrew, after having lost 5000 men. The Confederates' loss was only 500.

At about 12 o'clock McClernand had sent dispatches to General Grant, stating that two of the Confederate forts had been captured and requesting that McPherson and Sherman make a diversion. Grant was not prone to regard this request, but on consulting with Sherman, he decided to allow the assaults to be made. The Federals, after five desperate and ineffectual efforts desisted from the massed attacks at about 2 p. m.; but it was not until about 8 p. m. that the Federal troops were recalled from the most advanced position. During this whole day Porter had added much to the sufferings

of the Confederates by the continuous fire from his mortars.

Grant now determined to begin a regular siege, and in ten days he had gathered around the beleaguered city a powerful army of 80,000 men, aided by 200 guns, besides the gunboats and mortars under Porter's command.

By June the 12th Johnston had collected 30,000 men at Jackson but they were not well equipped and as many of them were raw troops it would have been anything but good judgment to dash his forces to pieces against Grant's large army of veterans.

The Confederates, well fortified, now began the long, tedious hours of the siege. On account of the differences between Grant and McClernand, Major-General Ord on June 15 superseded General McClernand. Trenches were dug against trenches, there was mining and counter mining. The hot days of June and incessant watching began soon to tell on the besieged Confederates. After the first five days Pemberton found it necessary to cut rations down to one-half. There were drenching rains to add to the sufferings of the besieged. After May 25 from river and land the Federals kept up an incessant firing of heavy guns and mortars. It has been estimated conservatively that 6000 mortar shells were thrown into the city every 24 hours, and sometimes the land guns added 4000 more a day. So great was the distress of the citizens that they were forced to make caves to dwell in.

Delusive Hopes of Pemberton.—Pemberton's condition was soon very critical, but, by delusive hopes that Johnston would find some way to render effectual assistance or that the authorities at Richmond would help them, the brave defenders were cheered from day to day. On the west side of the Mississippi River, at Milliken's Bend, General Taylor made an effort to get into communication with Pemberton on June 9, but he was repulsed. On June 14 Johnston sent word to Pemberton that he would endeavor to make an attack at some point north of the railroad and that at the

same time an effort would be made to send a force from Vicksburg to the same point. Further reconnoissance convinced Johnston that an attack from the north was impracticable.

During the last days of June Pemberton's army was in a serious plight; thousands were in the hospitals, and mule meat was at a premium. Their endurance was almost at an end.

The Last Days.—On June 25, about 5 p. m., the first great mine, which had been prepared in front of McPherson's corps, was fired. The explosion was fearful. A band of picked Federals rushed forward and seized part of Fort Hill, where the great breach had been made. A terrific cannonade was begun from all the land batteries, aided by Porter on the water. But after all the proud effort the gallant Confederates drove the Federals from their vantage point.

Another mine was exploded on June 28, which did further damage to Fort Hill.

On June 29 Johnston made his last effort to aid Pemberton. His field transportation had been received on July 1. He reached Brownsville and decided to make his attack from the south. His communication to Pemberton, telling of his plans to attack on July 7, was intercepted by Grant.

On July 1 a mine was exploded near the Jackson road, demolishing a large redoubt and killing several men who manned the works.

The army of Pemberton was exhausted and starving; he could hope for no effectual aid, and on July 3 he sent General Bowen and Colonel Montgomery, of his staff, with a proposal of an armistice to Grant. He wanted a body of commissioners, three from each army, appointed to arrange the terms of capitulation.

Grant's reply was that no terms other than unconditional surrender would satisfy him. At 3 p. m., July 3,—in front of McPherson's line and under the shade of an oak tree,—Pemberton and Grant met and discussed the terms of sur-

render. Grant was accompanied by Logan, Ord, McPherson, and A. J. Smith: Pemberton, by Bowen and Montgomery; but all these officers retired and left the two commanders alone. The final agreements were not concluded until 9 a. m., July 4. Grant had held stubbornly to his terms: Unconditional surrender; the Confederates to be paroled not to take up arms against the Federal Government unless exchanged by proper authority.

On July 4 Pemberton surrendered 23,000 men, 3 Major-Generals, 90 field-pieces, 9 Brigadier-Generals and 40,000 small arms. There were 6000 men in the hospital, and 4000 citizens, including negroes.

Results of the Vicksburg Campaign.—The Confederates had lost since Grant crossed the Mississippi an army of 40,000 men; an enormous quantity of supplies, more than 100 field-guns, 60,000 small arms; and there had been a severance of the Transmississippi department of the Confederacy from that of the East. The strongest fortification on the great river was lost. It was the most severe blow the Southerners had yet received, and, coming simultaneously with the defeat at Gettysburg, left in doubt the success of their arms.

The Federals had reason to be proud of their success. Almost unlimited resources, an enormous army of 80,000 men assisted greatly by the fleet, to whose commanders not enough credit has been given, explains to a great extent their victory. All these would not have accomplished the result, however, had not there been a great guiding military mind at the helm. Grant's perseverance, his fortitude under great discouragement, stimulated like characteristics among his lieutenants, aroused the valor of his soldiers and gained him one of the greatest triumphs of the Civil War. According to his reports, he lost during the campaign 8573 men, of whom 943 were killed. He received congratulatory letters from every source. Among them were those from

General Halleck and President Lincoln. From this time to the end of the war Grant's place as one of the greatest if not the greatest of the Federal commanders was established.

Sherman Occupies Jackson.—As soon as Johnston heard of Pemberton's surrender he began to move back toward Jackson. Grant immediately sent Sherman in pursuit with 50,000 men who arrived July 8 at Clinton. On the 10th they were before the intrenchments at Jackson, where General Johnston had gathered his forces. On the 11th Sherman bombarded the town from all directions. The heaviest loss to the Federals came to Lanman's brigade, of which 500 men were killed, wounded, or captured.

Johnston, on the night of July 16, evacuated Jackson and retreated safely to Meridian. Steele's division pursued for about 14 miles, without any results. The town of Jackson suffered severely by these repeated occupations, for the Federal soldiers wantonly destroyed public buildings, household furniture, libraries, pictures, and everything that they could not utilize.

On July 27 Sherman again moved back to his old position on Haines' Bluff, and this practically ended the Vicksburg Campaign.

CHAPTER XXIV

BANKS' LOUISIANA CAMPAIGN TO THE FALL OF PORT HUDSON

General Banks, as we have seen, had been given command of the Department of the Gulf late in 1862 and, with over 10,000 men, arrived in New Orleans on December 14, where General Butler handed over to him a force of from 17,000 to 20,000 men, the majority of whom were veterans, with the exception of a few colored regiments. He soon sent 10,000 men to the garrison at Baton Rouge, and he also sent reinforcements to Galveston, the outcome of which movement has already been narrated.

Banks' Advance.— During January and February, 1863, the Confederates held Brashear City and other important points on the Atchafalaya River as far as Alexandria on the Red River. Brashear City was at the junction of Bayou Teche and the Atchafalaya, eighty miles from New Orleans, and connected with that city by railroad. General Wietzel and Commodore McKean Buchanan were sent against the Confederates at Brashear City but were repulsed January 15 at Carney Bridge, where Buchanan was killed. The Federals retreated, losing 34, killed and wounded.

Banks and Farragut now concentrated all their forces at Baton Rouge in order to make an expedition against Port Hudson. Their severe repulse and the failure of Farragut's attempt to pass Port Hudson (March 13) has been previously related. The 12,000 men under Grover, sent by Banks to aid Farragut were withdrawn, and Banks again decided to concentrate his forces against Brashear City.

Second Expedition Against Brashear City.—On April

10 General Wietzel moved to unite with Generals Emory and Grover in order to attack the Confederates in the rear of Fort Bisland. The Confederates all now retreated to Opelousas. In the pursuit a sharp engagement took place between Gen. Dick Taylor and General Emory at Vermilion Bayou. Taylor retreated to Alexandria, which had been taken by Admiral Porter, who had ascended to Red River with his gunboats. Taylor now (May 6) retreated to Grand Ecore.

Results: Banks had been successful in his expedition. The Confederates had lost nearly two thousand men, several boats, and 20 guns.

Banks Captures Port Hudson.—Banks, on May 14, started from Alexandria toward Port Hudson, where by May 25 he had concentrated from 16,000 to 20,000 troops. The Confederates, under General Gardner, had about 6500 troops and 51 guns to defend the fortification. The place had natural strength and had been fortified with great skill.

Banks, on May 27, ordered a general assault both by land and by river. The firing began about 6 a. m., starting with the land batteries. At 10 a. m. an attack was made on the right by Wietzel, Grove, and Paine, and later by Generals C. C. Augur and T. W. Sherman on the center and left. The charge of the Federals was full of energy and heroism. The fight kept up until sunset.

The assault proved a complete failure on the part of the Federals; and in it they lost 1550 wounded and 293 killed. The Confederate loss was very small,—scarcely 300. A large body of negro troops was used by the Federals in the assault; and from the report of their commanders they showed considerable patience and fortitude under fire.

On June 11 Banks ordered an assault at 3 p.m., but was again severely repulsed, with heavy loss. On June 14 he ordered a second assault and at early dawn the forward movement began. After a terrible punishment the Federals

by 11 a. m. had again been repulsed along the whole line, losing 700 men. Banks now concluded that the place could only be subjugated by siege operations.

Two Transmississippi Divisions.—Late in June and early in July, during the operations around Port Hudson and Vicksburg, two important expeditions were instituted by the Confederates to divert the Federal forces from their efforts. After overrunning all the Teche Bayou and Red River country, Gen. Dick Taylor appeared before Brashear City (June 23), which he captured, with 1800 Federal soldiers and several million dollars worth of supplies. There were also captured an immense quantity of medical stores, commissary supplies, mules, horses, tents, and siege guns.

General Holmes with 5000 troops,—after a march of great toil and hardship,—with Generals Price, Marmaduke, and Fagan reached a point within three miles of Helena on the evening of July 3. At daybreak of July 4 the assault began. After a desperate fight the Confederates were repulsed and forced to retreat. Their loss had been 600 killed and wounded, and 400 prisoners. The next day Holmes began his retreat to Little Rock, Ark., which he later had to abandon.

News reached General Gardner on July 7, at Port Hudson, that Vicksburg had surrendered. On this night the Confederate general held a council of war with his officers. They all considered that it was useless to hold out longer. Terms were agreed upon; and on July 9 General Gardner formally surrendered Port Hudson, with 6233 prisoners, 51 guns, 5000 small arms, 4000 pounds of cannon-powder, and a large supply of ammunition for small arms.

The surrender of Port Hudson was inevitable after the fall of Vicksburg.

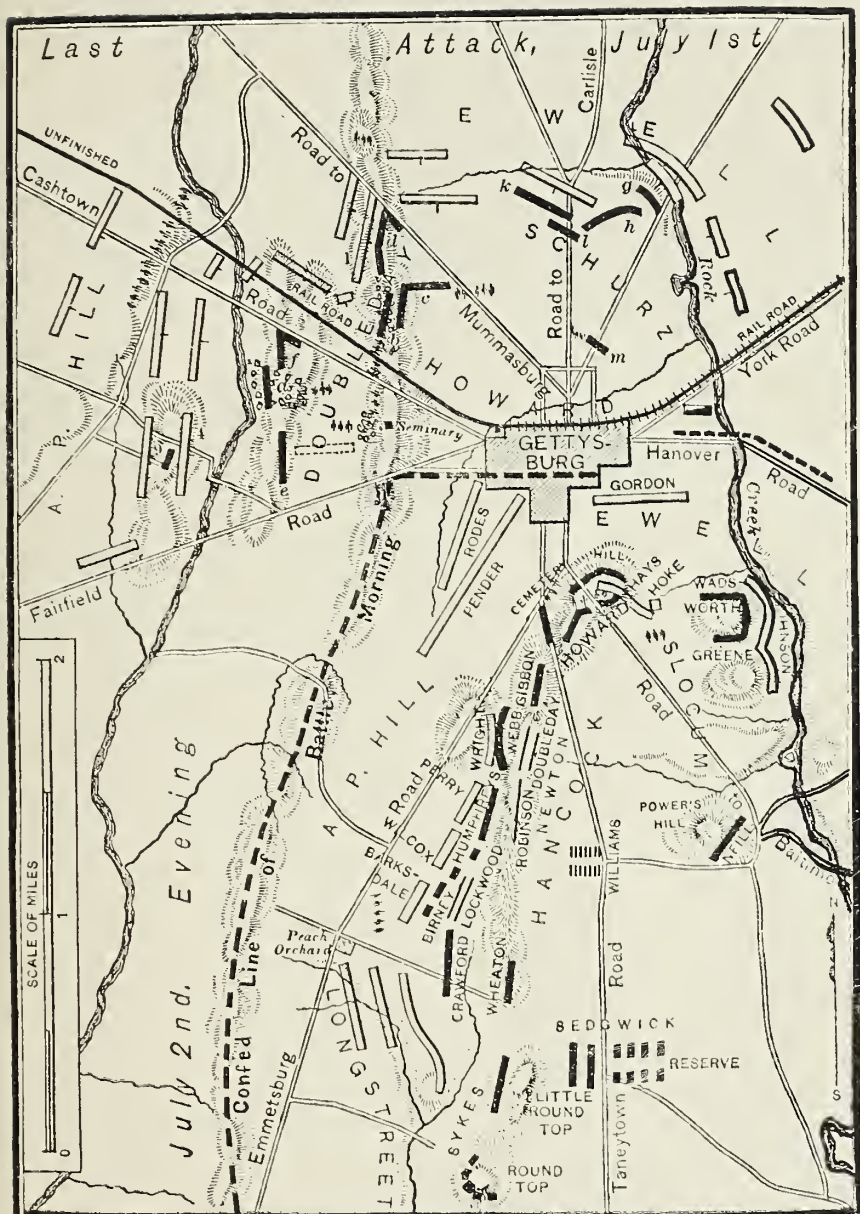
CHAPTER XXV

CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG

One day before the fall of Vicksburg occurred the most important battle of the Civil War. After Chancellorsville the military condition of the Confederacy looked more hopeful than at any time during the fearful struggle. Vicksburg's safety was not so much in doubt, and Bragg had effectually held Rosecrans at bay after Murfreesboro. The Federals were discouraged and the army in the East had, to a great extent, lost faith in their leaders. Lee, intrenched in his old line at Fredericksburg, had recalled Longstreet from Suffolk and had collected a few soldiers from other sources.

During the month of May, near Culpeper, the greatest activity was evident in Lee's army. Every department of the army was supplied with the best that the resources of the Confederacy could furnish. The cavalry under General Stuart was nearly 12,000 strong, and by the last of June, Lee had 60,000 men besides cavalry. He placed under General Ewell the Second Corps,—or General Jackson's old command, consisting of the divisions of Early, Rodes, and Johnson, while the First was commanded by General Longstreet and consisted of the divisions of McLaws, Hood, and Pickett. Gen. A. P. Hill commanded the Third Corps, which consisted of the divisions of Anderson, Pender and Heth. Each corps comprised about 22,000 men and 80 pieces of artillery. General Hooker was carefully watching Lee's movements in order to discover his purpose.

Lee's Initiative Movements.—It was not probable that Lee would now remain idle, waiting for the Federals to



GETTYSBURG

resume offensive movements. One more disastrous defeat of the Federal army,—a defeat as severe as that at Chancellorsville,—would place the military prestige of the Confederacy high enough to cause foreign powers to recognize that government. On June 3, the divisions of McLaws and Hood of Longstreet's corps, began their march to Culpeper Court House, followed on June 4 and 5 by Ewell's corps. A. P. Hill's corps was left by Lee in the lines at Fredericksburg to disguise his movements.

On June 6 Hooker ordered Sedgwick to send troops across the Rappahannock, at Franklin's crossing, to discover Lee's purposes. Hill made such a display of strength that Hooker was again partly deceived. The Federal cavalry, under Pleasanton, was ordered to reconnoiter toward Culpeper, and on Tuesday, June 9, crossed the Rappahannock at Kelley's and Beverly Fords. Meantime General Stuart, under Lee's orders had in the evening of the 8th arrived at Brandy's Station.

Battle at Beverly Ford.— Buford, soon after he crossed at Beverly Ford on the 9th,—came into a severe engagement with General Jones of Stuart's advance. The Confederates were soon reinforced by Gens. Wade Hampton and W. H. Lee and succeeded in repulsing Buford. Stuart now turned his main attention to General Gregg, who had crossed at Kelley's Ford. One of the most spirited and sanguinary cavalry engagements of the war then took place. The loss on each side was about 600; but the Federal cavalry was forced to retire across the Rappahannock. Hooker was now made aware that Lee's army was in great force at Culpeper Court House and intended a northern movement.

On June 10 Ewell pushed his corps rapidly to the northwest, moved up the east side of the Blue Ridge, passed Chester Gap, and crossed the Shenandoah at Port Royal.

The Milroy Disaster.— On the evening of June 13 General Ewell arrived at Winchester, having marched seventy

miles in three days. General Milroy, of the Federals, who was stationed here with 7000 men, late in the evening of June 13 captured a few Confederates and determined to defend the town the next day.

The Confederates did not begin the assault until late in the afternoon. Milroy now attempted to escape, but it was too late; he and part of his troops reached Harper's Ferry, and the rest joined Hancock on the Potomac.

The Confederates captured 4000 men, 30 guns, 277 wagons, 400 horses, and a large quantity of supplies. General Ewell now crossed the Potomac and moved rapidly into Pennsylvania.

While Ewell was making his rapid march, General Hooker had sent General Sickles to Beverly Ford, Howard's corps to Catlett's, and Reynolds' to Bealton, to watch the fords of the Rappahannock, while he remained at Falmouth with half of the Federal army. Hooker wished to cross the river and interpose himself between Hill and Longstreet, who were at Culpeper; but this plan was objected to by Halleck and President Lincoln, who in his quaint, original manner telegraphed Hooker: "I would not take any risk of being entangled upon the river, like an ox jumped half over a fence, and liable to be torn by dogs front and rear, without a fair chance to gore one way or to kick the other."

It was not until the 13th of June that Hooker became aware of Ewell's rapid march. He now abandoned his camps along the Rappahannock and by the 16th had fallen back to Fairfax and Manassas. As soon as General Hill observed the departure of the Federal army he hastened to join Longstreet at Culpeper.

By June 15 Jenkins' cavalry, of Ewell's corps, had reached Chambersburg. Ewell waited now at Williamsport for Hill and Longstreet to catch up with him; but on the 20th and 21st he crossed the Potomac at Shepherdstown and occupied Chambersburg (June 24). On June 27 the divi-

sions of Johnson and Rodes had moved rapidly forward to Carlisle, Pa., while Early had gone through Gettysburg toward York, where he arrived on the 28th. The advance scouts of Rodes and Johnson had by this time reached a point on the Susquehanna River opposite Harrisburg. Meanwhile Lee's whole army had reached and forded the Potomac at Shepherdstown (June 25 and 26), and by June 27 had encamped near Chambersburg.

On June 26 Hooker had crossed the Potomac, east of the Blue Ridge, at Edwards Ferry, and concentrated his army at Frederick on June 27.

Hooker's Resignation and Meade's Appointment.—Hooker had asked permission of the Washington authorities to draw the 10,000 men under French from the Heights at Harper's Ferry and join them to Slocum's force, in order to make a feint on Lee's rear, claiming that the holding of the Heights could be of no value now to the Federals as it did not protect the fords. He was refused this request and in consequence sent in his resignation on the evening of June 27. On the morning of June 28 the order arrived from Washington transferring to General Meade the command of the Army of the Potomac, and giving him much greater latitude than had been given to General Hooker.

The new commander was at this time forty-eight years of age. He had graduated from West Point in 1835, had served in the Mexican War and had received distinction at Monterey. He was tall and thin; his face was long; his expression thoughtful. He was recognized as a leader of sound conservative judgment and a general who was skillful in military maneuvers.

On the morning of June 29 General Meade ordered his army to move on parallel lines with Lee's but to keep between the Confederates and Washington. By the evening of the 29th the Federal army extended from Windsor on its right to Emmetsburg on the left.

The day Lee encamped at Chambersburg and Ewell reached Carlisle, Stuart in accordance with orders from Lee had reached Seneca on the Potomac, 13 miles from Washington, and had crossed the river in the Federals' rear. Thus at the time Meade moved up the Monocacy Lee could not know with any degree of certainty the movements of the Federal army, his cavalry being too far away to give definite information. The same mistake that Bragg made at "Stone River," Lee was now making. As soon as General Lee learned of the movements of the Federal army, he ordered Hill and Longstreet to go through the South Mountain range toward Gettysburg, fearing that the enemy would interfere with his communication. Ewell was ordered to move from Carlisle and York to the same point.

From his headquarters at Chambersburg General Lee, on June 27, had issued an order to his army respecting their conduct while on the enemy's soil, praising them for their past fortitude, and closing with these words:

"The Commanding General therefore earnestly exhorts the troops to abstain, with most scrupulous care, from unnecessary and wanton injury to private property; and he enjoins upon all officers to arrest and bring to summary punishment all who shall in any way offend against the orders on this subject.

"R. E. LEE, General."

The Confederates exacted supplies of the inhabitants, but there were no authentically reported cases of wilful destruction of private property as invariably occurred in Grierson's raid, or in Sherman's occupation of Jackson, or the fearful conditions that were later of such common occurrence in the Shenandoah Valley and through Georgia and the Carolinas.

On June 30 General Meade issued an address to his army, telling them of the gravity of their situation, commending them for their past work, bringing to their minds the fact that their soil was being invaded, and that the whole country depended upon their valor.

It was not until the night of June 29 that Meade, rightly interpreting Lee's plan of concentrating his army east of South Mountain, moved cautiously toward Gettysburg and made intrenchments on a range of hills south and east of the town. But on June 30, about noon, a detachment of Federal cavalry under Buford passed through Gettysburg and had a short conflict with the advance of Hill's corps, which was moving from Cashtown. On the night of June 30, Meade ordered Reynolds and Howard to move at once to Gettysburg. This was the left wing of Meade's army, the center was commanded by Sickles and Slocum, and the right by Hancock (Couch's old corps), Sykes (formerly Meade's corps) and Sedgwick.

The Battle-Ground of Gettysburg.—The little town of Gettysburg is situated on a small plateau from which a number of roads radiated. Lying south of Gettysburg are a chain of hills and bluffs, shaped very much like a huge fish-hook, extending four and one-half miles. The point of the hook may be represented by Wolf's Hill, the barb and curve by Culp's Hill, while the stem is made by a series of hills running southward and culminating in Little Round Top,—a prominence two hundred and eighty feet high,—and Round Top, some four hundred feet high.

The Chambersburg road extended northward and westward, the Carlisle road almost due north, the Harrisburg road northeast, the Baltimore road southeast and the Emmetsburg road nearly due south, bending slightly to the west. Between Wolf's Hill and Culp's Hill ran Rock Creek and on its west was the Cemetery Ridge just described.

West of Little Round Top and Round Top and near their base is a small creek called Plum Run. The two elevations referred to were naturally strong military protection; from their slopes a cultivated valley extended for nearly a mile to another crest, known as Seminary Ridge,—so-called because of a theological seminary that was located there,—

and also called Oak Ridge on account of the oak grove that covered it. Between these two ridges ran the Emmetsburg road.

For three days two mighty armies were to wage relentless battle over these picturesque valleys and hills. Every foot of ground was to be stubbornly and obstinately fought over; thousands were to lay down their lives for the cause they deemed right; here was to be really decided the fate of the nation; here names were to shine with a luster that time cannot tarnish.

The Battle. First Day. July 1, 1863.— On Wednesday morning, July 1, Heth had asked permission of General Hill to move into Gettysburg in order to get shoes for his many barefooted men, if Hill had no objection. To this request Hill replied: "None in the world," so about 9 a. m. Heth's division reached a point one mile west of Gettysburg, where he met Buford's cavalry.

Reynolds, on hearing the firing, had hurried forward the First Corps, led by Wadsworth's division, which came up at 10 a. m., and which was soon reinforced by the divisions of Doubleday and Robinson. Reynolds had sent word to Howard to come to his assistance. By noon Hill had brought up Pender's division, at the same time that Reynolds had ordered a charge from the skirts of the woods; but the brave and capable Federal general was shot through the neck and died before he could be removed from the field.

General Howard arrived at 1 p. m., with the Schurz and Barlow divisions, and took up his position on the right of the First Corps,— just north of the town. The Third Division under Van Steinwehr had been left as a reserve on Cemetery Ridge. Howard now assumed full command and placed Schurz in command of the Eleventh Corps.

Howard had scarcely arranged his troops, when at 2:30 p. m. Rodes' division of Ewell's corps made a junction with Heth on Hill's left, and from an elevation opposite Schurz's

division of the Eleventh Corps made a strong attack; and with his artillery and by rapidly advancing his infantry he broke the line between the First Corps and the Eleventh. The Federals at this point were again facing the same men who so badly had beaten them at Chancellorsville, and they were making a brave stand to redeem that defeat; but could not resist the impetuosity of the Southerners.

At 3 p. m., while Rodes was pushing his advantage, General Early had made a strong flank attack on Barlow,—the right of the Eleventh Corps. Barlow was wounded and captured with the division commander of Schurz's old division. By 4 p. m. the whole Federal force was in full retreat through Gettysburg to make a final stand on Cemetery Ridge. Steinwehr had wisely strengthened his position. General Hancock, a great favorite with the army, had arrived in person to arrange and encourage the soldiers.

Lee did not press his advantage; he was desirous to have Longstreet present before delivering a general battle, so delayed, giving the Federals time during the night and the following day to assume a strong position,—a serious mistake which further events prove was disastrous to the final success of the Confederacy.

Hill and Ewell were halted at 5 p. m. At 6 p. m. Slocum's Twelfth Corps came up and was put in position, the Third Corps under Sickles came next and by midnight Hancock's,—or the Second Corps, arrived from Tarrytown. The first day's battle was a splendid Confederate success. There had been engaged two divisions of Hill's corps and two of Ewell's,—or 26,000 men,—on the Confederate side, while the Federals had 23,000 men, including their cavalry.

The Confederates lost 5000 men, killed, wounded, and missing.

The Federals lost 5000 prisoners, and 3000 killed and wounded.

July 2, 1863.—The Fifth Corps of the Federal army,

commanded by Sykes, was 23 miles from Gettysburg late in the afternoon of the 1st of July, but arrived on the battleground early on the morning of the 2d. Sedgwick was at Manchester, 32 miles away; but, by forced march, arrived at 2 p. m., July 2, and was placed on the extreme left, behind Round Top.

General Meade reached the Federal lines at 1 a. m., July 2. He fixed his headquarters at a farmhouse on the Tarrytown Road, behind the grove that grew almost in the middle of the stem of the fish-hook. The Federal army was well arranged and concentrated over Cemetery Ridge. Slocum occupied Culp's Hill, on the right; then came Newton, who commanded the First Corps. The Eleventh Corps was in the position it had assumed on its retreat under Howard. The Second and the Third Corps, under Hancock and Sickles, occupied the remainder of the Ridge. Sykes, in command of the Fifth Corps at Little Round Top, was to be held in reserve and supported by Sedgwick on his arrival.

During the night of July 1 General Lee had cautiously occupied Seminary Ridge. The summit of the ridge was well covered with oak and pine trees. Longstreet's corps was placed on the extreme right, Hill in the center, and Ewell on the left. Lee's line was some five miles long, while Meade's was more compact,—scarcely four. On the morning of July 2 Lee delayed his attack and allowed Meade to gather all his resources in a favorable defensive position. There was nothing to compel him to a severe, offensive engagement against a numerically stronger force, but the taste of victory on the 1st of July, and the eagerness of his army for action added to the great confidence Lee had in his army's ability to gain a victory, and the difficulty of a withdrawal in the face of the foe, influenced Lee to undertake the engagement.

However, there seems to have occurred a misunderstanding between Lee and Longstreet concerning the order of battle. According to the evidence of Gen. W. N. Pendleton, Lee's

chief of artillery and trusted friend; of General Long, one of Lee's staff officers; of Gen. A. P. Hill, in his official report, and of General Early, it was fully understood at the night conference of the commanding officers that General Longstreet was to open the battle on the right the following morning. He did not obey the orders of his superior, objecting to making the attack without Pickett. Lee now went to Ewell and saw that Meade was strongly intrenched in his front, massing his men.

It was taking valuable time for the Confederates to agree among themselves. The morning passed quietly, with the exception of some small skirmishes. The day was warm and sultry. The orchards in the vicinity were filled with ripening fruit, and the fields were showing the effects of the summer sun upon the golden grain. The cherry-trees in the vicinity of some of the Confederate camps were loaded with ripening fruit. All nature was in striking contrast to the scenes of death, confusion, and horror that were soon to fill the beautiful landscape. The mighty forces were testing and preparing their strength for the awful ordeal that was to blot out thousands of lives.

General Lee, seeing that Ewell was not in a position to take the initiative, at 11 a. m. again ordered Longstreet to the attack; but he awaited General McLaws' brigade. Longstreet's failure to obey orders was in a great degree responsible for the Confederates' loss of the battle.

At 4 p. m., under fire of heavy cannonading Longstreet, with the divisions of Hood and McLaws, attacked General Sickles. This general of his own accord had moved three-fourths of a mile in advance of Little Round Top. Humphrey was stationed along the Emmetsburg road with Birney's division which stretched as far as the Peach Orchard.

In their effort to seize Little Round Top the Confederates were pressing back Sickles, who had been badly wounded. General Meade now sent General Warren to the aid of Sickles, who after a desperate struggle occupied Round Top and held it.

Warren had not sent Vincent's brigade too soon to Little Round Top; for this regiment had scarcely taken position behind the huge boulders when Hood's Texans reached the divide between the Round Tops, making assault after assault in an effort to dislodge the Federals. The slaughter was fearful. Vincent, Weed and Hazlitt, Federal generals, were killed, while General Hood was borne severely wounded from the field. The Pennsylvania reserve, under General Crawford, now came to the relief of Vincent's brigade, forcing the Confederates to give up the contest at this point. Little Round Top was rescued.

At the same time the terrific struggle was going on over the Little Round Top, part of Hood's division assisted by McLaws and part of Anderson's division, of Hill's corps, were engaged in a deadly struggle with Birney for occupation of the Peach Orchard. The Federals were driven back, their lines were broken, and the Confederates came into possession of the Peach Orchard. The command under Caldwell, sent by Hancock to Birney's aid, stemmed the tide of Confederate victory for only a short time, but was soon broken. Crawford now contended stubbornly with Barksdale and Wofford for the stone wall. The Confederates moved back beyond the fields to the woods where they rested during the night. The position of Sickles was abandoned. Longstreet's divisions had done valiant service.

Humphrey, in command of the extreme right of Sickles' corps, was separated from Hancock's corps by half a mile, and while the severe fighting was going on at Little Round Top and in the Peach Orchard he remained unassailed. A little before six o'clock, as he was making some changes in position, General Hill ordered the divisions of Wright, Perry, and Wilcox to attack Humphrey's, which was done with such great zeal that Humphrey was driven from his position, losing several guns, and had it not been for timely assistance would have allowed the Confederates to make lodgment on

Cemetery Ridge. Wilcox and Wright, who commanded the most advanced of the Confederate divisions, did not receive proper support and were driven from their position, with considerable loss. This closed the fight on the left and center.

Lee had ordered Ewell to begin his attack on the Federal right as soon as he heard Longstreet's guns; but the attack was delayed until nearly six p. m. The Federal forces now occupying Cemetery Ridge and Culp's Hill were the same that Ewell and Hill had defeated the day before. A ravine separated Cemetery Ridge and Culp's Hill, and to the north of the latter was Benner's Hill, upon which Ewell had placed his guns, which opened the fire.

Early's divisions now advanced against Cemetery Hill, with only two brigades,—one of North Carolina and the Louisiana Tigers, under Ways and Hoke. Through a most terrible hail of shrapnel and musketry-fire they cleared the stone wall that protected Howard's men.

Hancock again came to the rescue, by sending Carroll's brigade, which, coming up when Howard's command was broken and confused, succeeded in forcing the Confederates to fall back, with great loss. Rodes' command, on Early's right, did not have an opportunity to give effectual aid at the time that Early made his bold attempt against Cemetery Hill. Johnson's division, known as the "Stonewall Brigade," advanced across Rock Creek to the attack on Culp's Hill. A line of breastworks recently occupied by the First Corps was captured and held by Johnson, who directed his assault against Green's Brigade to his left; assisted now by Wardsworth. Meade's headquarters were endangered, and the Federal reserve artillery was almost in the hands of the Confederates when night stopped the battle.

The Confederates had the advantage in the day's fight, and gained ground; but they had failed to get possession of Little Round Top. The losses on both sides had been enormous; but the Federals could better spare the men they lost,

having had 25,000 more men engaged in the day's attack. General Lee still felt that he could dislodge the Federals the following day, and take them in their rear, with the assistance of Pickett and his magnificent division which had not participated in the day's fight.

General Meade's council of war determined to fight it out on the lines they held and to wait for Lee to attack.

July 3, 1863.— During the night Johnson was reinforced by one brigade of Early's and two brigades of Rodes. The Federals' right was strengthened by Geary's and Williams' divisions.

At 4 a. m., July 3, the Federals under Geary began the fight and soon the battle became general. The Confederates held their position, and made repeated efforts to break the Federal lines and reach the Baltimore Road. The sun arose, the heat soon became intense, and the dust stifling; but as yet the contestants were battling alone on the Federals' right. About 10 a. m. a final grand charge was made by Ewell's and Johnson's forces, but they were unable to reach the crest of the strongly fortified hill and withdrew exhausted toward Rock Creek. Thus practically the fight on the Federals' right ended before the attack on the center or left had begun.

From the end of Johnson's last charge there was a calm over the whole battle-field. The midday heat of the July sun was depressing in its intensity. The few clouds that were scattered over the heavens in the early morning had vanished. One hundred and sixty thousand men and all nature waited calmly for the most dramatic, spectacular and tragic climax that took place during the great war between the States.

According to the report of A. P. Hill and of three of Lee's staff officers,—Venable, Long and Taylor,—the assaults on the Federals' left and center, were to be made by Longstreet's whole corps supported by half of Hill's Corps or all,

if needed. Subsequent events proved that a fearful blunder had been made, and the most daring and useless sacrifice of human life was the result.

Lee had removed 150 guns from opposite Gettysburg and massed them in the Peach Orchard, to bombard the Federal center. At 1 p. m., immediately after a signal had been given, the most terrific cannonading of the war began. Hunt, the Federal chief of artillery, responded with 80 guns, although Meade had over 300 guns,—108 in reserve, 50 with the cavalry and the rest with the infantry, but all of these were not concentrated against Lee. This awful display continued for nearly two hours. The Federal soldiers were ordered to lie down on the ground to protect themselves as much as possible. The Second Corps of Meade's army suffered most, the commanding general's headquarters were abandoned, and there was considerable loss of life and materials of war. Near 3 p. m. the Federal guns ceased, because Hunt's supply of ammunition had to be brought from the rear. Lee understood this to mean that the guns on Cemetery Ridge had been rendered ineffective.

Pickett's Charge.—Hood's and McLaws' divisions were to cover Longstreet's right flank. Meade had sent Kilpatrick's cavalry to his extreme left, which was splendid foresight, for it kept out of the fight these two fine divisions of Longstreet's corps. The Confederate column, which made this immortal charge, consisted of Pickett's three brigades of 5000 men arranged in two lines of battle, with Kemper on the right, Garnett on the left, and Armistead in the rear. Six brigades of Hill's corps, which in the two days' fight had been cut down to scarcely 7000 men were commanded by General Pettigrew, a nephew of the Confederacy's President. This was the old division of General Heth, who had been wounded on July 1. They were placed on Pickett's left. Twenty-five hundred men of Pender's division were placed under Trimble in the second line. Wilcox's brigade,

of Anderson's division, and Hill's corps with twelve hundred Alabamians, protected the right flank of Pickett's division. The whole assaulting force amounted to 15,700. Lee fully expected that half of his army would come to their assistance, but he was doomed to a heart breaking disappointment.

General Pickett at the head of this force led the heroic charge to break the center of the Federal lines on Cemetery Hill. The Confederate guns were silent; and as the Confederates advanced across the valley, the Federal artillery renewed its fire with deadly effect. Thousands of rifles were discharging their contents into the advancing lines. Shells, shrapnel, and canister decimated the ranks at every step. Every foot of the way was strewn with the dead. There was no halting, there was no turning back, the officers who were leading and the privates in the ranks were emboldened with something more than momentary enthusiasm to bear them forward in the midst of this terrible fire.

Over the first line of Federal breastworks the heroic Pickett dashes, followed by the remnant of his fearless command. His brigade commanders are no longer with him, Garnett is killed, Kemper has been shot down, and Armistead has received a fatal wound. The Confederate battle-flag is planted on the Federals' breastworks, the conflict is fierce, stubborn and hand to hand. The odds against Pickett are too great. Where are the strong arms that he supposed would now support him, since his men have done all it was possible for men to do? Gibbons' line has been broken, but Hancock concentrates his divisions under Hall, Harrow, with part of Doubleday's; the numbers are too great! Pickett yields, part of his men surrender and the rest under the murderous fire retrace their steps across the valley over which they had so recently come, with two-thirds of their comrades left upon the battle-field.

Pettigrew's command on the left contained a number of raw soldiers. As they came within range of the concen-

trated fire of Hays' and Woodruff's batteries on the ridge, their loss was so great that they became disorganized. General Pettigrew, although wounded, tried to rally them, but did not succeed until several hundred had surrendered.

Wilcox's brigade of Alabamians were not ordered to advance until Pickett's division had gone four hundred yards. They were subjected to a most destructive fire in their flanks from the Federals' left. Wilcox reported that he could not see Pickett's command, and that upon his flank being threatened he ordered a retreat after losing 204 killed and wounded from his rank of 1200 men.

Pickett's charge ended the great struggle at Gettysburg. Imboden relates an affecting interview with General Lee the night following the great battle. About 1 a. m., July 4, he joined Lee who had directed him to wait at his headquarters for him. He writes:

"A full moon was shining in the clear sky. On the general's approach upon his horse, his features were distinctly outlined, which revealed a deeper expression of sadness than he had ever before seen in the other vicissitudes of war. His whole attitude suggested great weariness. In sympathy the officers, alluding to his fatigue remarked: 'General, this has been a hard day for you.' He looked up and replied mournfully, 'Yes, it has been a sad, sad day to us, but we cannot expect always to win victories.' A little later he complimented the courageous charge of Pickett's division, saying that had they been properly supported they would have held the position they so gloriously won. A moment later he uttered in his agony 'Too bad, too bad, too bad!' and soon exclaimed, 'We must go back to Virginia.' "

Results: The Confederates had 62,000 men engaged in this battle for the cavalry under J. E. B. Stuart had not been actively fighting during the battle of Gettysburg. The

Federals had an army of 105,000 men, but the Sixth Corps of 16,000 men were held as a reserve; which made 89,000 actively engaged in the fight.

The Confederates lost in killed 2592; wounded, 12,709, and missing 5150. General Meade reported that he captured 13,621 prisoners; but the greater part of these were among the wounded. He also captured 2 guns and 24,978 small arms.

The Federals lost in killed 3072, wounded 14,477, and prisoners, 5434. The combined loss of Lee's and Meade's armies in killed and wounded was about 32,000 men or 20 per cent. There was also a very heavy loss of general officers in both armies. Neither army was inclined to show the aggressive spirit; both of the contending forces being so exhausted that no military movement was made on the 4th. At midday, July 4, a heavy fall of rain began and continued until late at night.

By noon of July 5, which was Sunday, Ewell's corps, which brought up the rear of Lee's army in its retreat, left its position at Gettysburg. By midnight of the 5th of July Lee's army was well on its way to Williamsport on the Potomac, situated twenty miles above Harper's Ferry. Lee found the Potomac so swollen that he was forced to wait until July 12 before attempting a crossing. He drew his army up in line of battle, with his right wing resting on the Potomac and the left at Hagerstown. He was undisturbed except by the cavalry of Pleasanton, Buford, and Kilpatrick on the 6th at Hagerstown, and again in the crossing (July 13) when General Pettigrew was killed with 125 soldiers, and when 1500 prisoners were taken.

By night, July 14, Lee's whole army had crossed to the southern bank of the Potomac. Lee had effected a splendid retreat, while Meade had hesitated in his maneuvering. The Northern people had expected the Federal general to follow up his victory. Meade was so severely criticised that he

asked to be relieved from the command, but President Lincoln declined to do so.

Lee now retreated up the Shenandoah and rested; he, however, continued to recruit and resupply his army south of the Rapidan during August.

Meade moved his army south of the Potomac and soon concentrated his forces at Warrenton Junction; and by September 13 occupied the country between the Rapidan and Rappahannock with his headquarters at Culpeper Court House. Meade had in the meantime sent part of his troops to New York and other Northern cities to quiet riots excited by the conscription laws. Lee took advantage of this to send Longstreet's corps to Bragg's aid in northern Georgia. Both armies, exhausted by the Gettysburg Campaign, had earned a well-merited rest.

Gettysburg and Vicksburg were twin victories for the Federals; and from this period, in spite of all the sacrifices of the South, the fortunes of the Confederacy declined until its last hope of establishing a separate republic was shattered by Lee's surrender at Appomattox.

CHAPTER XXVI

THE SUMMER EXPEDITION AGAINST CHARLESTON, 1863

After Dupont's failure in the first attempt against Charleston Beauregard had been compelled to reduce the size of his garrison by sending a large number of his men to Mississippi and to Virginia to reinforce Lee. This reduced the garrison to 6000 men. In June Gen. D. A. Gilmore, under cover of night, began to gather supplies at Folly Island, which is separated from Morris Island, by Light House Inlet. He hoped to capture Fort Wagner,—a strong Confederate fortress that commanded the south entrance of Charleston harbor, being situated at the northern point of Morris Island.

Gilmore had at his disposal a force of 18,000 men, 66 guns and 30 mortars. Dahlgren had the frigate *Ironsides* and a half-dozen monitors. By the beginning of July the batteries were completed at the northern end of Folly Island. They consisted of 48 large guns, with 200 rounds of ammunition.

Preparatory to an attack on Morris Island Gen. A. H. Terry, with 6000 men had been sent to make a diversion on James Island, situated between Charleston and Morris Island; and from this position he prevented Beauregard from aiding Morris Island. On the night of the 9th of July 2000 men, under General Strong were sent by Tyler to Light House Inlet. On the morning of July 10 the Federal batteries, in conjunction with General Strong, assaulted the Confederate works at the southern end of Morris Island and captured 11 guns; but the Confederates fled to Fort Wagner.

An attack was made against Fort Wagner early in the morning of July 11 by the Federals; but they were repulsed. Another assault was made July 18, about noon. Gilmore, from his batteries, and Dahlgren, from his monitor, began a bombardment of the Fort.

It was late in the evening before the Federal forces moved to the attack. They were led by General Tyler, who had withdrawn from James Island with General Strong and Colonel Shaw, who led a regiment of negro troops. They moved bravely to the attack, but when about 600 feet from the Confederate works, they were met by a most destructive musketry fire. Colonel Shaw was killed, and General Strong was fatally wounded. The regiments continued to advance with desperation, to the second parapet, but were so fearfully punished that the shattered remnants were forced to fall back and seek safety in the darkness that now covered them. The Federal loss had been nearly 1550 men, and the Confederates' about 100 men.

Gilmore now began a regular siege of Fort Wagner,—a siege that continued until August 10 by which time Gilmore had lost 1800 men, and the Confederates 400.

From August 17 to August 24 Gilmore, with his batteries of 28 guns and 12 mortars, aided by Dahlgren, kept up an almost continuous bombardment on Fort Sumter, which was reduced to ruin but had not surrendered.

Gilmore now advanced his guns under cover closer to Fort Wagner, but was greatly annoyed by the Confederate sharpshooters. On September 5 the land batteries in conjunction with the new *Ironsides* began a fearful bombardment against Fort Wagner,—a bombardment that lasted forty-two hours. After a few hours the garrison had quietly withdrawn and escaped to Charleston. The assault was ordered to be made on the morning of September 7, when the Federals found that the two forts,—Gregg and Wagner, in which were left 25 guns,—had been vacated.

Repulse of Federals at Fort Sumter.— On the night of September 8 Dahlgren had sent a force to take possession of the supposedly vacated Fort Sumter; but as the Federals under Commander Stephens were advancing from the landing they were fired upon by the infantry in the fort. The Federals hastened back to their boats, losing 200 men,—killed, wounded and captured,—besides several boats and flags.

The Federals now mounted guns at Fort Wagner and continued to bombard Fort Sumter; but Charleston had not been captured although the blockade was more complete. Charleston was not taken by the Federals until Gilmor occupied it while Sherman was on his march from Savannah to Columbia, S. C.

CHAPTER XXVII

CHICKAMAUGA AND CHATTANOOGA CAMPAIGN

After the battle of Stone River,— which as we have seen, closed the military operations of the year 1862 in middle Tennessee,— General Bragg had taken up a strong position north of Duck River. His infantry extended from Shelbyville to Wartrace, but his cavalry was posted on his right as far as McMinnville and on his left as far as Columbia. During the early months of 1863 Rosecrans and Bragg occupied their time in reorganizing and resupplying their forces. Neither army made any serious effort to bring about a general engagement until June. Bragg's bases of supplies were Tullahoma and Chattanooga, Rosecrans' were Nashville and Louisville. Although it was a long time before the two armies were prepared to move, there were several severe skirmishes and some important raids by the cavalry of both armies.

Wheeler and Forrest Sent Against Fort Donelson.

— In the early part of February, in order to interrupt the passage of supplies up the Cumberland River to Nashville, Wheeler and Forrest were sent to make an assault on Dover if they deemed it wise. On February 3, at 12:30 p. m., with 1000 men, they appeared before Dover, where Col. A. C. Harding with 800 men, was well intrenched with a battery and one 32-pound siege-gun. Against Forrest's wishes, an attack was ordered by Wheeler; but the Confederates were severely repulsed, losing 17 men killed, 60 wounded, 8 missing, and 200 prisoners. The Federals lost 13 killed, 51 wounded, and 46 prisoners. On February 4 the Confederates moved towards Columbia.

Van Dorn's Operations.— On the morning of March 5, while Gen. John Colburn, a Federal officer, was moving from Franklin he came into a severe encounter at Thompson Station with Van Dorn and Forrest, who were in command of nearly 6000 men. After a stubborn resistance, Colburn, who had 2450 infantry and 600 cavalry, was compelled to seek safety in flight. The Federals lost 88 killed, 206 wounded, and 1300 captured: a total of 1500. The Confederates lost 357 men.

On April 10 Van Dorn attacked General Granger on the northern side of Harpeth River near Franklin. The Federals were well fortified and, for a while had the advantage of the fight, having captured several hundred Confederates. Van Dorn recovered and withdrew toward Spring Hill having lost nearly 300 men, killed, wounded, and prisoners. General Granger's losses were much less.

Col. A. D. Streight's Raid.— Colonel Streight, with one Indiana regiment and one Illinois regiment, in addition to parts of two Ohio regiments, embarked from Nashville April 11 for Dover, with the purpose of marching across to Fort Henry, and thence going up the Tennessee River to Eastport, Miss. He reached this place April 19. The purpose of this independent command was to join General Dodge on the Memphis and Charleston Railroad and to continue with him as far as Tuscumbia; then leaving him, to march to Moulton, Ala. From this place Streight was to proceed to Rome, Ga., destroying railroad stores, supplies, manufactories,— in fact, everything that could be of any benefit to the support of an army. The object of this raid was to destroy Bragg's supplies.

Forrest's Pursuit of Streight.— April 23 Gen. N. B. Forrest, stationed at Spring Hill, received a message from Bragg to make a forced march with his old brigade to Decatur, Ala., and there unite with Colonel Roddey. On April 26 Forrest crossed the Tennessee River at Brown's Ferry, near Courtland, Ala. Streight had left Tuscumbia on April

26 for Mount Hope. His troops were well mounted on mules.

At 1 a. m., April 29, Streight left Moulton; and the same morning Forrest, with 1500 men, was at Courtland, ten miles away. After looking carefully into the details of food and to the welfare of the horses Forrest started on the tireless, persistent and successful pursuit of Streight. The Federal general becoming aware of Forrest's purpose, pushed forward rapidly to Sand Mountain, which he reached at midnight on the 29th. Forrest was then within four miles of the Federals' command.

On April 30 at Drivers Gap, in Sand Mountain, Streight attacked the Confederates, capturing two guns, and gained two hours by his success. A desperate and continuous running race now began and continued for four days. Nine miles from Day's Gap on Hog Mountain Forrest overtook Streight and recaptured the two guns. This combat continued until 10 p. m. of the 30th. Streight was allowed to have no rest but was forced to push forward to Blountsville, which he reached at 10 a. m., May 1. Forrest's men had ridden 48 hours and fought nearly 18 hours. Late in the evening of May 1 Streight crossed Black Warrior River, and at 9 a. m., May 2, passed over Black Creek Bridge which was supposed to be the only means of crossing the deep, sluggish stream.

A lost ford was revealed to Forrest by a girl named Emma Sanson, who lived near the place. In the face of danger she offered her services and hastened Forrest's movements fully 3 hours. By noon Forrest reached Blount's Plantation, 12 miles west of Gadsden, where Col. Gilbert Hathaway fell. At this time Forrest's force had been reduced about half by exhaustion and wounds.

Streight's men were nearly exhausted when, at sunrise May 3, they reached Cedar Bluff, 28 miles east of Gadsden. At noon his troops came to Lawrence, a village about 15 miles from Rome, Ga. When almost in sight of the church spires

of the city that they were so eager to destroy, Forrest came upon them and by the unique disposition of his troops, caused the Federals to think that the Confederate force was much superior. Forrest now peremptorily demanded the Federals' surrender; whereupon General Streight surrendered his force of 1600 men, rifles and animals.

There was never in the war another instance in which a great game of bluff, aided by daring courage, brought such marked success to so small a body of men.

General Morgan's Famous Raid.—In the beginning of Rosecrans' movement Bragg had sent (July 2) Gen. John Morgan with a splendid body of cavalymen (2028) across the Cumberland River above Nashville for the purpose of interrupting the Federal general's supplies and delaying his movement. At Burkesville, Ky., Morgan crossed the Cumberland River and moved to Columbia, Ky., where he defeated a small body of cavalry under General Curtis, who was killed. At Green River a number of Morgan's men were killed in a skirmish with Colonel Moore's command.

Morgan now advanced toward Lebanon and captured a regiment of 600 men, with large supplies, and pushing rapidly through Bardstown the daring raider reached Brandenburg, on the Ohio River forty miles below Louisville on July 7. General Bragg had given Morgan orders not to cross the Ohio River, but he now counted on the aid of the peace men and Southern sympathizers along the southern border of Indiana and Ohio, and also on the success of Lee, of whose defeat at Gettysburg he had not heard.

On July 8 Morgan captured two steamboats and crossed the Ohio. General Hobson, on July 9, with a strong body of cavalry, reached the place and crossed into Indiana in pursuit of Morgan. A large part of General Judah's command was sent up the Ohio River on transports to intercept the Confederates, should they attempt to cross the river; while the militia of Indiana and Ohio were concentrating to de-

stroy him. When Morgan came into Indiana he heard of Lee's defeat and seeing at once his own desperate situation, he decided to go up the river to a point where he could ford. On July 9 at Corydon, he dispersed and captured a body of militia numbering nearly 4000 men; then passing through Salem and Lexington he destroyed the railroad bridges to Vernon, which he reached July 12. While part of his forces skirmished with General Lowe's militia at this point, his main force moved onward to Harrison. At Versailles 500 of the militia were captured.

July 13 Morgan had reached the boundary line of Ohio and Indiana, when Hobson's command was forty miles in his rear. After making a pretense of moving against Hamilton, Ohio, he crossed the Miami about 12 miles north of Cincinnati. This action caused Burnside to draw his forces into Cincinnati and allowed Morgan to pass to the eastward of the city. Morgan now headed for Buffington Ford, just above the mouth of the Kanawha River, 150 miles above Cincinnati, and just below Parkersburg. He reached the ford July 18 and found the river swollen and gunboats barring his passage. He was forced to give his command rest; and this delay allowed General Shackelford, of General Hobson's cavalry, to reach his rear on the 19th. On this day, after a running fight, Morgan's command reached a ford above Pomeroy, Ohio. In an attempt to cross here three companies and 200 sick and wounded were captured. The main command hastened 14 miles up the river and 330 of them after a fearful struggle in face of a musketry fire, crossed safely into West Virginia at Belleville. Morgan, however, and a considerable part of the command failed to cross, though he tried to do so at Blennerhassett's Ford; but the Federal gunboats prevented him. Near New Lisbon, at a point almost opposite the place where the Pennsylvania line is crossed by the river, Morgan and a few trusty followers were captured on July 26; and he and 28 of his officers were taken to Columbus, Ohio, where they were con-

fined in the penitentiary in convicts' cells. Here they were subjected to the harsh treatment accorded the worst criminals; but on the night of November 27 General Morgan and six of his officers escaped and made their way into Kentucky, and after a most wonderful series of adventures arrived in a short time within the Confederate lines in Tennessee.

Results: Morgan had delayed Burnside's and Rosecrans' movements, thus giving Longstreet time to reach Bragg's army before the great battle of Chickamauga; and, if Lee had been successful in Pennsylvania, the result would have been more far-reaching. Although all but 350 of Morgan's command were captured, killed or dispersed, he had taken 6000 prisoners, destroyed \$10,000,000 worth of railroad property, Federal equipments, supplies, bridges, and steamboats. There were killed by his men 300 to 500 of the Federal soldiers.

Rosecrans' Maneuver.—Rosecrans, by a series of movements between June 23 and July 6 had forced Bragg to evacuate his strong position along the Duck River and to fall back toward Chattanooga. In these maneuvers Bragg had lost 2000 men and considerable supplies. His army, however, was only 40,000 strong, while Rosecrans' numbered 60,000. It was then that Bragg, to gain time, sent Morgan on his raid.

On September 2, 1863, Burnside, after a rapid march from Lexington, Ky., with 20,000 men approached Knoxville, Tenn., which he occupied on the 3d. This place had been occupied by General Buckner and General Jones with 15,000 men; but they had retreated before Burnside's arrival. Buckner with part of the forces, moved to London, 30 miles southwest of Knoxville. General Jones retreated to Abingdon, Va., while General Frazier was left with 2000 men and 14 guns at Cumberland Gap. At midday September 9 he was compelled to surrender to a large body of Burnside's men.

Rosecrans by certain movements caused Bragg to think that

he was endeavoring to join Burnside's army from the northeast; but instead of this, the Federal general made a move southward, arriving on August 20 at the Tennessee River. Here he and his whole army crossed safely on September 8 and occupied the mountain ranges southwest of Chattanooga. This movement forced Bragg to evacuate the town on the 8th and take a position from Lee and Gordon's Mill to Lafayette, thirty miles south, and east of Lookout Mountain. On the 9th Crittenden discovered that Bragg had retreated from Chattanooga, which place his corps immediately occupied.

So far Rosecrans' plans had worked admirably. He did not realize that all of his well-matured efforts were to become naught and that his army was soon to meet a crushing defeat. If his opponents had been commanded by the genius of a Napoleon, a Lee, or a Jackson, it would have been a veritable Waterloo for the fine army he had in charge.

Rosecrans, learning of Bragg's retreat, interpreted it to mean that it was the Confederates' intention to move either to Rome or upon Atlanta. He sent McCook with the right wing to Summerville; Thomas, with the center to Lafayette; while Crittenden was to leave one brigade at Chattanooga and move the rest of his corps as far as Ringgold on the Chattanooga and Atlanta Railroad by September 12. The Federal army had, by September 12, extended itself over a very rugged country, a distance of 57 miles from one flank to the other. Bragg had tried to take advantage of this situation but General Hindman and Gen. D. H. Hill failed to give proper support for the proposed move against the Federal center at McLemore's Cove. This delay and lack of unity on the part of the Confederates allowed Rosecrans to see his mistake and concentrate his army on the west bank of the Chickamauga River, a movement that was completed by September 18. This stream rises at the junction of Missionary Ridge and Pigeon Mountain, flows

by Crayfish Spring northward, is joined by the East fork near Chickamauga, and a little above Chattanooga flows into the Tennessee River. Chickamauga is an Indian name and is supposed to signify "The River of Death," which name it could appropriately retain after September 18, 1863.

Both armies were now receiving reinforcements. Granger's fine division, which was to play such an important part in the coming battle, had joined Rosecrans. Bragg was reinforced by Buckner's remnant from Knoxville and part of Johnston's army from Mississippi; while Longstreet was hurrying to him from the East, arriving on the afternoon of the 19th with 5000 infantry but no artillery. Bragg sent Wheeler to the Federals' right to disguise a movement against the Federals' left. On the 18th Bragg moved his army across the Chickamauga River and almost cut off Crittenden's left wing from Chattanooga; but on the night of September 18 Thomas' center was brought up to join Crittenden's left, and McCook occupied the position formerly held by Thomas. Negley's command was on Crittenden's right, while Granger was held in reserve. Bragg's right wing was commanded by Polk and his left by Hood, the cavalry being under Forrest.

The Battle of Chickamauga, Sept. 19-20, 1863.—The morning of September 19 was bright, beautiful and crisp. The battle began at 9 a. m., by Thomas with Brannan's division attacking Forrest's cavalry and Walker's two infantry brigades. The Federals were repulsed and two batteries captured. Baird now reinforced Brannan, who alternately repulsed the Confederates and fell back before them. Cheatham's Tennesseans now came into action, while Reynolds' division of Thomas' corps, Palmer of Crittenden's, and Johnson of McCook's, came to the Federals' assistance. The battle surged back and forth, each side being in turn successful, while the wounded and the dead covered the battle-field.

There was a lull in the fearful storm of battle at 4 p. m.,—a lull that continued for an hour. The Federals were re-

[illegible]

Facing Page 190

forming their lines, when at about 5 p. m., the divisions of Liddle and Gist attacked with great impetuosity Reynolds' divisions, while a little later Cleburne's division fell upon Johnson. The Federals were driven back in great confusion for nearly half a mile after a destructive fire at close range had caused great loss in Cleburne's command. The fighting on the Federal right had been for the greater part artillery skirmishes, but about 3 p. m. General Hood made a severe attack upon Davis of McCook's corps, capturing a battery, which was recaptured by Bradley's brigade of Sheridan's division. When darkness caused a cessation in the battle neither army had gained any marked advantage.

Sunday, September 20, 1863. Second Day's Battle.—During the night Longstreet with his whole command arrived and took his position on the Confederates' left wing, with Longstreet in command instead of Hood. The left consisted of Buckner's corps,—commanded by Stewart, Preston, and Johnston,—Hindman's division of Polk's corps, Hood's division, and McLaws' division. The right wing, commanded by General Polk, consisted of Hill's two divisions from right to left commanded by Breckinridge, Cleburne, and Cheatham; while Walker's was held in reserve. At the midnight conference Bragg had given orders to Polk to attack the Federal left at daybreak.

General Rosecrans at the night council of his generals had ordered Negley's division, which had been on the extreme right, to move during the night to Thomas' support on the left. Palmer's division, of Crittenden's corps, and Johnson's, of McCook's corps, had also reinforced Thomas. This left only the two divisions under Crittenden in the center, and two under McCook on the right. Such was the disposition of both armies in the early morning of September 20.

It was Sunday morning,—a day set apart by God for peace and rest to the human race. Yet how misused was that sacred day during these awful years of civil strife. Many of the

bloodiest battles occurred on this holy day. A heavy mist hovered over the valley where the two armies lay. There was a stillness in the atmosphere as if presaging the terrible tragedy to be enacted that day by the "River of Death."

At daybreak Bragg was astride his horse, expecting very soon to hear the guns' heavy thunder on the right. But hour after hour passed, and no sound of cannons reached his ear. "What unforeseen events have occurred that may wreck all my well matured plans, why do not my brave men make this charge before the Federals are prepared for the dreadful conflict?" was the question he asked. The answer is still one of the unsolved riddles of the great war; perhaps more than man's hand and brains were directing the course of the nation.

A staff officer of Bragg's, who found General Polk and his officers seated at breakfast, was told by Polk: "I have ordered Hill to open the action." The General also expressed his anxiety concerning the attack because Hill was not within striking distance at the time, and a division of Confederates were formed in front of Polk's line, exposing them to a fire from their comrades. There is no doubt but that the delay greatly aided Rosecrans by giving him time to prepare breastworks.

Between 9 and 10 a. m. Breckinridge's men and Cleburne's, with the greatest determination, assailed the Federals behind their breastworks, in the face of a terrible fire of artillery and musketry. Thomas was so badly punished by noon that he had to have aid or his troops would have been utterly routed. Cheatham and Walker were now coming into action. Rosecrans further weakened his right wing by ordering Van Cleve of Crittenden's corps and Sheridan of McCook's to reinforce Thomas. Wood's division of Crittenden's corps, was ordered to move toward Reynolds' right, while Brannan's division was slightly in the rear of Reynolds' right. General Wood, misunderstanding the order, moved to Brannan's rear in order to reach the place described. This left

an opening for Longstreet, who now sent Hood's division into the gap, cutting the Federal army into two parts. McCook's right wing was utterly routed and driven in great panic toward Chattanooga through McFarland Gap.

The Federals were now being attacked in flank and rear by Longstreet, Stewart, Preston and Buckner. Crittenden, Davis, Sheridan, and even Rosecrans were driven along in the retreating, struggling mass. At Rossville Rosecrans sent General Garfield back to Thomas, ordering him to assume full command on the battle-field, while he hastened to Chattanooga to prepare a place of safety for his army.

It was late in the afternoon before Thomas heard of the extreme disaster to the Federal right wing. He now withdrew from his breastworks and concentrated his army in the form of a crescent on a spur of Missionary Ridge. Wood's division came up just in time to join Brannan on the left. About 3:00 p. m. Longstreet's troops had almost flanked the right of Thomas' command by using an opening through the hills when, at a most opportune time for the salvation of the Federal army, Gen. Gordon Granger with General Steadman's division, which had been held in reserve, came to the rescue and repulsed the Confederates by means of a well-placed battery. When Garfield arrived to deliver Rosecrans' communication he found that Thomas had moved about 25,000 men, with a splendid battery of artillery to Horse Shoe Ridge. The stubborn fight here and the great loss of life among the Confederates prolonged the battle until sunset and saved the Federal army from complete annihilation. Thomas well deserved the title of the "Rock of Chickamauga."

Longstreet had saved the day for the Confederates by his skillful generalship and by the dash and courage of his veterans, but Polk had well followed it up and deserves credit for the timely combination that he formed with Longstreet, actually driving from the field all the Federals, with the exception of Thomas, who as soon as night came retreated rap-

idly toward Rossville, leaving his dead and wounded on the field. Night prevented the Confederates' immediate pursuit.

Results: The Confederates had 56,846 men engaged in the battle, and lost in killed 2312, wounded 14,674, and missing 1468; which made a total of 18,454 or about one-third of the army. They had lost very few prisoners and scarcely any military supplies.

The Federals had 58,223 men actively engaged. They were badly defeated and lost 51 guns, 40 stands of regimental colors, 15,000 small arms, and large quantities of military accoutrements. The Federals lost in killed 1660, wounded 10,000, missing and prisoners about 5000; or a total of 16,660.

Chickamauga was a decided Confederate victory, but one that did not net the victors very much material profit.

By the morning of September 21 Rosecrans had gathered his much discomfited army back into Chattanooga and during the day continued to fortify and intrench so strongly that Bragg did not consider it wise to venture an attack with his much depleted army, consisting now of scarcely 35,000 effective troops, against an army numerically larger by several thousand men and protected by strong fortifications.

General Bragg was greatly disappointed at the results and felt that some of his officers were partly responsible for the loss of a great opportunity to win a decisive battle. Polk was deprived of his command and sent to command the Army of Alabama and Mississippi, which position he assumed in December.

Longstreet now suggested to Bragg that they cross the Tennessee River above Chattanooga, cutting Rosecrans' connection with Knoxville, forcing the Federals to evacuate Chattanooga, and intercepting the supplies from their rear. Bragg would not consider this proposition seriously as there was lack of transportation, their communication with the south would be left open to the Federals and they would

have to abandon all the wounded and their captured trophies. Longstreet was a courageous and capable lieutenant, but his temper was high and combative. The differences that arose between him and Bragg were soon to be the cause of a serious blunder on the part of the Confederates.

Bragg's Siege of Chattanooga.—On September 23 Bragg ordered Polk's corps to occupy Missionary Ridge and Longstreet's to command on the left that part of Lookout Mountain next to the Tennessee River. Around the base of this face of the mountain the Nashville and Chattanooga Railroad ran to Bridgeport, over which road the Federals received their supplies from Jasper through the Tennessee and Sequatchie Valley and over Walden's Ridge to Chattanooga,—a circuitous and dangerous route. The supply trains were almost at the mercy of the Confederate cavalry. It was only a short time before Rosecrans' army began to feel the pangs of starvation for the soldiers were practically on half rations.

On September 24 Hooker, with 20,000 men, was sent from the Army of the Potomac, and on October 1 arrived at Bridgeport, thirty miles west of Chattanooga. Longstreet, however, was between him and Chattanooga.

Grant in Command.—General Grant on October 10 was placed in complete command of the Military Division of Mississippi, composed of the Armies of the Ohio, Cumberland, and Tennessee. At his request Thomas was given command of the Army of the Cumberland, and Sherman of the Army of the Tennessee. On October 19 Rosecrans left for Cincinnati, and on October 20 Thomas assumed command, on the same day he received a telegram from Grant to hold Chattanooga at all hazards.

October 2, while at Memphis, General Sherman received orders from Halleck to move over the Memphis and Charleston Railroad to Athens, Ala., and to repair the railroad as he went. The command of Sherman reached Corinth on October 11.

At Tuscumbia, October 27, there was a severe skirmish with Gen. S. D. Lee's cavalry. An order was now received from Grant telling Sherman to move to Bridgeport by the transports provided by Porter, which he did, reaching there November 14.

In the meantime (October 23) General Grant reached Chattanooga. He decided to make an effort to reopen with Hooker's troops the water and railroad connections between Chattanooga and Bridgeport. He found that Raccoon Mountain,—which Longstreet did not hold,—and not Lookout Mountain, commanded the situation.

During the early morning hours of October 27 General Hooker with about 15,000 of his men, crossed the Tennessee River at Bridgeport and marched in the defiles between Lookout Mountain and Raccoon Mountain to Brown's Ferry, at a point on the Tennessee River three miles below where Lookout Mountain borders on the stream. He reached the place on October 28. On the night of October 26 1200 men on pontoons floated down to Brown's Ferry and landed on the south bank of the river, forming a junction with 3000 men under W. F. Smith, who had crossed the neck of land from Chattanooga to Brown's Ferry.

On the night of October 28 Longstreet attacked Hooker's flank with a force of only six regiments, and was repulsed by the large number of the Federals, who had now reëstablished their communication with Bridgeport.

The Confederates' Blunder in the Knoxville Campaign.—General Bragg had foreseen that Burnside would make an effort to join Grant at Chattanooga and upon the advice of the Richmond authorities he sent Longstreet (November 4), with 11,000 men, to intercept the Federals. Bragg planned to have his men back before Grant was ready for battle. The expedition was looked upon with favor by President Davis, but it weakened the Confederate cause very markedly and allowed Sherman to join Grant on November

14, forming a powerful force that was to be effectively used against Bragg's diminishing army.

Longstreet now moved to Tynes' Station and transported his army on cars to Sweetwater Station, fifteen miles southwest of London. Burnside had carefully withdrawn all of his forces to Knoxville and had fortified the town. Longstreet soon found that the place could not be carried by assault and on November 19 began a siege. Two of Buckner's divisions had reinforced him. While investing the town news came of Bragg's defeat; whereupon Longstreet saw the necessity of pushing the siege by assault.

He commanded the assault to be made against Fort Sanders in the early morning of November 29. The Federals had been forewarned and were prepared. McLaws' three brigades made a brave attack, but because of the difficulty of the approaches were repulsed by a most destructive fire from the Federals. They fell back after losing 800 men in the short space of thirty minutes. This attack was north of the river and west of the town.

Longstreet remained in the neighborhood of Knoxville until December 4 in order to draw Sherman from Chattanooga. This he did; and Sherman advanced toward Knoxville. By the evening of December 5 he was within 12 miles of the city. Longstreet now retreated, followed by the combined forces of the Federals. At Beam Station (December 13) Shackelford's cavalry had a severe battle with part of Longstreet's command, each side lost about three hundred men. The Confederates now proceeded to go into winter quarters at Rogersville, where the army suffered many hardships during the winter because of the cold and want of clothes and food. Many were incited to desert by circulars sent among them from Federal sources, and altogether they were rendered ineffectual during the whole winter. After the breaking of winter they joined General Lee in Virginia, near Gordonsville.

Movements at Chattanooga.—Grant's maneuvers and

movements were skillful and successful up to the arrival of Sherman from Bridgeport. While Longstreet's forces were moving against Knoxville Sherman, Grant, and Thomas had come to an agreement that Sherman's army should march, unknown to the Confederates, around Chattanooga and to the north end of Missionary Ridge, in order to flank Bragg's army from the mouth of the South Chickamauga to Chattanooga. This would place the Federals between the armies of Longstreet and Bragg. Grant had also sent Burnside a message to allow himself to be besieged in order to delay Longstreet near Knoxville. By the evening of November 23 Sherman, who had been delayed on account of lack of proper transportation, had reached his position on the extreme left of the Federal line, north of Chattanooga.

On the morning of the 23d, which was a bright and beautiful day, Wood's heavy division of Granger's corps, aided by those of Sheridan and Palmer, made a charge on Orchard Knob,—a steep, rugged hill about half-way from the river to the Confederate main lines on the ridge. Some 200 Confederates were made prisoners.

Battle of Lookout Mountain.—All that night Sherman had been rapidly concentrating his forces on the north end of Missionary Ridge and by the night of November 24 had well intrenched himself.

On the night of November 23 Grant ordered Hooker to make with Osterhaus' division a grand effort to drive the Confederates from Lookout Mountain. In the early morning of November 24 Osterhaus' division of Sherman's army, which had not yet crossed Brown's Ferry, made a strong demonstration against the Confederates at the northern end of Lookout Mountain. A heavy mist enveloped the mountain and under cover of the mist, at 8 a. m., General Geary, with his own division and a brigade of Cruft's division, crossed Lookout Creek at Wauhatchie and moved farther up the stream, coming upon the rear of the Confederates commanded by Pettus.

These made a stubborn resistance, and about 5 p. m. Carlin's brigade, of Palmer's corps, reinforced Geary. Darkness now aided the escape of the Confederates, who had thus far been greatly outnumbered, and had lost 1000 men. They retreated to Rossville.

The Confederates were forced to evacuate Lookout Mountain, and on the morning of November 25 the Federal army held an unbroken line from the north end of Lookout Mountain, through Chattanooga and by Orchard Knob to the northern end of Missionary Ridge. The Confederates were concentrated on Missionary Ridge from Rossville to Tunnel Hill, where a railroad crossed the Ridge, 400 to 600 feet above the valley in many places.

Bragg's army was commanded on the right by Hardee, with the Cleburne, Walker, Cheatham, and Stevenson divisions; the left was under Breckinridge and consisted of his old division,—under Lewis,—Stewart's, and part of Buckner's and Hindman's. This army had 40,000 men and 100 cannons.

The Federal army was commanded, from left to right, by Sherman, Thomas, Howard, and Hooker, and was composed of 80,000 men, with nearly 200 cannons.

Battle of Missionary Ridge.—November 25, 1863, was a beautiful day. The sun had risen with scarcely a cloud to obscure its light. Hooker had received orders to make a movement against the Confederates' left wing, while Sherman was to make his attack on the right, and Thomas' veteran troops, under the immediate eye of Grant, were later to attack the center.

Soon after sunrise Hooker began to advance his army toward Rossville, but was detained four hours at Chattanooga Creek on account of destroyed bridges. Hooker soon occupied Rossville Gap with Osterhaus on the east. Geary, west of the Ridge, and Cruft, on the Ridge, attacked the Confederates under Stewart, who made a stubborn resistance but were driven northward along the Ridge. At sunset the

left wing of the Confederate army was in full retreat.

In the early forenoon of the 25th Sherman made his attack on the Confederates' right. Cleburne's division was the first to receive the assault. Sherman found that the ridge was not continuous but rather a series of hills and between the last hill and the Confederates' position was a deep gorge and a railroad tunnel. General Corse, leading the advance regiments of the Federals, was exposed to a severe rain of fire. The Federals found it impossible to carry the Confederates' position. Sherman's army had gained no particular advantage, and the fighting for four hours had been very sanguinary, especially among the Federals. Sherman had been anxiously expecting an assault upon the Confederate center by the army of Thomas, who had looked for better results from Sherman's army.

A Grand Charge.—About 4 p. m., when Grant became aware that Bragg's right wing was well engaged and that Hooker was coming into action on the Confederate left, he ordered the magnificent charge that decided the battle of the day and caused the Confederates to leave their strong position in confusion and retreat toward Ringgold. At the critical moment when Bragg's center had been weakened Grant ordered eleven brigades of Thomas' army,—under Wood, Baird, Johnson, and Sheridan,—consisting of 25,000 men, to make a grand charge up Missionary Ridge against the Confederate center. It was a most valorous assault for the men had to face the destructive fire of 35 cannons and of thousands of muskets; but without a check, they pushed on. The rugged nature of the ascent prevented them from keeping together, but the unity of action and purpose was never in doubt. The destruction of life was fearful, but undismayed the Federals pushed forward, protecting themselves by the trees, ravines, and ledges. The brigades of Hazen and Willicks were the first to reach the summit, making a breach in the Confederate line. Sheridan's brigades rapidly came

to his assistance, and there was a severe hand to hand conflict. The wedge had been driven into the Confederate line near the headquarters of Bragg, where he had personally tried to rally his men. The Confederates at this point were completely routed, losing some 35 guns and 4000 prisoners.

It was now near sunset. Darkness greatly aided the Confederates in their retreat. General Hardee, by his cool judgment and rapid action, with Cheatham's division, thrown across the Ridge, prevented a great disaster to his command, and was instrumental in protecting the army in its retreat across the Chickamauga River.

Results: The battle of Missionary Ridge was a splendid victory for Grant, but as in most of his victories there was a great sacrifice of men. The Federals had engaged 80,000 men and had killed and wounded 6000. The Confederates lost, besides the 4000 prisoners, 3000 killed and wounded.

Although Grant had numerically twice as great an army as Bragg, this brilliant success cannot be accounted for wholly by the difference in numbers. The Confederate commander had been outgeneraled, and had made two severe blunders. He had sent Longstreet to Knoxville at the most inopportune time, and in the battle of the 25th he had played into Grant's hands by sacrificing his center to the demands of his wings, thus inviting at the critical moment, the attack by Thomas.

Hardee and Cleburne covered the rear until a junction was made with Breckinridge at Ringgold, which on November 26 was occupied by the Federals. A severe action took place near Ringgold between Hooker's advance and Cleburne. The Federals lost 432 men, while the Confederates lost 130 killed and wounded. On November 28 Bragg had succeeded in establishing his army at Dalton, Ga. Grant now ordered Sherman on the 28th to go to Knoxville to Burnside's relief. After bringing 40,000 men to the relief of Burnside, Sherman, by that General's advice, left Granger's division behind, and with his own corps returned to Grant.

After gathering his army at Dalton Bragg felt so keenly the severe criticisms that Southerners made on his defeat that he offered his resignation. This was accepted by the President of the Confederacy. On December 27 Gen. Joseph E. Johnston was appointed to the command of the exhausted Confederate army, and started upon the task of preparing the army during the winter for the great conflict of the coming year, 1864.

CHAPTER XXVIII

IRREGULAR WARFARE IN ARKANSAS, MISSOURI, AND KANSAS IN 1863

After the battle of Prairie Grove the Federal army went into winter quarters in the southern ranges of the Ozark Mountains of Missouri. Quiet prevailed in Arkansas and Missouri, with the exception of some outrages perpetrated by disconnected bands of guerrillas, who had neither the Southern nor the Federal cause at heart; but who were bent only upon rapine, booty, and acts of lawlessness. The story of the suffering of these good people west of the Mississippi River near the frontier for their loyalty to either side is a sad page in history.

Marmaduke in Missouri.—About the 1st of January, 1863, General Marmaduke, with about 3000 Confederates, crossed the boundary of Arkansas and Missouri and in the early afternoon of January 8 attacked Springfield, Mo. Generals Holland and Brown had over a thousand men well located, and though the majority of them were inexperienced in battle, they held their own for five or six hours. With a loss of some 200 men,—killed, wounded, and missing,—Marmaduke retreated toward Huntsville. During the engagement at Springfield the Federals lost 165 men.

On January 11 close to Huntsville Marmaduke had a brief but severe engagement with Colonel Merrill's command. In this engagement the Confederates lost between two and three hundred men, while the Federals lost scarcely one hundred. Part of the Confederate command moved toward Van Buren, near which place about 300 men were captured. Marmaduke led the greater part of his force to Batesville, Ark., on the

White River. Here, on February 4, he had a severe engagement with the Federal cavalry under Col. G. E. Waring, in which the Confederates were defeated and Marmaduke moved to headquarters at Little Rock.

On April 18 Gen. W. L. Cabell, who had marched from the Boston Mountains, attacked a body of Federals under Colonel Harrison at Fayetteville. After Harrison lost 75 men, and Cabell about the same number and several horses, he retreated toward Ozark.

Movement Against Cape Girardeau.—General Marmaduke, by the advice and with the consent of his superior, General Price, about April 22 reached Fredericktown on his way to capture Cape Girardeau on the Mississippi River in southeastern Missouri. This place was a depot of supplies for Grant's army. On the 23d Gen. John McNiel, Federal commander, with 2000 soldiers, reached the town and greatly strengthened it, and when, on the morning of April 25, Marmaduke appeared before the town and demanded its surrender McNiel refused. A conflict then began which lasted from 10 a. m. until about 3 p. m.; but the Confederates retreated upon the arrival of reinforcements to the Federals by the river. The Confederates, without accomplishing anything of importance, lost 300 men.

On May 20 an attack was made on Fort Blunt by General Coffey, but Col. W. A. Philips, with a mixed command of over 1000 men, repulsed the Confederates.

About the middle of July General Cooper was attacked by General Blunt, of the Federal army, with 3000 cavalry and infantry, supported by 12 cannons. The attack was sudden and unexpected, occurring at 10 a. m., July 17, about 25 miles south of Fort Blunt. The Confederates were routed, losing several hundred men. With General Cabell's command they now moved south of the Canadian River. Later General Blunt moved down and occupied Fort Smith, Ark., on the Arkansas River.

On August 20, 1863, occurred one of those fearful tragedies that help to blacken warfare and go to make it all the more terrible and despicable. Quantrell, a notorious guerilla chieftain, with several hundred men, entered Lawrence, Kan., and killed many non-combatant citizens; they looted the town and almost destroyed it by fire. They were pursued, but not as severely punished as they deserved.

Many writers have unjustly stigmatized certain Confederate leaders as guerrillas, Morgan, Forrest, Mosby, Marmaduke, Price, and others, whereas they were simply carrying on warfare as best they could, with the materials at hand. Passions of men in civil strife are always at the highest pitch. If murder, unspeakable crimes, and wanton destruction of the necessities of life for non-combatants are criteria of inhuman warfare, then they were not guilty of inhumanity.

In justice to the united nation and to the descendants of the men who fought under these commanders they are not to be condemned unless the followers of Grierson, Mitchell, Blunt, Kilpatrick, Sherman, and others of the Federal army be weighed in the same balance.

CHAPTER XXIX

TRANSMISSISSIPPI AFTER FALL OF VICKSBURG AND PORT HUDSON

In September, after the fall of Port Hudson, General Grant had visited Banks. The two generals were of the opinion that a joint movement against Mobile would be a wise course to follow; but on further consideration it was decided that Banks should make an effort to reconquer Texas.

Failure at Sabine Pass.— The first attempt to capture Sabine City was made at Sabine Pass. General Franklin, with 4000 troops and four gunboats, had reached the Pass in the forenoon of September 8. The gunboats crossed the bar and appeared before the fort of the town in the afternoon; but within half an hour were so badly damaged that they were forced to surrender. Franklin made a rapid retreat without landing his troops, after losing two of the gunboats, 250 men, and 15 heavy guns.

On the night of September 30, General Green, one of Gen. Dick Taylor's lieutenants, fell upon an outpost of General Herron's near Morgansia and captured the 400 men under Colonel Lake.

The Battle at Grand Coteau.— Banks before starting on his proposed Texas expedition, as a diversion sent Major-General Franklin with 4 divisions of his army to Opelousas, where they remained eight days. On October 27 the first division moved back to New Iberia. On November 1 two divisions of the Thirteenth Corps, under Generals Burbridge and Washburne, halted at Grand Coteau. Washburne assumed command of the rear as the other divisions moved backward. Late in the afternoon of the 3d of November,

the Confederates attacked, with great zeal, the advance division under Burbridge, consisting of 1700 men, who after a desperate resistance were driven in rapid retreat and only saved from complete destruction or capture by the hurried reinforcement of McGinnis's division of 3000 men.

The Federals lost in killed, wounded and missing 716 men, while the Confederates lost 150 men.

In November General Banks, with 6000 men left New Orleans, being afterward reinforced by Washburne with the Thirteenth Corps, and made himself practically master of the seaboard of Texas from Galveston to the Rio Grande River, — with the exception of Galveston Island and some fortification on the Brazos River. General Dana was left in charge of the troops on the Rio Grande while Banks returned to New Orleans. This closed his operations west of the Mississippi until the year 1864.

The Capture of Little Rock, Ark.— After the surrender of Vicksburg Gen. Frederick Steele was sent to Helena, Ark., with orders to organize a command to capture Little Rock, the Confederates' headquarters in Arkansas. By August 10 he had gathered 6000 men and 22 guns; and being joined by General Davidson's mounted division from General Hurlbut's corps, he had a force of 12,000 men and 40 guns. He now started for Little Rock, to which city the Confederates had retreated. After much trouble in crossing rivers and bayous General Steele, on September 10, reached the defenses of the place, which surrendered after some severe fighting. Almost everything that could be of value had been destroyed by the Confederates, but the Federals captured 1000 soldiers.

The close of the year 1863 saw the end of the aggressive military power of the Confederates in Arkansas and Missouri. Although they fought stubbornly at times to recover their lost ground, they were unable to obtain any permanent results.

CHAPTER XXX

THE LAST MILITARY OPERATIONS OF 1863 IN VIRGINIA

General Lee had, as we have seen, soon after the battle of Gettysburg brought his army to rest upon the Rapidan. General Longstreet and General Hood had been sent in September to assist General Bragg at Chickamauga. At the end of September Meade had sent the corps of Howard and Slocum, commanded by Hooker, to aid Rosecrans at Chattanooga. Soon after Lee had heard that Meade's army was weakened by this loss a movement was begun (October 9) to outflank Meade. Lee hoped to get in Meade's rear and seize the Orange and Alexandria Railroad. On October 11 the larger part of the Confederate general's army was at Culpeper Court House, but Meade had withdrawn across the Rappahannock. Lee, on October 12, forced a passage across the Rappahannock at White Sulphur Springs. The Federal cavalry under General Gregg, which guarded Meade's right, had a severe struggle to save itself. Lee and Meade were both striving to gain possession of the Orange and Alexandria Railroad. Lee's army now moved rapidly for Bristoe Station, and on the morning of October 13 it had reached Warrenton. Warren's corps,—the rear of Meade's army,—bivouacked at Auburn, five miles away.

On October 14 Lee's whole army was reunited at Warrenton and at once pushed forward toward Bristoe Station. A sharp skirmish occurred at Broad Run during the afternoon of the 14th between General Warren and the corps of Hill and Heth. Hill was repulsed, losing 400 men killed and wounded, and five guns.

The Federals proceeded during the night of October 14 to Centerville, where on the 15th, Meade concentrated his army. Lee did not deem it wise to push his army beyond Bull Run, so on October 18 and 19 he began his movements to his old line beyond Culpeper Court House.

Results: Lee had lost 1000 men, while the Federals had lost 2436 men, including prisoners, and 41 commissioned officers. The railroad was destroyed from Manassas to Rappahannock Junction, which delayed Meade's advance.

Mine Run.—Thousands of Lee's men were, according to his own reports, barefooted, and practically all were without overcoats, blankets, or warm clothes. The winter was upon them, and Lee was anxious to get his army provided for. This he was able to accomplish, only by the undying devotion of the mothers, wives, daughters, sisters and sweethearts of the Southern soldiers. The labor of love and self sacrifice of these women have never been surpassed for any cause. But Meade now proposed to make an effort to get in closer touch with General Lee's army and on November 7 began his advance toward Kelley's Ford and the Rappahannock Bridge. General Rodes' division and General Johnson's had fallen back, but the brigades of Hayes and Hopes, of Early's division, had passed to the north side of the river to watch the Federals move and to hold them in check. The night was dark and very windy, preventing the Confederates on the south side of the river from hearing the sound of firing. Under cover of the darkness Russell's command, of Sedgwick's corps, made a brilliant assault upon the Confederates' position, and captured about two thousand of the Southern soldiers before General Early could bring them any assistance.

Lee had by November 9 crossed the Rapidan and fortified his position along Mine Run Creek, 15 miles above the confluence of the Rapidan and the Rappahannock.

From November 26 to December 1 General Meade made an effort to turn Lee's right wing. In his maneuvers he ad-

vanced to the right bank of Mine Run; but Lee discovered the movement on the 29th, and placed his army in such a strong position that Meade considered it best to retire; which he did on the night of December 1.

Meade now took up his winter quarters at Culpeper while Lee remained near Orange. This closed the campaign of the year 1863 in Virginia.

The condition of the Confederacy looked more gloomy than at any former time. Though the Confederates had won some brilliant successes, their disastrous defeat at Gettysburg, the loss at Vicksburg, and their defeat at Missionary Ridge had greatly weakened the cause. The long cold winter was made good use of by the Confederacy in preparing for another year of awful warfare. The preparation of the Federal Government was even on a greater scale because of its unlimited resources.

CHAPTER XXXI

THE YEAR 1864

IMPORTANT EVENTS IN THE MISSISSIPPI VALLEY PRIOR TO SHERMAN'S GEORGIA CAMPAIGN

After General Bragg had retreated to Dalton Gen. Joseph E. Johnston on December 27, 1863, was placed in full command of the army. During the winter this master of military strategy made efforts to equip and prepare his army for the great test of strength that was sure to come in the summer.

Sherman's Campaign Against Meridian.—In the early part of January, 1864, General Sherman returned to Memphis, Tenn., where General Hurlbut was located. His purpose was to have about 10,000 men of Hurlbut's join McPherson's forces at Vicksburg, and at the same time to have Gen. Sory Smith, with 10,000 cavalry, make a movement toward Meridian, where they would unite and move on to Selma, Ala. General Smith was to leave Memphis on or before February 1, going by Pontotoc, Okolona, and, if possible, reach Meridian February 15.

With these plans in view, General Sherman left Vicksburg, February 3, with an effective army of 25,000 men, light baggage, and twenty days' rations. The weather was bright, cool, and altogether favorable for the undertaking.

To oppose these forces of 35,000 men, General Polk, who was chief in command at Meridian, had from 10,000 to 15,000 infantry, while Gen. Stephen D. Lee, in command of the cavalry in the south Mississippi district, and Gen. N. B. Forrest, in the northern part of Mississippi and West Tennessee, had together not over 6000 cavalry.

Until February 5 General Sherman had met with no opposition and after some skirmishing he reached Jackson, from which place the Confederates had retreated. On the 9th the army reached Morton, where McPherson remained to destroy the railroad. Hurlbut pushed on in advance toward Meridian, which Sherman reached at 3:30 p. m., February 14. Polk had evacuated the place at 10:30 a. m., and with all the rolling stock, had moved his army to Demopolis and sent the cars to Selma and Mobile.

Sherman remained at Meridian until February 20, but was forced to evacuate it on account of the failure of General Smith's expedition. Sherman had defeated no organized body of the Confederates, but had made a great destruction of property, burning 10,000 bales of cotton, destroying 150 miles of railroad, about 70 bridges, two or three million bushels of corn, hundreds of buildings, and had almost exhausted the resources of the country over which he led his army — thus subjecting thousands of non-combatants to privation, starvation and the fearful tortures of war.

Before Sherman left Meridian almost everything of any value had been destroyed. Depots, hotels, hospitals, warehouses, offices, in fact, nearly every building in the place was burned. Among other towns that received the same treatment were Jackson, Marion, Lauderdale Springs, Quitman, Canton, Decatur, Bolton, Enterprise, Lake Station, and Hillsboro. Such barbarism cannot be apologized for, however much the exigencies of the circumstances may seem to have demanded it. It let loose and encouraged the vilest passions, for which there was no excuse. General Sherman did not add any military laurels to his name through the results of this expedition; but rather won the title of plunderer. On February 28 Sherman left his army and went to New Orleans to confer with Banks and Porter concerning the Red River expedition. It was not until his return to Vicksburg that he became aware of Smith's failure.

Gen. Sory Smith's Failure.—On February 11 General Smith, with General Grierson, second in command,—had left Colliersville, 24 miles east of Memphis with over 7000 cavalymen, a strong artillery force, and a brigade of infantry. By the night of the 11th Smith had crossed the Tallahatchie, passed New Albany at noon, and encamped several miles south of the town. He passed through Pontotoc on the 17th and reached Okolona on the 18th. On the 20th, when ten miles north of West Point, Smith's advance was attacked by part of Gen. N. B. Forrest's command and the whole of Jeffrey's command. The fighting continued until the 21st, when Forrest barred their further advance. On the 22d this intrepid Confederate general had gathered about 2500 men and attacked the flank and rear of the Federal army at Okolona. The Federal army was completely demoralized, most of their artillery was left on the field with their dead and wounded. Forrest harassed and incessantly engaged the retreating army until the afternoon of February 23 when it crossed the Tallahatchie River. The Federal army reached Colliersville February 27, in a most pitiful and disorganized state. They had been defeated by an army not nearly so well equipped as their own and of only one-third the size.

Results: Smith had lost 388 killed, wounded, and missing; six pieces of artillery, and had completely failed in his purpose to support Sherman. His defeat reflected great credit on Forrest and gave the Confederates an opportunity to seriously interfere with the Federal lines of communication in western Tennessee.

Forrest had lost in the three days 27 killed, 97 wounded, and 20 missing.

General Forrest's Raid in Western Tennessee and Kentucky.—On March 20 General Forrest reached Jackson, Tenn., on his third raid through west Tennessee. Here he rested and recruited his command. On March 25 Colonel

Duckworth attacked Union City, where Colonel Hawkins with 450 men of the Eleventh Tennessee Cavalry was stationed. After a stubborn resistance the Federals surrendered the garrison with 300 horses, 500 small arms, considerable supplies, and \$60,000 in money.

On March 26 General Forrest, with part of his forces under Col. A. P. Thompson and Capt. H. A. Tyler moved on Paducah, Ky., where a fort in the northern part of the town,—about five blocks from the present foot of Broadway and the levee,—was garrisoned with a force of 700 men commanded by Col. S. G. Hicks. General Forrest proposed to hold the Federals in the fort until he could obtain all the horses and supplies in the town. He had demanded the surrender of Colonel Hicks, which was refused. Colonel Thompson, of his own accord and without consulting Forrest, attacked the fort with an insufficient body of cavalymen. He was torn to pieces very close to the fort by a bursting shell and his forces were repulsed, after a loss of 24 killed and wounded. The Federals lost 60 killed and wounded. On April 14 General Buford appeared in Paducah and carried away 150 horses and considerable supplies.

Fort Pillow.—After leaving Paducah, Forrest moved toward Fort Pillow, on the Mississippi River in western Tennessee, about fifty miles above Memphis. This fort was garrisoned by 550 men, 260 of whom were negroes. Major W. F. Bradford was in command of the fort and Major L. F. Booth was in direct command of the negro troops. The armament consisted of six field-guns, two six-pounders, two twelve-pounders and two ten-pounders.

There has been much discussion concerning this affair. The Federals claimed that it was the most brutal and heinous form of warfare; while the Confederates deny the whole allegation.

The fort stood on a very steep bluff 75 feet above the river. North of the fort was Cold Creek,—a ravine

filled with bushes and trees; below the fort was another hollow; in front of the fort and 600 yards from the river was a long ditch and about half way toward the river was a small hill covering about two acres.

On April 11, at daybreak, Col. R. A. McCulloch appeared and drove in the outer defense. On the 12th the assault began in earnest. Major Booth was killed at 9 a. m. Major Bradford now ordered all to retire within the fort. At this time Captain Marshall commanding the *New Era*, a gunboat on the river, fired, without much effect, upon the Confederates. At 11 a. m. McCulloch and Bell were near Cold Creek, 300 yards from the fort, while Colonel Wilson occupied redoubts only 250 yards from the fort. The Federal adjutant, learning that Colonel McCulloch's force at 11 a. m. were too near the fort, tried to dislodge them by lowering the guns of the fort. By 3 p. m. Forrest's troops were within 300 feet of the fort. At 3:30 p. m. Forrest sent a flag of truce demanding unconditional surrender. While the truce was being considered a steamer filled with Federal troops was seen on the river rapidly approaching the fort. Forrest considered this a violation of the truce and sent Major Anderson with 400 men toward the river to resist the landing of the Federals.

Bradford had sent this enigmatical message: "Negotiation will not attain the desired object." Forrest made it definitely known that he was present and sent this message to the Federal commander: "Go back and say to Major Booth that I demand in plain English: Will he fight or surrender?" He waited five minutes beyond the time and then ordered the charge,—a charge of a hundred yards at the end of which the Confederates crossed a ditch 12 ft. wide and 8 ft. deep, and then mounted an earthen wall 6 ft. high and 6 ft. thick and flat on top. Without a halt they mounted the rampart. The occupants of the fort rushed toward the river to escape on the boats, which, however, gave no assistance.

Forrest's men almost annihilated the Federals, many of whom were drowned in the great river.

Many of the Federal garrison were drunk, which was one reason for their fearful panic. The Federal flag in the center of the fort was cut down by the Confederates, and then the fight stopped. General Forrest prepared a full account of the siege and capture of Fort Pillow and sent it to General Washburne at Memphis, but it was never recognized.

The Confederates lost 14 killed and 86 wounded. The Federals had 221 killed, 130 wounded, and 200 captured.

Forrest at Brice Crossroad.—General Forrest had concentrated by June a considerable part of his army in northern Mississippi at Iuka, preparatory to going into middle Tennessee, when he received word that General Sturgis and Gen. A. J. Smith,—with 9000 infantry, 3300 cavalry under Grierson; 400 artillerists; 22 guns, and 250 wagons,—had been sent against him. The cavalry of the Federals were equally commanded by Col. George E. Waring, Jr., and Col. E. F. Winslow and reached Ripley, Tippah Co., Mississippi, June 7.

General Forrest had Bell's brigade of 2787 men and 12 guns at Rienzi, 25 miles from Brice Crossroads. Rucker with 700 men, was 17 miles away, Johnson and Lyon with 1300 men were six miles from Brice. At about 10 a. m., June 10, the Federal cavalry came in contact with the Confederates who were well located in the heavily timbered ground around the Brice House. The day,—to use the rough language of Forrest,—was "Hot as Hell." When the battle opened General Sturgis was six miles in the rear with the infantry, which he pushed forward and which came into battle at 2 p. m.

At 4 a. m. Bell left Rienzi and came into battle at about the same time. Morton and Rice were 18 miles away at 5 a. m., June 10, but came to Forrest's aid a little after 10 a. m. The battle was desperate, but by the superb han-

dling of his troops and a timely rear and flank attack of the Federals, under Capt. H. A. Tyler, Sturgis was driven in great confusion from the field. The Federals were harassed and pursued by Forrest until they were 12 miles north of Salem on the night of June 11. A part of the Confederate army had travelled 80 miles in 40 hours and fought a desperate battle.

Results: Sturgis lost 250 wagons, 18 guns, 500,000 rounds of ammunition, 5300 small arms, and nearly 3000 men, killed, wounded and captured.

Forrest had lost 493 killed, wounded, and missing; and with an army of 4787 men and 12 guns had badly routed an army of over 12,000 with 22 guns.

Gen. A. J. Smith's Tupelo Expedition.—Early in July Gen. A. J. Smith, with 11,000 infantry, 24 guns, 500 artillerymen, and 3200 cavalry under Grierson, left Memphis to again attack Forrest and destroy the Confederate granary along the Mobile and Ohio Railroad. Gen. Stephen D. Lee in all this district did not have over 6000 men to meet this force. On July 10 Smith was 5 miles north of Pontotoc, and there was severe skirmishing on the 12th and 13th. On the morning of the 14th, at 8 a. m.,—an intensely hot day,—Brigadier-General Buford, Rucker, Chalmers and Mabry, with their troops of Forrest's command, waged a fierce battle against Smith's command at Harrisburg. The Confederates had scarcely 4000 troops to fight this battle against an army of 12,000. Their losses were severe, but Smith was compelled to move back to Memphis.

The Confederates lost in these three days 1287 men, while the Federals lost 1000.

General Banks' Red River Expedition of 1864.—By the beginning of March, 1864, most of the arrangements were made for Banks' expedition against Shreveport. President Lincoln, Halleck, and Sherman were in favor of the move, though General Grant rather discouraged it. But it was con-

sidered by the Washington Government to be a good move to destroy the source of much of the Confederates' supplies and make it a basis for operations against the Texas forces.

Shreveport was a large town,—wealthy and the center of a rich country. It was at the head of navigation for large boats on the Red River, 150 miles west of Vicksburg. The army of the Federals, under Banks and Franklin, was reinforced by 10,000 men under A. J. Smith, making 50,000 men. General Steele who was at Little Rock with 15,000 men, was to form a junction with Banks near Shreveport; while 20 vessels under Porter were to move up the river.

The entire Confederate force in this region,—from northern Arkansas to Galveston, Texas,—consisted of 30,000 men under the general command of Gens. Kirby Smith and Dick Taylor, both active and skilful generals.

General Banks being detained at New Orleans, General Franklin was placed in immediate command, and by March 13 was in the Teche Region. On March 12 the whole fleet began to move up the Red River.

Fort de Russy, 70 miles from the Red River mouth, was attacked on March 14 and captured, with a loss to the Confederates of 250 men, 10 guns, and about 1000 small arms.

On the 16th Porter occupied Alexandria, at which place Banks arrived with most of his command on the 24th. The transports could not pass over the rapids above Alexandria so returned to Vicksburg with 3000 men, under McPherson. With considerable effort, half of Porter's fleet moved upstream, passing the rapids, and arrived at Grand Ecore April 4,—the same day that Banks reached Natchitoches, at which place Franklin had arrived. Banks, with 25,000 available men on April 6 proceeded toward Shreveport by the Mansfield Road. Porter on the 7th was joined by 2500 men on transports, commanded by T. K. Smith, and with a large quantity of supplies moved to Shreveport as fast as the narrow river would permit. While they were thus, with great fortitude,

pushing their way up-stream, a message was received from Banks telling of a severe defeat and ordering their return to Grand Ecore.

Battle at Sabine Crossroad.— In the early morning of April 8, in a pine forest about three miles from Mansfield General Taylor had concentrated about 15,000 men. At 4 p. m., Taylor ordered his soldiers to make the attack upon the advance brigades of Banks. The Federal cavalry was in the center, Ransom was in command on the left, and Landrum on the right, with Banks directing the whole army. The onslaught of the Confederates broke the Federal lines. When Franklin came up at 5 p. m., a new line was formed, but it availed little.

Soon the Federal army was thrown into the worst confusion. For three miles the rout continued; and it seemed as if the whole Federal advance would be destroyed. The Federals had 800 men killed and 300 men captured, 150 baggage-wagons full of supplies, 18 pieces of artillery and several thousand small arms had fallen into the Confederates' hands. Many officers were severely wounded, among whom were General Franklin, General Ransom and Colonel Robinson. At Pleasant Grove General Emory's fresh troops had formed in line of battle, and at nightfall helped to check the successful pursuit of the Confederates. During the night Banks retreated 15 miles to Pleasant Hill, where he gathered his army by 8 or 9 o'clock a. m., and formed two lines of battle.

Battle of Pleasant Hill. April 9, 1864.— Pleasant Hill was 35 miles from Natchitoches,—a clearing surrounded by a fine forest. The Federals were situated at the edge of the timber and had placed logs several feet high to protect their lines. The forepart of the day, which was clear and beautiful, passed without an attack. The only indication of an imminent battle was a shot heard now and then and the hurried anxiety of the Federal army preparing for the assault.

Close skirmishing began about 4 p. m. At 5 p. m., under

cover of their artillery fire, the Confederates,—commanded by Walker first and then by Churchill,—made an assault on almost the whole length of the Federal lines. The Federals, under Emory, were driven back through the little village; but the Confederates were attacked in the flank and partly in the rear by General Smith, who had been held in reserve. This broke the Confederates' line. They were repulsed and forced to retreat.

Results: The Federals lost in this battle 300 killed, 800 wounded, and 2000 prisoners.

The Confederates lost 700, including 300 prisoners. Gen. Kirby Smith arrived upon the field at night and ordered Churchill's forces to join Price in Arkansas, while Taylor was left to follow Banks.

General Banks now retreated to Grand Ecore in order to join the fleet under Porter. The Federal commander had accomplished nothing, but had lost over 7000 men, 30 wagons, 1200 horses and mules, and 18 guns.

Porter's Predicament with the Fleet.—On April 10 Gen. Thomas Green, with the Texas cavalry, started in pursuit of the Federal army. On April the 12th, at Blair Landing the gunboats were fired upon by Green's forces; and in the engagement this dashing soldier was killed by a shell. All the way to Alexandria the Federals were annoyed. The river above this place had fallen rapidly, and it was only by the construction of a huge tree-dam, 600 feet long, that the water was raised high enough to float the vessels over the rapids.

On April the 27th Banks' army had again reached Alexandria after an absence of 24 days. The backward movement from Grand Ecore had been difficult. Though Gen. A. J. Smith had protected the rear, there had been a number of severe skirmishes and a loss of nearly a thousand men.

Alexandria was evacuated May 14. On the 13th the entire place had been destroyed by fire. The inhabitants were left

in a most pitiful condition, for their homes with almost every form of sustenance had been destroyed. Banks and Porter now both hastened toward New Orleans.

This ended the Red River Expedition of 1864. It was a total failure that involved a great loss to the Federals both in men and supplies; but it added renown to the Confederate arms. Admiral Porter had labored against great disadvantages, but under the circumstances succeeded as well as could have been expected.

General Steele's Failure.—General Steele,—with 12,000 infantry and 3000 cavalry under General Carr,—left Little Rock March 23 to coöperate with Banks in his movements against Shreveport. He was to be joined at Camden by General Thayer and General Clayton, with 5000 and 2000 men respectively. On April 10 he reached Prairie D' Anne after a very difficult march, and was here joined by Thayer. On the 15th he reached Camden; and having heard of Banks' disaster, began his retreat.

General Price was following him and intercepting his supplies. On April 27, at Jenkins Ferry he was attacked by Gen. Kirby Smith at early dawn; the fight continuing until noon, with great loss to both sides. Finally the Confederates' attacks were stayed, giving Steele an opportunity to continue his retreat across Saline River. On May 2 Steele reached Little Rock with a half famished, disorganized, and dispirited army.

The Federal general lost in killed and wounded nearly 1000 men, while about 3000 were captured and nearly all their artillery and wagons were taken. Whereas the Federals had made a serious failure in every feature of the so-called Red River Expedition, General Smith and General Taylor with their poor resources had conducted against the greatest odds,—an army of twice their number, an army better equipped and supported by a strong fleet,—one of the most brilliant and successful campaigns of the Civil War.

CHAPTER XXXII

A FLORIDA EXPEDITION

Among the minor expeditions in the early part of 1864 was one of 6000 men under General Seymour that was sent by the Federals from Hilton Head to occupy the main places in Florida. They landed and marched inward from Jacksonville, but were attacked by General Finnegan, with about 5000 men near Ocean Pond in the afternoon of February 20. The fight lasted for two hours when, at about sunset, the Federal lines were broken and their army completely routed. The Federals lost 500 prisoners, about 300 killed, 5 large guns, half their small arms, and were forced to give up their hopes of holding military possession of the State.

The minor expeditions of the first half of 1864 had all resulted disastrously to the Federal cause. Banks' failure in Louisiana, Sherman's in Mississippi, Sturgis' and Smith's in northern Mississippi, and western Tennessee, and Seymour's in Florida, had all been of great benefit to Johnston and Lee; allowing them time to equip their armies better and preventing the Federal generals from receiving more reinforcements.

But the two great campaigns conducted by Grant and Sherman overshadowed all these minor operations.

Grant, on March 2, 1864, had been appointed Lieutenant-General of all the Federal armies. Toward the last of April, Banks had been ordered to return all of Sherman's troops, to retire with his own troops to New Orleans; and here, in conjunction with the fleet of Farragut, to make ready to attack Mobile. Butler and Gilmore were ordered to coöperate against Richmond on the south side of the James. General

Sigel was ordered to destroy the railroad from Lynchburg to Knoxville; while General Sherman was to move against Johnston at Dalton, Ga. At the same time Grant was to begin his operations south of the Rappahannock against his great antagonist, Lee.

This was the great and comprehensive outline of a plan, the undertaking of which filled the middle and latter half of the year 1864 with many bloody battles. Thousands of firesides all over this great country were yet to lose their loved ones before the terrible fratricide should end. Exhaustion complete had not yet overtaken the Confederacy; there were strong armies to be overcome, and thousands of dauntless hearts to be convinced that a Southern Confederacy was a hopeless dream. The able men of the determined, persistent, and powerful Federal Government and its army were beginning to see the light of hope brightening their troubled and stony pathway.

CHAPTER XXXIII

SHERMAN'S MOVEMENT TOWARD ATLANTA

Atlanta, the first objective point of Sherman's campaign, was at this time a city of about 20,000 inhabitants. It was a railroad center for four roads, where many machine-shops, rolling-mills, and manufactories of guns, pistols, and ammunition, were located. The city was about six miles in circumference and strongly fortified; and was altogether one of the most important places within the borders of the Confederacy. The great army that Sherman was to lead against Johnston contained 98,797 men and 254 cannons. This consisted of the army of the Cumberland, commanded by Major-General Thomas, with 60,773 infantry and 3828 cavalry, divided into the commands of Howard, Palmer, and Hooker; the army of the Tennessee, commanded by Major-General McPherson containing 24,465 men, including the cavalry,—the Fifteenth Corps commanded by Logan, the Sixteenth by Dodge and the Seventeenth by Blair, and the army of the Ohio, containing 1680 cavalry and 11,870 infantry, commanded by Schofield.

The Confederate army, now reorganized and commanded by Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, lay in and around Dalton, some 15 miles south of Ringgold, with the advance reaching almost half-way to Ringgold. The infantry corps were commanded by Generals Hardee, Hood, and Polk and consisted of 50,000 men. The cavalry composed of nearly 10,000 men, was commanded by General Wheeler.

Sherman made his equipment as simple as possible, and on May 6 he was ready to begin his advance. The army of the Cumberland was at Ringgold on the Western and Atlantic

Railroad. The army of the Tennessee, under McPherson, was located on the Chickamauga at Gordon Mills, 8 miles west of Ringgold, while Schofield was about 10 miles north-east of Ringgold.

Sherman Begins His Advance.— Because of the nature of the country and the powerful fortifications that Johnston had prepared, an attack from the northwest was considered unadvisable by Sherman. On the 6th of May McPherson, who had been sent to make a flank movement on Johnston in order to force his evacuation of Dalton, moved toward Resaca, and on May 8 had approached within a mile of the town. This place is located on the Oostanaula River 15 miles south of Dalton on the railroad and 84 miles north of Atlanta. It was too strong for McPherson to take, which caused him to move back to the southern mouth of Snake Creek Gap.

On May 7 Thomas advanced his center from Ringgold, while Schofield was sent from Cleveland to join Thomas on the left. On May 8 and 9 Thomas made a strong demonstration along the rugged front of Rocky Face Ridge and Buzzard Roost, where the Federals lost nearly a thousand men.

Johnston maneuvered along the east side of the Ridge, while Thomas pushed southward and joined McPherson on the 13th. Johnston had reached Resaca on the 12th, and he again blocked Sherman's way to Atlanta.

Resaca.— By early morning of the 14th Johnston was prepared to receive the attack of the Federal forces, which now extended from the Oostanaula River, two miles below the town, to the Tilton railroad station, half-way to Dalton. A little past noon Sherman began his attack on Johnston's center and right, but was repulsed. Stanley's division, of Howard's corps, on the Federal left was driven from its position in confusion. McPherson, on the Federal right, had succeeded in gaining a position near the river which commanded the railroad trestle across the river.

The fight was renewed on the 15th, with great vigor; the

Federals succeeding in capturing some important works. During the night Johnston crossed the river and retreated toward Kingston on the railroad, 32 miles south of the Resaca.

The Federals had lost at Resaca nearly 4000 killed and wounded.

The Confederates' loss amounted to about 2000 killed, wounded, and captured.

Johnston Moves South of the Etowah.—The whole of Sherman's army had crossed the Oostanaula by the 17th. Near sunset of this day a skirmish occurred with Johnston's rear guard, at Adairsville. By the 19th Johnston had converged his army about Cassville, four miles from Kingston, where he proposed to make a strong defense; but Hood and Polk were not in favor of it. General Johnston, on the night of the 20th, retreated across the Etowah and took up a position at Altoona Pass,—a very strong position. Johnston regretted that he had not made a stand in the rear of Cassville, because his retreat had practically left Rome defenseless. This town lay 15 miles west of Kingston, at the junction of the Oostanaula and Etowah Rivers. On the 19th after a sharp fight Gen. Jefferson C. Davis captured Rome, with its valuable foundries, supplies, and a large quantity of stores.

Johnston made only a short stay at Altoona, but tried to anticipate Sherman's flank on Dallas.

New Hope Church.—On the 25th of May Hooker's advance when about 3 miles northeast of Dallas near Pumpkin Vine Creek, met part of the corps of Hood and Hardee,—under General Stewart,—and a sharp, severe contest occurred near the intersection of the three roads to Ackworth, Marietta, and Dallas.

Hooker lost 600 men, while the Confederates held the road between Dallas and Marietta, and strongly fortified their position.

For the next two days there was constant skirmishing.

On the 27th Cleburne's division had made a heavy assault

at Pickett's Mill on part of Howard's corps. The Federals withdrew after a loss of 1500 men.

On the 28th Bates' division, of Hardee's corps, was severely repulsed by Logan's command of McPherson's army.

During these three days' fight Sherman had found that Johnston's position was too strong to be carried by a general assault.

For a month there had been almost unceasing fighting along parts of the line. The Federals had lost during this time 2000 killed and 7000 wounded and captured. Johnston reported during May a loss of 720 killed, wounded and missing 4670; or a total loss of 5390 in his infantry. His cavalry had lost about 850 men; making a total of 6240 men.

Around Marietta.—During the first week of June Sherman changed his tactics and occupied his time in trying to turn the right flank of Johnston's army at Ackworth and in the construction of bridges across the Etowah.

Johnston, on the night of June 4, abandoned the whole line about New Hope Church and retired to a line of defense selected by his engineers,—a situation on Pine Mountain, two or three miles north of Kenesaw, and midway between Lost Mountain and Brush Mountain.

The country between Big Shanty and Marietta is rugged and mountainous. Three forest-covered peaks are prominent features of the landscape. Kenesaw Mountain,—a double-peaked elevation about 1200 feet high,—lies a very short distance northwest of Marietta. Lost Mountain is situated about four miles west of Marietta, while Pine Mountain,—a rugged round-topped elevation, lay half-way and about half a mile to the north of a line between the former two peaks. The main disadvantage to Johnston's line was its length, which was eventually concentrated on Kenesaw Mountain.

Death of General Polk.—There had been a continuous downpour of rain on the 4th of June so that great activity

in maneuvering was impossible. By Tuesday, June 14, the rain had almost ceased. Sherman now renewed his activities and ordered his skirmishers to move closer to the Confederate line. While Johnston, Hardee, and Polk were reconnoitering on Pine Mountain, the batteries of Thomas' Fourth Corps began a cannonade. At this time General Polk was struck by a fragment of a shell and killed. He had been an ardent Confederate, and his influence had been a very powerful factor in gaining supporters for the cause. As the Episcopal Bishop of Louisiana before the war and a cousin of President Polk, he was a very important personage in the councils of the Confederacy.

On June 17 General Hardee drew back his left flank from Lost Mountain, and intrenched himself behind Nose Creek, covering the railroad to the Chattahoochee River. The rain was still falling in torrents, making a general movement impossible; but the picket lines were always busy.

Confederate Repulse at Culp House.—On June 22, while General Hooker's corps was moving around the Confederates' left flank, the divisions of Williams, Geary, and Hascall were attacked by the Hindman and Stevenson divisions of Hood's command at Culp House. After a temporary success in the hollow, the Confederates were brought into the open ground and were seriously punished by the Federal artillery and driven back with a total loss of 1000 men.

The Federals lost only about 350 men, but had been checked in the flank movement on the Sandtown Road.

The evening after this engagement, General Hooker reported that he had repulsed three corps of the Confederate army. Schofield resented the imputation that his divisions had not been bearing the burden of the fight. Sherman, finding upon investigation that Hascall, of Schofield's command, had suffered severely in the front of the fight, rebuked Hooker for his sensational and inaccurate report. This subsequently led to Hooker's withdrawal from the army.

Kenesaw Mountain.— Johnston's line had by June 24 been well concentrated on Kenesaw Mountain. Cheatham and Cleburne's divisions of Hardee's corps held almost the apex of the mountain.

Sherman now determined to try by a massed attack to break through the Confederate line. If successful, it would prove a decisive event. Sherman's army had been greatly embarrassed by the constant interruption of supplies along the line, and he was now anxious to hasten the movement of his army. Eight o'clock on the morning of June 27 was the time set for the attack. McPherson's troops were to assault the Confederate position south and west of the main crest of Kenesaw, while the Blair and Dodge commands made a feint on McPherson's extreme left. Logan's corps made a brave and heroic charge up the mountain slope. The men in the advance rifle-pits of the Confederate defense greatly annoyed them, but finally retreated to the main infantry line commanded by Loring and consisting of Walker's and French's division. Coming within range of the infantry fire and being fearfully slaughtered by the artillery fire from four batteries, Logan ordered his lines to retire to the rifle-pits and fortify themselves.

Palmer's attack and Howard's, like McPherson's, were preceded by a most terrific artillery fire of twenty minutes. Their movement was along the road from Marietta to Burnt Hickory. The attacks of Davis' division of Palmer's corps were repulsed by Cheatham's division of Hardee's corps, while Newton's division of Howard's corps was severely repulsed by Cleburne's division of Hardee's corps.

Three points of the Confederate line had been assailed, yet the Federals were driven back. The entire assault had consumed but little more than one hour.

The Federals had lost nearly 3000 men, killed and wounded, while the Confederates had lost 441 men, killed and wounded.

Sherman Again Resorts to Maneuvering.—After Sherman's fearful repulse at Kenesaw Mountain he began on July 2 a flanking movement on Johnston's left. On June 28, Johnston had begun to fortify two lines north of the Chattahoochee. One was close to the river, the other passed through Smyrna on the railroad, covering a ridge from northeast to southwest. McPherson began his movement toward Turner's Ferry on the night of July 2. Johnston had detected Sherman's plan; and at the same time McPherson began to move his rear guard, abandoned the works on Kenesaw, and by the morning of July 3 Thomas' forces began to occupy the abandoned works, and thence moved southward.

General Sherman entered Marietta at 8:30 a. m., just after the cavalry of the Confederates had vacated it. Thomas was now sent in vigorous pursuit, but the astute and cautious Confederate general was not to be caught unawares. The splendid works that had been made on the north side of Chattahoochee protected him from the Federal forces. While on the night of July 5 the great bulk of the Confederate army safely crossed the river, Johnston remained with the greater part of his army south of the river with Hardee's corps on the right bank, until the 7th of July, when he established his line of defense eight miles from Atlanta, on the south side of Peachtree Creek below its mouth.

Losses in June.—The Federal army reported a loss in June of 7500 men killed, wounded, and missing; of these the Army of the Cumberland lost 5500, the Army of the Tennessee 1300, and the Army of the Ohio 700. The Confederate loss during the month had been about 6000, including both cavalry and infantry.

Sherman had so ordered the movements of his troops that the Confederates anticipated that he would endeavor to cross the Chattahoochee at Turner's Ferry, on their left flank; but instead, he caused his whole army to cross the river on pon-

toons eight miles above the railroad bridge. Schofield was sent around the right wing and McPherson even farther east, and both approached Atlanta by way of Decatur from the east, while Thomas advanced from the north.

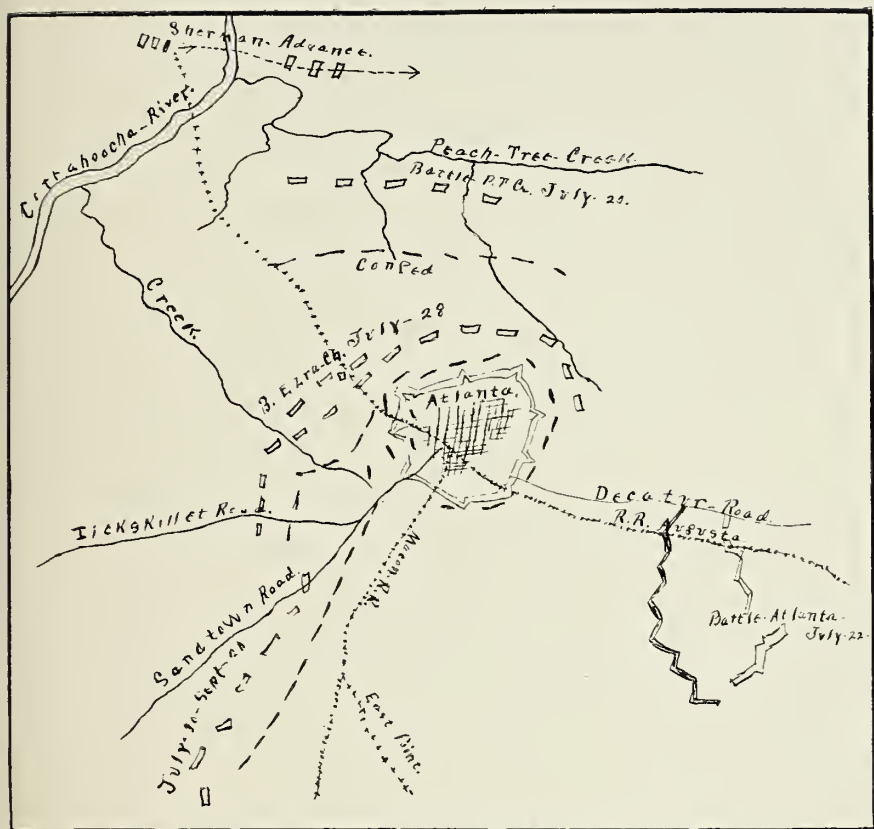
CHAPTER XXXIV

JOHNSTON RELIEVED FROM COMMAND. GENERAL HOOD APPOINTED IN HIS PLACE

On July 9 General Hardee had been withdrawn from his position on the right bank of the Chattahoochee. The movements of Sherman on the right flank had caused Johnston to fall back upon the outer fortifications around Atlanta. At this time considerable dissatisfaction made itself manifest in Atlanta at Johnston's failure to give battle closer to the river. President Davis and General Bragg thought a more aggressive policy was necessary, and the President, yielding to his own disapproval of Johnston's Fabian Policy and to the detractors of this splendid general on the 17th of July turned over his command to General Hood.

General Johnston's retreat through a mountainous country of over one hundred miles before an army twice the size of his own, without loss of any materials of war and, as has been said, carrying all his pots and tea-kettles, and in two months' fighting losing only 14,500 men, must be admired by all students of history as one of the most remarkable and successful examples of defensive warfare.

The critical period of the campaign had now arrived. Sherman's line of communication had been very seriously interrupted in Tennessee by Forrest; and it was 135 miles to his nearest base of supplies at Chattanooga. At the time that the change was made a much smaller army was to assume the aggressive and the offensive. This policy was going to leave the rich sections of southern Georgia, southeastern South Carolina and North Carolina open to the destructive methods



ATLANTA, JULY 17—SEPTEMBER, 1864

of Sherman's army. Finally all their hopes were to be completely wrecked in the campaign in Tennessee. At Franklin many of their bravest generals and thousands of their hardest veterans were to die, and before Nashville they were to become a disorganized body, pitifully beaten, and fleeing in the cold raw winter from their own homes for safety over the roads and hills southward.

The change in the Confederate command is known to have been pleasing to the whole Federal army. The patience, fortitude, courage, and watchfulness of Johnston were trying the Federal army to the utmost. No weak point in his armor had yet been found. Impregnable fortifications had always confronted the Federal generals, nothing had yet been gained, except by wide flanking movements, made possible by the Federals' greatly superior numbers.

Gen. J. B. Hood, who was to command the Confederate army, had won the reputation,—and justly,—of being one of the most fearless and aggressive division commanders of the Confederacy. His heroic charge at Gaines' Mill and his splendid action at Antietam and Gettysburg had won him the applause and admiration of the whole South. In the battle at Chickamauga he had materially aided in bringing on the defeat of Rosecrans' army. He had suffered greatly in body, having had an arm shattered at Gettysburg, and a leg amputated at Chickamauga; yet his dauntless courage and stubborn will carried him on, fighting for a cause he considered right. In the Georgia campaign he had at times criticized Johnston's policy, but he had never expected to assume the position under the conditions set forth by the War Department.

Battling Around Atlanta.—General Hood placed A. P. Stewart in command of General Polk's former corps,—and this corps now confronted General Thomas. General Hardee was in the center, facing Schofield; General Cheatham, now in command of Hood's former corps, was situated on the right, facing McPherson, while the Georgia State

troops, under Gen. G. W. Smith, were located still farther on the Confederate right flank.

Battle of Peachtree Creek, July 20, 1864.— On July 20, as the Federals were moving nearer Atlanta, a gap was made between Thomas' army and that of Schofield, and Newton's division of Howard's corps moved to the left to make a connection with Schofield, when Hooker's corps were unexpectedly assailed by Bates' and Walker's divisions, of Hardee's corps, and Loring's divisions of Stewart's corps. At first it appeared as if the Confederates would be successful.

After about four hours' fighting and a fearful slaughter, considering the number engaged, the Confederates were repulsed. The Federal losses had been 1900, one-fifth of whom had been killed. The Confederates had lost by the most correct estimate 750 killed, 3500 wounded, and several hundred missing,— about 4800 men.

On July 21 the Confederates were attacked on the Federal left by a division of the Fourteenth Corps, under General Leggett, who, after losing 750 men, captured and held a commanding position southeast of the city. McPherson had now established a line three miles from Atlanta, toward the south and east.

Battle of Atlanta, July 19th, 1864.— The Confederate commander on the night of the 21st abandoned the line near Peachtree Creek and approached nearer the city. He hoped that Sherman would make an advance on the right, and weaken his left flank. The plan worked well. In the meantime Hardee's corps had moved farther toward the Federals' left. McPherson and Schofield were with Sherman until noon, at which time Hardee's division commanders, Bates and Walker, attacked with great energy General Dodge's divisions. General McPherson had met Logan and Blair on his return and then hastened to Dodge, from whose line he now started by a road that had been cleared in order to reach Blair's line. He had gone only a short distance when he ran into the skir-

mish line of Cleburne's division. On being ordered to halt, he turned to gallop away, and was shot, falling from his horse mortally wounded.

McPherson was one of the most capable of the Federal corps commanders; he was tireless in energy and, in Grant's language, "One of the ablest of engineers and most skilful of generals."

McPherson's left was driven from their works, and 16 pieces of artillery were captured. General Sherman soon after hearing of McPherson's death ordered General Logan to assume command of the Army of the Tennessee.

Meanwhile Cheatham attacked the Federal center and captured six pieces of artillery. The fighting was very desperate and often hand to hand.

Hardee and Cheatham were miles apart and could not act simultaneously but each had repulsed the Federals that faced their commands. At 4:30 p. m. Sherman ordered Schofield to concentrate his artillery and bring it to bear on Cheatham's advancing forces. This enabled the Federals' left to regain its position. With this the tide of battle turned in favor of the Federals; the Confederates, after repeated charges, were repulsed, with great loss, and forced to abandon the advantage gained, with most of the artillery captured.

The Federals had lost, besides General McPherson, in killed, wounded, and missing, 3722; one regular battery, and two other guns, not retaken.

The Confederate loss had been very heavy. Their killed had been about 2500, while the wounded and prisoners amounted to 8000. This was the bloodiest battle yet fought in the Georgia campaign. Hood criticized Hardee for being slow, but the facts do not bear him out, for the head of Hardee's corps had to traverse a distance of fully 15 miles over very rough ground.

Hood now moved back into the inner works.

Cavalry Raids.—The cavalry under Garrard, which Sher-

man had sent out toward Covington before the battle of Atlanta, returned on the 24th, after having burned several bridges, 2000 bales of cotton, and the depots at Covington and Conger, had taken 200 prisoners and had destroyed a considerable part of the Georgia and Augusta Railroad.

Sherman now placed Stoneman and Garrard, with 5000 cavalry, on the left wing with directions to destroy the Atlanta & Macon Railroad beyond McDonough. McCook and Rousseau, with 4000 cavalry, were ordered to form the right wing to Fayetteville and to meet on the night of July 28 at Lovejoy, thirty miles south of Atlanta.

Stoneman set out on the 27th, followed the Georgia Railroad to Covington, then started due south and east of the Ocmulgee River, and on the 30th came in the vicinity of Macon, sixty miles south of Atlanta, instead of going to Lovejoy. His purpose was to strike Andersonville and Macon in order to release the Federal prisoners; but he learned that they had been sent to Charleston. On the evening of July 30 he abandoned his plan and started northward. On the morning of the 31st, when about 20 miles from Macon, he was attacked by the Confederates and forced to surrender with 1000 men. All the brigades but the one under Colonel Adams were scattered or captured. Garrard had remained inactive until the 29th at Flat Rock and then moved to Covington, where he learned of Stoneman's movement southward. He then returned to the left flank of the army.

McCook's Expedition.— McCook, on the right, marched down the west bank of the Chattahoochee River and crossed at Campbelltown, from whence he marched to Lovejoy, eight miles south of Jonesboro. Failing to meet Stoneman, he destroyed several supply trains, captured 400 prisoners, killed all the mules he could not use, and started on his return to Atlanta. At Newman's Station he was attacked by the Confederate infantry, and forced to leave all his prisoners and booty. Before he could get through he had lost 600 men.

After the death of McPherson Major-General Howard, who commanded the Fourth Corps, on the recommendation of General Sherman was assigned by President Lincoln to the command of the Army of the Tennessee.

General Hooker as senior in command naturally looked for the appointment to fall to him. However, since the incident of June 22 at Culp House the differences between Sherman and Hooker had grown, and this in the commanding officer's opinion was enough to convince him that Hooker would not fully coöperate in his plans.

Hooker, upon the appointment of Howard, resigned his command; and Slocum was called from Vicksburg to take his place in command of the Twentieth Corps.

After the battle of Atlanta General Howard had been drawn out of its intrenchments on the left flank, and moved on the 27th to the extreme right.

Some changes had also occurred in the Confederate army; Gen. S. D. Lee had arrived and assumed command of Hood's old corps, which had been commanded temporarily by Cheatham. General Hardee had asked to be relieved, but upon request of the Confederate President retained his command.

Major-General Walker, of Hardee's corps, had been killed in the battle of Atlanta; and his division was so depleted that its regiments were placed among the other divisions.

Battle of Ezra Church, July 28.—At noon of July 28 Hood sought to strike Howard's right flank while it was in motion to the right of Sherman's army. On the Lickskillet Road General Lee's division advanced to the attack in parallel lines, supported by the Loring and Walthall divisions of Stewart's corps. Logan's corps was first struck. They had made some preparations for the attack, and after a desultory fight of four hours, the Confederates were forced to retire. Some parts of the line had refused to advance at the command of the general officers, who had greatly exposed themselves.

This was the third serious repulse of Hood's army within a week.

The Confederate loss in this attack was 1800 in killed and wounded, while several hundred were missing.

The Federals reported a loss of 600.

Hood's assaults had all failed, and he did not make another one until forced to do so.

From August 2 to August 15 Sherman continued to extend his lines farther to the right and west of Atlanta.

On August 15 Reilley's brigade of Cox's division in an attack on the Confederate line at Utoy Creek failed in its purpose to break through the lines and lost 400 men.

Hood had constructed and so greatly strengthened the defenses from Atlanta to East Point that Sherman concluded that it would be only after great sacrifice of life that they could be carried.

It was at this time that Wheeler was sent north with his cavalry to destroy Sherman's lines of supplies. The Federal army, however, was well provisioned and had a second base at Allatoona.

Wheeler in his raid into northern Georgia and eastern Tennessee destroyed much property, but this did not materially retard Sherman in his movements, while Hood was left without Wheeler's watchful care in protecting his own line of communication and supplies.

Kilpatrick's Raid.—On August 18 General Sherman ordered Kilpatrick, with a force of 5000 cavalry, from Sandtown to destroy the West Point Railroad and the Macon Railroad. No permanent damage was done to the railroad, nor more than two or three days' complete interruption of the trains to Atlanta. He left Lovejoy and turned eastward and northward, reaching Decatur on the 22d.

By August 28 Sherman had advanced his army to Fairburn, on the West Point Railroad, and had destroyed 12 miles of the road to Red Oak. On the 29th the whole army was

moving eastward, with General Howard's army on the right toward Jonesboro. Hood now ordered Hardee and S. D. Lee to Jonesboro, while he remained in Atlanta with Stewart's corps and the Georgia militia.

On the 30th Howard moved on the road from Fairburn toward Jonesboro. The Confederate cavalry had impeded his march as much as possible in order to give Hardee time to form a line of intrenchments at Flint River. On the night of the 30th Logan's column passed over the Flint River bridges and had time to make intrenchments. The remaining divisions of Howard's army arrived by daylight of the 31st.

Battle of Jonesboro.—Cleburne, who was in immediate command of Hardee's corps, was in position at 9 a. m. Lee's corps did not arrive until 11 a. m. About 3 p. m. the soldiers under Lee advanced to the attack; but there was a lack of co-operation in the Confederate movements. Cleburne's troops did not participate in the general assault but kept Kilpatrick's cavalry from crossing the river, and forced Howard to send part of Blair's corps to stop the movement. After some two hours' fighting the loss to the Confederates was so severe that they desisted from their assault, after having lost about 2000 men killed and wounded. The Federals, who had fought behind intrenchments, had not lost more than 500 men.

Results: The night of the 31st Schofield reached the railroad a short distance south of Rough and Ready Station. General Stanley had moved farther south. Orders were now given for the whole army to move southward. Hardee's line had been formed to meet the advance on the 1st of September. General Davis was ordered by Sherman to attack the works. After a desperate fight of two hours, in which they were at first repulsed, the Confederates were driven out and took up their position in the second line of defense. The Confederates participating in this fight were the commands of Lewis, Granberry, and Govan.

General Govan was captured with 865 men and two batteries. The Confederates lost in killed and wounded about 1000 men. The Federals' losses were 1100.

During the night General Hardee evacuated his lines at Jonesboro and moved back to Lovejoy.

Sherman Enters Atlanta and Burns the City.— About 2 a. m. of September 2 Hood ordered all of the stores, supplies, locomotives, guns, and magazines that he could not move, to be destroyed by fire. Large quantities of provisions were distributed to the troops and inhabitants of the city. Seven or eight locomotives, with a hundred cars were burned, and the ammunition was exploded. The army had begun to leave the city by the Macon turnpike in the afternoon of the 1st. On the following morning Hood had reached Lovejoy. Hood had, after the battle of the 31st of August, ordered Stewart to Atlanta; but before this officer had gone half-way the order was countermanded and directions given to cover Hood's movement out of Atlanta.

About 9 a. m., September 2, Sherman's army discovered that Atlanta had been abandoned. The city was immediately occupied by Slocum's corps. Sherman had followed Hardee to Lovejoy, but gave up the pursuit and ordered his army back to Jonesboro, which was reached on the 5th of September. By September 8 the Army of the Cumberland was located in and around Atlanta, the Army of the Tennessee at East Point, and the Army of the Ohio at Decatur.

On September 5 Sherman issued an order to all civilians of Atlanta who had representatives in the army to leave the city in five days. This was indeed a cruel order and subjected to exposure and death many non-combatants. The Mayor and inhabitants protested against such inhumanity; but Sherman refused to consider their plea. He proposed a truce of 10 days with Hood for the fulfillment of the order and for exchange of prisoners. A commission of 200 was selected from each army to make arrangements. After writing a letter of

severe censure and protest, Hood had to accept the conditions.

Old and decrepit men and women, pregnant women, and small children were all crowded together in old cars and wagons and sent as far as Rough and Ready Station, where they were left to shift for themselves. The city was not burned until November 16, when the march to the sea began.

Results: The capture of Atlanta was a terrible blow to the Confederacy. The North was reanimated and hopeful. Atlanta was one of the most active manufacturing cities of the South. It was also a railroad center, and in close touch with the agricultural districts of the Gulf States.

The Federals had lost during the campaign, from May 7 to September 1, about 32,000 men.

The Confederates had lost up to July 18,—when Hood assumed command,—about 15,000 men; from then until September 1 their killed, wounded, and captured aggregated possibly 21,000. During the whole campaign Sherman reported the capture of 12,983 men.

General Hood had on July 31, 1864, reported the number of men present in his army 65,601. Of these 44,495 were effective. The Federal army's effective force had been throughout the campaign in the ratio of 10 to 6.

CHAPTER XXXV

NAVAL EVENTS OF GREAT IMPORTANCE DURING THE SUMMER OF 1864

Before following the great campaign of Lee and Grant in Virginia, which was contemporaneous with that of Sherman against Johnston, we can study, with advantage and interest, the naval expedition in Mobile Bay, the capture of the *Florida*, and the destruction of the *Alabama*.

Battle in Mobile Bay.— Mobile was a city of 20,000 at the beginning of the Civil War and was situated at the mouth of the Alabama River, thirty miles from the Gulf of Mexico. It had been very difficult for the Federal fleet to thoroughly blockade the port. The city was at first used as a naval depot, but much of the material was later moved up the river to Selma. The Federals had long contemplated a serious movement against the place.

It was a difficult undertaking. Mobile Bay was large and well land-locked. A narrow peninsula about 15 miles long, ending at Mobile Point, protected the entrance on the southeast. Upon this point was located Fort Morgan, with 48 guns. The mouth of the Bay lay between this point and the eastern end of Dauphin Island, which separates Mississippi Sound from the Gulf and is 12 miles long. Between the Island and the mainland is Little Dauphin Island, upon which Fort Powell was located; to the north is Grant Pass, narrow and shallow, which connects the Sound and Mobile Bay. These passes between Dauphin Island and the mainland were well guarded by the forts, obstructions, and torpedoes. On the eastern end of Dauphin Island was Fort Gaines, with 21

mounted guns. Nearly a mile southwest of Mobile Point was Sand Island,— a strip about a half-mile long. The middle channel was the entrance between Sand Island and Dauphin Island, in which piles and various obstructions were placed. To attack or enter one had to pass near Fort Morgan. The Confederates had three gunboats, the *Gaines*, the *Selma*, and the *Morgan*, and also the ironclad *Tennessee*, which carried six rifles of $7\frac{1}{8}$ bore, and four 6-inch broadsides. Such was the situation of Mobile Bay and the strength of its defenses.

During the first of August, under an agreement between Farragut and Canby, the troops commanded by Gen. Gordon Granger arrived, amounting to 2500 men, which were to be used in investing Fort Gaines.

Admiral Farragut had 14 steamers and 4 monitors, carrying 212 guns, opposed to the 26 guns and 4 boats of the Confederates.

Admiral Farragut ordered his fleet to begin its movement at 5:30 a. m., August 5. At 6:45 a. m. the first shot was fired from the monitor *Tecumseh*, commanded by Capt. T. A. M. Craven. In a few moments this vessel was struck by the shots from Fort Morgan. This caused the *Brooklyn* to pause momentarily, but Farragut ordered a rapid advance and constant broadsides upon the fort. A wind blew the smoke from the guns of the fleet into the faces of the gunners of the fort, preventing them from being effective in their aim. By 8 a. m. the entire fleet had passed Fort Morgan.

In the meantime the three Confederate gunboats had greatly annoyed the advancing fleet; many upon the Federal boats were killed. Farragut ordered Captain Jouett, in command of the gunboat *Metacomet*, carrying ten guns, to go in pursuit of the *Morgan* and the *Selma*. The *Gaines* had been damaged and withdrew under the protection of the fort. The *Selma* was overhauled and captured; the *Morgan* made her way to Mobile; the *Gaines* was captured later on.

In the meantime at 8:40 a. m., after the Federal vessels had all passed the fort and were being brought to anchor, Admiral Buchanan, in command of the *Tennessee*, made a direct attack upon the *Hartford*. It was a desperate undertaking. Farragut ordered his monitors and the heavier vessels to attack the Confederate ironclad not only with their guns but also with their bows at full head-way.

The *Monongahela* and the *Lackawanna*,—two very heavy vessels,—made the first assault, but were severely injured in the crash. They were followed by the *Hartford*, each vessel firing a broadside against the *Tennessee* at close range. The monitors *Chickasaw* and *Manhattan* shot away her smoke-stack. The steering-gear and chain of the ram had been destroyed, while Admiral Buchanan was seriously wounded in the leg. The odds were too great. The white flag was run up and Admiral Buchanan surrendered himself and his crew to Farragut.

Results: The Federals had lost 165 killed and drowned, while many were wounded. The fleet had suffered severely. No one had been killed or wounded on the monitors.

On the night of August 5 Fort Powell was abandoned and blown up.

Farragut's victory was not yet complete; for the two main forts were still intact. However, his praise was in the mouth of the whole North. He was compared to the great English naval commander, Admiral Nelson. New Orleans and Mobile Bay were great victories, but the small force of the Confederate vessels in the latter fight hardly justified the extravagant praise accorded the Federal admiral in destroying them.

The Surrender of Fort Gaines.—Colonel Anderson was in command at Fort Gaines. On the 5th of August General Granger began to invest it. About one mile from the fort a battery of Rodman guns had been placed. On August 6 the guns of the fort were disabled and on the same day the besieged suffered from the combined attack of the fleet and shore

batteries. Colonel Anderson surrendered the fort and 800 men on August 7.

Capture of Fort Morgan.—Fort Morgan was commanded by Gen. Richard L. Page, a native of Virginia, and was better supplied than Fort Gaines. After the capture of the latter fort General Granger transferred his army to the rear of Fort Morgan. He ordered siege-guns from New Orleans, and by August 20 heavy batteries were located within 800 yards of the fort, and another line within 400 yards of the fort.

The Federals continued their preparations until the evening of the 21st. At 5 a. m., August 22, the bombardment was begun by the fleet and the army. It continued with great severity all day. A fire had broken out in the fort in the afternoon. The bombardment ceased at dark but was resumed for two hours after 9 p. m. At 5 a. m. on August 23 the bombardment was again begun by the Federal forces. About 7 a. m. a letter was sent to Farragut by Page, asking that the sick and wounded be allowed to move to Mobile; whereupon an unconditional surrender was demanded by the Federals. At 2 p. m. the fort was surrendered with 600 men. This completely opened the bay and prevented further blockade-running. The Confederates had lost 104 guns and 1464 men.

The city of Mobile, however, still remained for eight months in Confederate hands.

CHAPTER XXXVI

THE ALABAMA, THE KEARSARGE, AND OTHER VESSELS

The greatest naval event that occurred on the high seas during the Civil War was the destruction of the Confederate privateer, the *Alabama*, by the *Kearsarge*. Before narrating this important engagement it will be well to glance at this phase of the War between the States.

Among the earlier vessels that floated the Confederate flag was the small schooner *Savannah*, of only 50 tons and carrying an 18-pound gun. Early in June, 1861, she captured a large sugar-laden brig from Maine, but soon afterwards was captured by the Federal cruiser *Perry*. The *Petrel*, *Juda*, and *Nashville* were three Confederate vessels which did considerable damage to the commerce of the Union States. The latter was destroyed on February 22, 1863, near Fort McAllister, on the Ogeechee River.

The most formidable of the earlier Confederate privateers was the *Sumter*, commanded by Captain Semmes. She carried 9 guns, and in her brief career captured 26 prizes. She was finally forced to seek a refuge at Gibraltar, January, 1862, and was there abandoned. The Confederate officers of the *Sumter* soon took charge of the *Alabama*.

The Alabama.—The *Alabama* was the most powerful of the Confederate privateers. She was built at Birkenhead, England, and left the Mersey River July 29, 1862, arriving at Porta Praya, on the 19th of August. On the 20th of August Captain Semmes with his crew assumed charge; the Confederate flag was raised, and the vessel was named the *Alabama*.

On August 29 the vessel started her cruise, which was to

continue two years. By October 20 seven prizes had been captured. On January 11, 1863, the *Hatteras*,—one of the Federal gunboats aiding in the blockade of Galveston,—was destroyed. Captain Semmes now continued his cruise in the vicinity of the West Indies, capturing many vessels, and by May 11, 1863, was at Bahia, Brazil.

A long voyage was made around the Cape of Good Hope into the Malay Archipelago. In the vicinity of Singapore a number of captures were made. By June, 1864, the *Alabama* had reached Cherbourg, France, where she went into port. Up to this time this powerful vessel had captured or destroyed 65 vessels, with their cargoes, valued at nearly \$10,000,000.

The Sea Engagement Between the Alabama and the Kearsarge.—At the time that the *Alabama* entered Cherbourg the Federal cruiser *Kearsarge* was at the Dutch port, Flushing. The *Kearsarge* was commanded by Capt. John A. Winslow and had on board 22 officers and 140 men. The *Alabama* had 140 officers and men. The armaments of the two vessels were practically the same. The *Kearsarge* had the advantage over the *Alabama*, her midship having been made almost invulnerable to the shells from the Confederate vessel by means of a concealed layer of cable chains from the rail to the water, covered by planks; whereas the *Alabama's* hull was easily entered and damaged by the heavy shells.

This memorable naval battle occurred Sunday morning, June 19, about 10:30 o'clock, at a distance of seven miles from the French shore. When the vessels were about one mile apart the *Alabama* opened fire; the *Kearsarge* did not respond until she was within half a mile. The vessels now began to maneuver in a circle. About 1 p. m. the *Alabama* showed evidence of great distress and ran up a white flag. Twenty minutes after the vessel surrendered she sank in the water of the English Channel.

Many of the men on the *Alabama* were drowned. The English ship or yacht, the *Deerhound*, rescued Captain

Semmes and several of the crew, while others were taken up by the French boats. The Confederates lost about 40 of the crew of the *Alabama*.

The *Kearsarge*, except in her rigging, had suffered very little; there were only three casualties on board.

There was a great deal of discussion concerning the neutrality of Great Britain during the Civil War, but inasmuch as the North received cannons, rifles, ammunition, and every form of supplies for military purposes from England, the building of ships for the Confederacy,—ships that were manned by Confederate sailors,—surely constituted no greater breach of neutrality.

The Privateer Florida.—The *Florida* was the companion ship to the *Alabama*. She was finished in the fall of 1862, and entered Mobile Bay Sept. 4. Here she remained until the latter part of December, when she set out on her cruise among the West Indies, approaching within 60 miles of New York. Within three months 15 vessels had been captured by her. The *Florida* crossed the Atlantic during the summer of 1863 and was detained at Brest during part of September. In crossing the Atlantic she came in close to New York and captured the steamer *Electric Spark*, bound for New Orleans. From here she directed her course to the port of Bahia, Brazil,—a neutral port,—where she anchored. At this time the Federal vessel *Wachusett*, commanded by Napoleon Collins, was also laying in the harbor of Bahia.

In an ungarded moment, when half of the *Florida's* crew was ashore, the Federal commander in the dark hours of midnight, October 6, made an endeavor to sink the *Florida*; but failing in this, they captured the vessel and towed her out to sea. She was eventually sunk in Hampton Roads. This was an outrageous disregard of all the courtesies due to Brazil as a neutral nation,—a wanton violation of every principle of civilized warfare. The Federal Secretary of State apolo-

gized to the Brazilian Government, but the *Florida* was retained by the Federals as a prize of war. The *Florida* in a year had destroyed or captured 22 vessels.

Other vessels of the Confederates which did great damage to Northern commerce were the *Tallahassee*, the *Chickamauga*, the *Georgia*, the *Shenandoah*, and the *Stonewall*. The damage done to Northern commerce by Confederate vessels during the Civil War was enormous. Two hundred or more Northern vessels had been captured or destroyed, amounting to the large sum of \$15,000,000, including their cargoes. The United States Merchant Marine has never recovered its former prestige. Its commerce was permanently injured.

CHAPTER XXXVII

GENERAL PRICE'S LAST INVASION OF MISSOURI

After the battle of Chickamauga General Rosecrans had been transferred to the command of the State of Missouri. Having reached St. Louis in January, 1864, he found the political conditions of the State in great turmoil. The successes of the Confederates in Arkansas had restored this State practically to the hands of Gen. Kirby Smith and General Price. There were thousands of Southern sympathizers who had been kept from joining and aiding the Confederacy by the strong hand with which the Federal Government held Missouri. Many secret societies were formed for the purpose of defeating and setting aside the Federal Government in this State.

The soldier, Gen. Sterling Price,—who was ever eager to regain his native State to the Confederacy,—about the middle of September, 1864, and 10,000 men under the command of General Shelby, General Marmaduke and General Fagan, began their advance from Poplar Bluff. On September 23 they occupied Bloomfield, Mo., a town in Stoddard County that had been abandoned on September 21 by the Federals. From here Price moved to Pilot Knob.

The Federals under Gen. H. S. Ewing made a stand here on the 27th but were forced to evacuate and move to Rolla. The Confederates occupied this place, which was 86 miles south of St. Louis, but their delay here had given Rosecrans time to concentrate sufficient forces at St. Louis to make the city secure.

General Price now moved northward toward the Missouri

River. A large force of Federal cavalry under Pleasanton and Sanborn occupied Jefferson City on October 8. They were ordered to follow and harass the Confederate army.

By the middle of October Price's army entered California, 25 miles west of Jefferson City, and destroyed part of the railroad and depot. The army under Price had not received the recruits that had been expected, and many of the soldiers, finding themselves on native soil, left his army. Price, on the 13th, left Booneville and reached Lexington on October 17. The Federal cavalry under Pleasanton, consisting of at least 7000 men, on October 22, near Independence, Mo., defeated a part of the Confederate army, under General Fagan.

On October 23 General Pleasanton, in conjunction with General Curtis, attacked General Price on the Big Blue River near Westport. The fight began early in the morning and continued with great fury until 1 p. m., when the Confederates were forced to give way, and moved rapidly to Little Santa Fé. The combined forces of Curtis and Pleasanton now followed in rapid pursuit; and the Confederates were attacked early in the morning of the 25th near Fort Scott.

The Confederates had lost 8 pieces of artillery, about 1000 men, and 1500 small arms; and Generals Cabell and Marmaduke had been captured.

General Price now turned south and crossed the Arkansas River above Fort Smith, returning later to southern Arkansas, where (December 8) he went into winter quarters at Washington. His army was in a bad plight; it had suffered greatly from the invasion and from the severity of the winter. This invasion,—which practically ended military activity west of the Mississippi,—had been to the Confederates a failure, but for the destruction of a large amount of property and the capture of many horses, cattle, and a quantity of forage, much of which was lost during the retreat. The reputation of General Rosecrans suffered greatly because,

with a much superior force to oppose Price, he was allowed to make such an extensive and destructive raid throughout the whole State, though the Federal loss in men had been slight. There were only 250 killed, wounded, and missing.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

THE YEAR 1864 IN VIRGINIA. GENERAL GRANT'S MOVEMENTS AFTER CHATTANOOGA

Grant's brilliant movements at Chattanooga and his subsequent defeat of Bragg had brought him great renown. President Lincoln by telegram acknowledged his wonderful achievement in the following words:

"Understanding that your lodgment at Chattanooga and Knoxville is now secure, I wish to tender you, and all under your command, my more than thanks — my profoundest gratitude — for the skill, courage and perseverance with which you and they, over so great difficulties, have effected that important object. God bless you all."

On December 17 Congress voted unanimously a resolution of thanks to Grant and to the officers and soldiers that had fought under his command. In January, 1864, General Grant visited his sick son at St. Louis. During the month of February, the rank of lieutenant-general was revived by Congress,—a rank that had been held by but two men: Washington and Scott. On March 10, 1864, General Grant received notice from President Lincoln of his appointment as lieutenant-general.

The same day that this commission was received, Grant went to Brandy Station, Va., to consult with Meade, who was still in command of the Army of the Potomac. On the 11th of March General Grant left for Nashville, where he was to meet General Sherman, and where they formulated a plan of

concerted action against the Confederacy. On March 23, Grant was again in Washington and at once established his headquarters in the field, preparatory to the fearful struggle which was to follow his hammering methods. We have seen how his plans were carried out by Sherman in the West.

The Two Armies.—The Federal army at Culpeper and Lee's army around Orange remained inactive,—but for drilling, recruiting, and equipping,—during the early winter months of 1864. All energy was being put forth by both Federals and Confederates to prepare for the terrible contest that was soon to follow.

Cavalry Raids.—During the latter part of February, 1864, a cavalry expedition of 6000 Federals, under the command of General Custer and General Kilpatrick and a body of 800 men under Col. Ulric Dahlgren were sent out to raid the country about Richmond.

Custer reached Charlottesville, where he surprised a body of Stuart's cavalry; but he was forced to retire to Madison Court House.

Kilpatrick by March 1 had come within a short distance of Richmond, but was driven in rapid retreat across the Chickahominy and down the Peninsula, and arrived at Fortress Monroe, having lost 150 men and having accomplished very little.

Dahlgren's Raid.—Dahlgren, who had planned to cross to the south side of the James River and coöperate with Kilpatrick, did not reach the outer lines around Richmond until late in the afternoon of March 2. Here he was attacked by the militia and the home guards, who scattered his band. By the night of March 3 he reached the Mattaponi at Dabney Ferry, where he was killed, while the band of men with him were either captured or killed. The purpose of this bold raid, as verified by orders and letters, was to burn Richmond and liberate the Federal prisoners.

CHAPTER XXXIX

THE WILDERNESS CAMPAIGN

Strength of the Federal Army and the Confederate.—

Every effort had been made by the Confederates to equip and recruit their much-thinned ranks south of the Rapidan. The devoted women of the Southland had worked diligently to supply the soldiers with socks and clothes.

By May 8 Lee's whole effective command under his three lieutenants,—Hill, Ewell, and Longstreet,—consisted of more than 50,000,—a force that was not appreciably strengthened until May 24. Lee, however, made his position south of the Rapidan as strong as possible up to a point three miles below Raccoon Ford. Hill's and Ewell's divisions extended ten miles on each side of Orange Court House, while Longstreet's division lay at Gordonsville, 13 miles southwest of their line. By the latter part of May Lee had 62,000 men and 224 field guns, with which to combat the formidable army under Grant and his lieutenants.

After Grant had been given supreme command he left immediate charge of the Army of the Potomac to Meade. By April 23 Grant had reorganized the great Army of the Potomac, consisting of 125,000 men, which included the 30,000 men under Burnside. Butler's 33,000 on the James, and 20,000 men under Sigel were to coöperate with Grant. The first Grand Army had 318 field guns, and was fully equipped with every necessary munition of war. The United States Government had been unsparing in its effort to supply Grant's army. Hancock, Warren, and Sedgwick commanded respectively the second, fifth, and sixth divisions of the Army of the

Potomac under Meade. Sheridan, who had been recently transferred from the West, was in command of the cavalry.

On Thursday, May 4, at 6 a. m., the army, led by Meade and Grant, crossed the Rapidan at Ely and Germanna Fords and threatened Lee's right flank. All the Army of the Potomac, except the wagon trains and Burnside's Ninth Corps, had crossed the Rapidan during the day.

First Day's Battle of the Wilderness.—General Lee did not dispute Grant's passage of the Rapidan, but on the morning of May 4 left his headquarters at Orange Court House and with Ewell's corps, two divisions of Hill's corps, artillery and cavalry, marched along the Orange Turnpike and Plank Road toward Wilderness Tavern. Longstreet, who was at Gordonsville with two divisions, was ordered to follow, and a special guide was sent to direct him. But this guide was dismissed, which was probably the cause of the General's losing his way and not getting into position until the 6th of May.

The Wilderness was a wild and weird region that lay south of the Rapidan, near its junction with the Rappahannock. Fredericksburg lay to the east, Orange Court House to the west, and Spottsylvania Court House to the south. The country was more fitted for the denizens of the forest than for the maneuvering of great armies, being covered with a jungle of undergrowth,—scrub-oak, pine, and sassafras trees,—with a few small tobacco fields, now deserted, and intersected by crude woodland roads and narrow ravines. Here it was almost impossible to use effectively either artillery or cavalry.

The battle of the Wilderness was one of the most terrible, bloody, and decisive battles of the great war. At 5 o'clock Thursday morning, May 5, 1864, according to plans agreed upon by the Federals, Warren began his march on the Orange Plank Road to Parker's Store. Sedgwick was to support Warren on the right as far as the Wilderness Tavern; General Hancock was to extend his Sixth Corps to Shade Grove Church, joining Warren on the left. Sheridan was to move

with his cavalry toward the Confederates near Hamilton Crossing, while Wilson's cavalry division was advanced to Craig Meeting-house.

At the junction of the Stevensburg Plank Road and the old turnpike was the old Wilderness Tavern. Brock Road branched from Stevensburg Plank Road before it intersected the Plank Road pike and ran due south to Spottsylvania; while five miles to the southeast the Plank Road and Turnpike intersected at Wilderness Church.

About noon Warren's advance forces, under Griffin and Wardsworth, met and engaged Johnson's division of General Ewell's corps near Wilderness Tavern. Rodes' division now came to Johnson's aid, driving back in considerable confusion the men under Griffin and Wardsworth, who lost 3000 soldiers and several guns. Reinforcements under Getty and McCandless checked the scattered Federals. Getty stoutly resisted the advance of Hill. Hancock had been pressing as fast as possible along the Brock Road in order to reach its intersection with the Plank Road before Hill should arrive there. About 3 p. m. he advanced to Getty's aid. The battle became fierce and sanguinary. The divisions of Heth, Wilcox and Anderson of Hill's corps, repulsed Hancock's attacks and the Federal general was unable to drive Hill back on the plank road. Night closed the first day's battle of the Wilderness.

Second Day's Battle of the Wilderness.— While Ewell and Hill were fighting the first day's battle Longstreet had gotten almost hopelessly lost in his endeavor to reach them, and he camped the night of the 5th near Verdierville, some 10 miles to their rear. It was not until the afternoon of the 6th that Longstreet was able to effect a junction with Hill, which was just in the nick of time to save the Confederates a severe defeat.

Daybreak of May 6 found Grant's one hundred and twenty-five thousand men in a well arranged army extending over

a distance of five miles. They were endeavoring to carry out plans to destroy Lee's two corps,— one under Ewell on the left, and the other under Hill on the right. Lee, outwardly calm, was anxiously awaiting the arrival of Longstreet,— apparently his only hope. The Federal right was commanded by Sedgwick, the left by Hancock, while Warren and Burnside were in the center, facing the west. Grant's orders had been, "Attack along the whole line at five in the morning," but Lee forestalled him by attacking Sedgwick on the Federal right.

The fearful carnage was most terrible between Hill's corps and Hancock's corps, where the fighting was heaviest. The troops of Hill had been driven back a mile beyond their advance position. The situation looked dangerous for the Confederates, but about seven o'clock Hancock was forced to rearrange his troops. The pause was a great gain to Hill, who was able to bring up his remaining divisions.

Hancock resumed the advance after the loss of two hours of precious time. It soon became evident to Hancock that he had Longstreet now also to face. During this particular period of the battle of the Wilderness General Lee had placed himself at the head of Gregg's Texans in the charge but was finally persuaded to go to the rear. Longstreet's promptness in deploying his troops and his own personal bravery were masterful. About 11 a. m., Hancock began to fall back toward Brock's Road. His situation, under the irresistible pressure of the troops of Hill and Longstreet was becoming critical. Gen. Samuel Wardsworth had been killed and his men scattered in rout. It seemed as if the Confederates were destined to gain a complete victory.

A fatal pause now occurred in the rapidly advancing line of the triumphant Confederates. What had happened? Only the same misfortune had occurred in the second battle of the Wilderness that had befallen at Chancellorsville and at Shiloh: the head of the great throbbing impulse of the

mighty advance had been stricken low. Johnston was killed at Shiloh at the height of success, Jackson was wounded unto death by his own men at Chancellorsville, and so now Longstreet was shot down and his friend General Jenkins killed by a volley from Mahone's division of his own corps. Fortunate for Hancock that he had prepared breastworks to fall back to for protection.

Lee now ordered the charge of Longstreet's and Hill's troops against Hancock, behind the breastworks. To add to the horror of this awful day, a fire had broken out in the forest destroying many men whom bullets had only disabled. The Federal breastworks became wrapped in flame; Lee's men pushed their advantage and drove the Federals in confusion before them but were in turn forced to retreat, being attacked by Gibbon's division, which came to reinforce Hancock.

General Ewell, protected behind his breastworks, had repulsed the repeated attacks of Sedgwick. About twilight the impetuous General Gordon, whose star began now to shine with marked brilliancy among the galaxy of Confederate generals, made a sudden attack upon the extreme right of Sedgwick's corps. Generals Seymour and Shaler of Ricketts' division, consisting of 4000 men, were captured and a veritable panic was created all along the right wing. The density of the forest and the darkness, lighted only by the lurid glow of the burning woods, closed this most heart rending day.

Results: Indescribable horror, overwhelming misery, countless thousands,—dead from bullet wounds, bayonet thrusts, and hand-to-hand blows,—lying buried in the depths of the tangled underbrush or dying in ravines, suffocating and burning in the heated blast of the aftermath. The dry narrative of Federal loss,—269 officers and 3019 soldiers killed, 15,420 wounded and missing,—or the Confederate loss,—8000 killed and wounded,—only adds to the tragedy a cold matter-of-fact truth.

No definite results were accomplished other than to awaken the hope that if the Federals continued to be killed off in such large numbers Lee might have to contend against smaller odds. No such battle had ever been fought either in ancient or modern times.

CHAPTER XL

MOVEMENT TO SPOTTSYLVANIA. THE BATTLE

Grant, finding it impracticable to turn Lee's right wing, shortly after nightfall of the 7th ordered his forces to march southeast by way of Chancellorsville to Spottsylvania Court House. Lee, discovering Grant's purpose, ordered Anderson, who was in command of Longstreet's corps to hasten toward Spottsylvania. Warren's column, of Grant's advance, was unavoidably delayed, and when the Federals arrived at 8 o'clock on Sunday morning, May 8, there, awaiting them, was Lee's army between Grant and Richmond.

Sheridan's Raid.— On May 9, while Grant and Lee were making the movements that were to culminate in the fearful and bloody battle of Spottsylvania, Gen. Phil. Sheridan with three divisions of cavalry,— comprising 10,000 well-equipped men under Merritt, Wilson, and Gregg,— set out to destroy the Virginia Central Railroad, engage the Confederate cavalry, gather supplies, and threaten Richmond. Crossing the Po, Ta, and North Anna, Sheridan captured Beaver Dam Station, destroyed several miles of railroad cars with large supplies of rations, and recaptured several hundred Federal soldiers.

At Beaver Dam the Federal flank and rear were heavily engaged and sustained considerable loss in a fight with Gen. J. E. B. Stuart's cavalry.

Death of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart.— By daylight on May 11 Sheridan had passed Ashland Station, while Stuart had made a detour and placed himself between Richmond and Sheridan at Yellow Tavern, only six miles north of the Confederate capital. With a force one-third of that of the enemy Stuart

engaged the Federal army. During this terrific encounter he was mortally wounded, dying the following day at Richmond.

The death of Stuart was an irreparable loss to Lee and to the Confederacy. He was the eyes and ears of his army. Ever vigilant, zealous and devoted to the cause he fought for, one of the greatest if not the greatest cavalry leader of the civil war. General Lee in his report of May 20, announcing Stuart's death, said:

“General Stuart was second to none in valor, in zeal and unflinching devotion to his country. His achievements form a conspicuous part of the history of this army, with which his name and services will be forever associated. To military capacity of a high order and to the noble virtues of a soldier, he added the brightest graces of a pure life, guided and sustained by the Christian Faith and Hope.”

On May 14 Sheridan reached Hoxall Landing, obtained from Butler supplies, and rested three days; then, May 25, he returned by White and Hanover Court House to join the Army of the Potomac, having materially assisted Grant by his operations.

Alsop Farm.—Anderson, of Longstreet's corps, on his arrival outside of Spottsylvania had taken a position on the crest of a hill overlooking the open ground, known as Alsop's Farm. At this place the road from Todd's Tavern forked, one branch leading to the Court House and the other to Laurel Hill.

At 8 o'clock, Sunday morning, May 8, Robinson's two brigades, of Warren's corps, not knowing Anderson's position, were preparing to cross this space and ascend the slope toward Spottsylvania when the Confederates opened on them with a terrific fire from the ridge. The Federals were much confused, and after great loss in the short space of half an

hour, fell back to the woods for protection. Griffin's division was also repulsed, and not until Warren's entire corps had arrived were the Federals able to dislodge the Confederates. The Federals lost in killed and wounded 1300, while the Confederates' loss had been very small.

Warren now awaited the arrival of General Sedgwick's corps, which came up during the afternoon, and made two assaults on the Confederate lines near sunset, but they were unsuccessful. The 8th of May had been unfortunate for the Federals; for Lee was well intrenched on the ridge before Grant's army at Spottsylvania.

On the morning of May 9 Hancock's large corps arrived. The day was spent by both armies in intrenching and preparing for the bloody conflict that was to follow. Burnside's corps occupied the left, then came Sedgwick's and Warren's in the center, with Hancock's command on the right. From their position the Confederate sharpshooters were able to considerably annoy the Federals.

Death of General Sedgwick.—In the morning General Sedgwick and some of his staff were attending to the posting of guns. He had just made a humorous remark concerning the nervousness of some of his men, when a bullet from a Confederate sharpshooter's gun pierced his face just below the left eye, causing instant death. He was undoubtedly one of the most competent and trusted generals in the Army of the Potomac. He was much beloved by all who knew him and was known and liked by Lee and others on the Confederate side. Gen. Horatio Wright succeeded to the command of the Sixth Corps.

Battle of May 10.—On the morning of May 10 General Hancock made an attempt to cross the small river Po, but an untimely order from Meade to withdraw left Barlow's division on the south side. The brigades of Brooks and Brown were vigorously attacked by part of General Early's division and forced to retire after a heavy loss. Meanwhile Warren and

Wright were making a general advance against Laurel Hill,—the most formidable part of Lee's line. Webb and Carrol had made the attack in the forenoon without success.

By 5 p. m. Hancock had united his corps with Warren, and a general assault was made; but it resulted only in a repulse and the death of thousands of the brave Federals. An even more determined effort was made before dark by the Federals to carry the position; that resulted again in failure and great loss of life. To the right of Wright's corps Col. Emory Upton, with twelve regiments had made a successful assault on a weak point in the Confederate line, capturing about a thousand men; but he was forced to retire. This was the only partial success the Federals obtained during the day, which had cost them nearly 6000 men.

There was no fighting on Wednesday, May 11. Grant sent this message along with his other reports to the Secretary of War: "I propose to fight it out on this line, if it takes all summer."

During the night of the 11th Grant ordered Hancock's whole corps to move around so as to make an attack in the early morning on Lee's right and center. This attack was to be made at a point where a salient was formed and held by Johnson of Ewell's corps.

Battle of May 12.—At 4:30 a. m., Burnside's Ninth Corps and Hancock's command moved to the attack through a thick fog. Barlow's, Birney's, and Mott's columns led the advance, with Gibbon's in reserve. The charge was made up a heavily-wooded slope; the attack was a complete surprise to the Confederates who, with desperate valor,—fought hand to hand; but Johnson's brigade and that of George H. Stewart were overcome. The Federals had captured twenty guns, several thousand small arms and three thousand prisoners. It was a brilliant and gallant coup,—a splendid beginning for the Federals. General Wright had not been so successful. Lee now concentrated his efforts to dislodge Hancock.

This famous salient was afterward known as "the bloody angle." It was one of the most stubborn and sanguinary points of contest of any battle during the great war. Whole companies and regiments on both sides were disorganized. Lee was resolved to recapture the salient to which Hancock had been forced to retire, and Grant had practically concentrated his whole army to hold this point. The awful tide of battle rolled and surged for twenty hours, and only midnight closed the fearful combat. Trees were literally cut down by the terrible rain of cannon shot and musketry fire.

It was not a victory of decisive character for either side. Hancock held the position within 300 yards of the Confederates' works,— a position he had taken in the early morning. The Federals lost in killed, wounded, and missing about 10,000. The loss of the Confederates was: killed and wounded, 6000; prisoners, 3000. Lee's position was still as strong as before.

The rain, which had now set in continued to fall for two days, and there was no farther fighting of a general character at Spottsylvania.

In the nine days since the Federal army had crossed the Rapidan it had lost in killed and wounded 30,368 men, with 5,640 missing and prisoners,— a total of 36,008. No definite result had been accomplished. Grant could fill his losses with fresh men, but the dead in Lee's army could not be replaced. The Confederacy was becoming exhausted by the hammering and could not well afford to lose one for even two or three.

From the 13th to the 18th of May the two armies remained confronting each other. Grant continually tried to overlap Lee on the right, but each move was met in front with breastworks and successfully repulsed assaults.

On May 19 Grant prepared to make a movement toward North Anna. His plans were discerned by the ever-vigilant Lee, who sent Ewell during the afternoon to make a demon-

stration against the Federals' right. Gen. R. O. Tyler was in command of this flank. This demonstration delayed Grant's movements until the 20th. Grant had lost since the 12th of May some 7000 men, making a total of 43,008 men in two weeks.

Beauregard Baffles Butler.—General Butler,—who with 30,000 men was to coöperate with Grant in his advance toward Richmond,—reached Bermuda Hundred on May 7 at the same time that the van of General Beauregard's army reached Petersburg. Butler had been very confident of his ability to keep Beauregard from coöperating with Lee, and, in fact, felt as if he were about equally able to contest with Lee. By May 12 Butler's column was within 9 miles of Richmond after a march during which several small conflicts had occurred between the two forces. The Confederate defenses were apparently so strong that the Federals decided to wait until the 16th to make the assault.

The night of May 15 was clear; the moon shone brightly over the Federal camp.

It was not until near dawn that a heavy mist, floating from the river, covered the ground where the Confederates were situated. Beauregard had been carefully studying the position of the Federals. Butler's right flank lacked a mile of reaching the James, and the Confederates' purpose was to turn Smith on the Federals' right flank and cut off the rear. The attack was well timed and sudden, bringing disaster and defeat to Butler's army. The retreat was, however, effected by the timely arrival of Ames' division of Gilmore's corps.

This fight had occurred at Drewry's Bluff. The Confederates' forces aggregated 15,000; the Federals', 30,000. The Federals were cooped up between the forks of the James and Appomattox and prevented from advancing nearer to Richmond. Butler had lost 4000 men; the Confederates, 3000.

Later Butler sent two-thirds of his army to join Grant on the Chickahominy.

CHAPTER XLI

MILITARY MOVEMENTS IN THE KANAWHA VALLEY AND THE SHENANDOAH

General Cook had command at this time of the Federal forces in the Kanawha Valley, with Averill in command of the cavalry. On May 10, with 2000 cavalymen, Averill moved toward Wytheville and New Bridge, destroying a large part of the Tennessee and Virginia Railroad (May 19). He was defeated by Morgan, but at length rejoined Crook at Union. Crook, with 6000 infantry had a hard fight near Dublin Station with the Confederates under McCausland, and lost about 700 men.

Sigel Defeated at New Market.— On May 15 Sigel was attacked at New Market and after a severe loss of 700 men, 6 field pieces, and 1000 small arms, fled before Breckinridge as far as Cedar Creek, near Strasburg. General Hunter, who had been in command in the Carolinas, superseded Sigel in this command.

Hunter in the Valley.— In June, 1864, the Confederate forces west of the Blue Ridge were small. General Jones and General McCausland were in command, for Breckinridge had been recalled to aid Lee in the defense of Richmond.

General Grant ordered Hunter with 9000 men to move upon Staunton. On June 5 at Piedmont, near Middle River, they had a fiercely contested battle with the forces under Jones and McCausland, in which the Confederates were defeated, General Jones was killed, 1500 men were captured, and 3 pieces of artillery were taken.

On June 8 Crook united his forces with Hunter's, making

an army of 18,000. Hunter now moved by way of Lexington toward Lynchburg. Grant had expected him to join Sheridan at Gordonsville. On June 16 Lee had sent General Early to intercept Hunter's movement against Lynchburg. Hunter was unable to attain any success in the assault against Lynchburg and on June 18 began a retreat toward Salem.

On June 19 General Early attacked the retreating Federals, taking 13 guns. He had expected to get supplies for his army at Meadow Ridge, but all the stores had been captured. It was not until June 27, after nine days of great suffering, that Hunter was able to obtain supplies at Gauley River. At the end of a long and severe march he reached the upper Potomac. Early now moved down the Shenandoah toward Maryland and Pennsylvania.

Butler, Sigel, and Hunter had signally failed in their main purposes, but they had accomplished much; for with every railroad destroyed, all provisions burned, many prisoners captured and numberless men placed *hors de combat* the South was greatly weakened.

CHAPTER XLII

GRANT'S MOVEMENTS AFTER SPOTTSYLVANIA. COLD HARBOR

On the night of May 20 Grant ordered his forces to move toward Bowling. Hancock who led the advance crossed the Mattaponi River at Milford's Bridge and about a mile from the river formed a line of battle on a small range of hills. General Lee had sent Longstreet in advance and, being on the inside line, by the afternoon of May 23 had reached the North Anna, crossed it, and made a line of defense on the south side of the stream.

The lines formed by Lee were remarkably strong. They consisted of two long lines converging in an apex at the river. Lee's army was here reinforced by Breckinridge and Pickett, with their divisions, and by Hoke with his brigade of Early's division (about 7500 men),—the first reinforcement since Grant began his campaign.

Grant had made two crossings of the river, one by Hancock, near the Richmond and Potomac Bridges, called "Taylor's Bridge." This crossing was begun near sundown, and was effected after a loss of about 200 men by the Federals and about 50 by the Confederates.

Warren and Wright crossed at Jericho Ford without opposition; but were attacked with considerable energy by Colonel Brown and part of Wilson's division of Hill's corps, later assisted by Heth's division. Warren lost 350 men, but repulsed the Confederates and captured 1000 men.

The center, under Burnside, made an attempt on the 24th to cross the river, but was unable to effect a crossing without a great loss. Grant was completely checkmated and on the night of the 26th ordered his army corps to recross to the

north side of the North Anna and head toward the east, so as to cross the Pamunkey, which is formed by the junction of the North and South Anna. On the morning of Saturday, May 28, Grant's army crossed the Pamunkey at Hanoverton,—15 miles from Richmond and 16 miles from White House, his new basis of supplies on the York River.

On the 29th Grant's army advanced about three miles. Hancock's corps marched toward Tolopotomy Creek, with Warren's on the left toward Shady Grove Church and Wright's toward Hanover Court House. On May 30 Gen. Baldy Smith reached White House preparatory to forming a junction with Grant. On May 31 Sheridan captured Old Cold Harbor. In order to hold it it was necessary for Wright and Smith to hasten to his aid with their corps on the 1st of June. The Federal loss on that day was 2000.

Cold Harbor.—It was Thursday morning, June 2. The great army of Grant, consisting of 113,000 men, faced Lee's army of 58,000 on the old battle-ground over which Lee and McClellan had fought two years before.

Grant's line of battle extended from Tolopotomy Creek by Bethesda Church and from Cold Harbor to the Chickahominy River. Sheridan, with a very large body of cavalry, was guarding the left flank of the army and the lower fords of the river as far as White House. Wilson's cavalry guarded the right flank. Hancock's corps was on the left, then came Wright and Smith, with Warren and Burnside on the right. Lee's army was strongly intrenched, with A. P. Hill on the right, Longstreet in the center, and Ewell on the left, facing Burnside. Lee now held the ground that McClellan had held two years before. A heavy storm prevented Grant from attacking on the evening of June 2. His order was to attack all along the line at 4:30 a. m., June 3.

Battle, June 3.—At the early hour of dawn the Federal army began the forward movement. Through a drizzling rain the great army moved swiftly toward the intrenchments

of the Confederates, who were fully prepared to meet them. A massed attack was made by the Federals apparently without looking for the weak points in the Confederate line. Hancock on the left, according to orders, sent Barlow's division forward in double line of battle, but after some small success with the first line he was fearfully repulsed before the second line had come up. Hill's men rallied in a strong position and drove Barlow's division back. Gibbon's division advanced but was checked by a swamp and by the destructive firing in their faces, and after great loss fell back. Hancock in the short space of half an hour lost about 3000 men. Wright and Smith, in the center, had no better success in their endeavor, losing as many as the left corps; while the efforts of Warren and Burnside were equally as futile. Wilson's cavalry was badly beaten by Wade Hampton.

General Grant, after the first terrible repulse, made an inspection and ordered the attack to be renewed and Meade sent the communication to the corps commanders. But it met with a positive refusal from Gen. Baldy Smith, nor was any advance made by the others; for it was clear enough that obedience meant only a useless slaughter of men.

The firing had practically ceased at 7:30 a. m., by which time there had fallen from the Federal ranks the astounding number of 12,000 men. Lee's loss had been very small in comparison.

There were only skirmishes for the next three days. On the 7th of June a truce was made for a few hours between the two armies that they might bury their dead.

Of this battle General Grant said: "Cold Harbor is the only battle I ever fought that I would not fight over again under the circumstances."

Grant's Movement Across the Chickahominy and the James.—On June 7 Grant sent Sheridan with the divisions of Torbert and Gregg to destroy the railroad bridges in Lee's rear. The railroad at Chesterville Station was destroyed,

also part of the Virginia Central at Trevillian Station, where Torbert had a severe encounter with Wade Hampton's cavalry. At Louisa Court House the engagement was renewed, and Sheridan was forced to retreat by Spottsylvania and rejoin Grant's army.

Grant, after the great disaster of Cold Harbor, saw the insurmountable difficulties in the way of capturing Richmond by the Peninsular route. On Sunday night, June 12 he began his movements for the purpose of crossing the James River.

Lee was not unaware of Grant's movement, but he felt so confident after Cold Harbor that he would be able to check Grant's advance toward Richmond that he first sent Breckinridge into the valley to check Hunter and on the 13th forwarded General Early's division of 8000 men and 24 pieces of artillery to join him. Lee then crossed the James River near Drewry's Bluff.

By noon of the 16th Grant's whole army, without meeting with any reverses, had crossed the James at Windmill Point, 8 miles below Bermuda Hundred.

Results of Grant's Campaign After Crossing the Rapidan.—In forty-three days an army averaging always more than 110,000 men had been pushing its way through wildernesses and swamps; crossing unfordable rivers; assaulting intrenchments and breastworks defended by an army of from 55,000 to 70,000 men,—whose *morale* was as good as any the world has ever seen and commanded by a chieftain and lieutenants, who have few equals in the pages of history. Only by a constant supply of provisions and reinforcements could such a military movement have been made. Grant's tactics have been severely criticized on account of his useless slaughter of men. By vastly superior numbers only could he have sustained the fearful loss. Breastworks and intrenchments had been repeatedly assailed with terrible slaughter just as General Lee had planned. Sixty thousand soldiers

had fallen from the ranks of the Federal army,— a number that equalled the total fighting force of the Confederates. Lee had lost about 25,000 men,— taking an average figure of the best authorities. The Confederates had scarcely been able to replace their loss; and there were still to be ten months of warfare and suffering. During this campaign Grant had at his command 192,000 men, while Lee's forces from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor had aggregated 78,000. A splendid commentary upon the skill of Lee as a commander and the fortitude of the Southern soldiers.

CHAPTER XLIII

GRANT ESTABLISHES HIMSELF BEFORE PETERSBURG

Grant had expected to make an easy capture of Petersburg, but by the delay of his lieutenants he was forestalled by Beauregard, who was reinforced by Lee.

Petersburg, the objective of Grant's immediate move, was the key to southern railroad communication with Richmond. It was a city of 18,000 population, situated on the south bank of the Appomattox, 22 miles south of Richmond, and 10 miles from City Point on the James. Five railroads from southern points converged there: the Weldon, running into the Carolinas; the Norfolk; a short road to City Point, and the South Side running to Lynchburg. A strong series of intrenchments and redoubts protected the town.

Beauregard Saves Petersburg.—June 15, at 7 p. m., General Smith with his 18,000 men had driven back the 2200 Confederates occupying the outer works on the northeast side of the town. The corps commanded by Hancock and Burnside began to arrive during the morning of the 16th, and at 6 p. m., a combined attack was begun by the Federals, who numbered about 50,000 to whom was opposed Beauregard in command of 10,000 Confederates. The Federal attack was repelled after a loss of 2000 of their men.

On the 17th, at 4 a. m., the attack was renewed by Potter's division of Burnside's corps, which met with some success. During the afternoon, when Warren's corps came up to reinforce Burnside and the attacks were renewed, the position of the Confederates would have been precarious but for the timely arrival of a fine brigade under General Gracie. These men overleaped the breastworks captured by Burnside, drove

out the Federals, and captured two thousand Federal soldiers.

On June 18 Beauregard had command of 20,000 men and was able to repel the repeated assaults of the Federals, whose forces had now increased to nearly 90,000. The fighting continued until after nightfall. Since the 15th the Federal losses had been very heavy, due to repeated assaults on intrenched positions. Between 8000 and 9000 soldiers had been killed, wounded or made prisoners.

The Federals now gave up the idea of capturing Petersburg by direct assault.

An attempt was made by the Second and Sixth Corps of the Federal army from June 21–25 to destroy the Weldon Railroad. The movement was badly managed, for a gap was left between the two divisions in the afternoon, and A. P. Hill, with a strong force made a sudden and impetuous attack upon the divisions of Gibbon's, Barlow and Mott. Great confusion prevailed, whole regiments were captured without a chance to fight, and 4 guns, 60 officers, and over 2000 men were taken, while 500 to 600 were killed or wounded. This occurred during the evening of June 22.

Wilson's Raid.— At 2 a. m., June 22, Wilson and Kantz, with 8000 cavalry and 16 guns, set out to coöperate with the Second and Sixth Corps in their efforts to destroy the Weldon Railroad and the supplies of the Confederates. Several hundred yards of the track were torn up at Reams Station, and water tanks, depots, and other supplies were also destroyed. The force moved by Dinwiddie Court House, thence north to Sutherland Station on the Petersburg and Lynchburg Railroad. At Ford's Station, about 21 miles from Petersburg, depots and stores were destroyed as well as several cars and locomotives. At Wilson Station Kantz's advance destroyed similar property.

By 3 p. m., June 25, the advance of the Federals came up to the covered bridge over the Staunton River. The Confed-

erates had collected here a large force of militia, and they checked the raiders, who were forced to withdraw. The Confederate cavalry on the 26th and 28th greatly harassed Kantz's advance, and chased them almost into the Federal lines before Petersburg. At Reams Station Kantz was badly used up and General Wilson's effort on his arrival to form a line of battle was futile. It was July 1 before he was able to conduct his scattered and worn cavalrymen in safety to the Federal lines, the Nottaway River having been crossed 30 miles from Petersburg by way of Cabin Point. Wilson had lost all of his 16 guns, the whole wagon-train, and 1500 prisoners, while all his sick and wounded were left at Reams Station. The whole force was in a pitiful condition. Gen. Wade Hampton and Gen. Fitzhugh Lee had, with a much smaller force, brought this disaster upon Wilson's regiments.

CHAPTER XLIV

EARLY'S MOVEMENT IN THE VALLEY

Before entering upon a narrative of the long, tedious siege of Petersburg by Grant, our attention must be turned to the last important, tragic and dramatic effort of Lee, by his Lieutenant-Gen. Jubal Early to divert Grant in his purpose before Petersburg. Early's campaign in the Shenandoah Valley,—a campaign that carried him within sight of the breastworks and fortifications of Washington,—his forced retreat, and complete discomfiture in the face of overwhelming odds, was no reflection on his ability, but only another symptom of the dying struggle of a brave foe.

Just previous to Early's movement into the Valley, General Burbridge, the Federal commander in Kentucky, prepared to coöperate with Hunter by moving into the southwestern part of Virginia.

Gen. J. H. Morgan's Last Campaign.—With a view to thwarting the purpose of Burbridge, Morgan made a sudden dash into Kentucky through Pound Gap, Pointsville, and Owensville to Maysville, capturing large supplies, and on the 8th of June at Mount Sterling he captured several hundred Federal soldiers. He now moved toward Lexington, but on June 15 near Cynthiana, close to the Kentucky Central Railroad at Licking River, he was surprised by General Burbridge with a force of 5000 men. Morgan's command of 1200 men was nearly out of ammunition and, becoming utterly demoralized, fled across the river and made their retreat toward the mountains. The purpose of the campaign which was to prevent Burbridge's junction with Hunter, had been accomplished.

The dashing career of General Morgan was soon to be ended. Many slanders clouded his name; bitter enemies branded him a bank robber and a bold, cruel, guerilla chieftain, but careful investigation since has revealed none of these charges to be true, and to-day the people of the whole South as well as those of his native State honor him as one of their noblest sons. While making his headquarters (September 3) at Greenville, Tennessee, at the house of a Mrs. Williams, he was betrayed by one of the inmates; at daybreak a strong body of Federals surrounded the place while his troops were camped on the outskirts of the town. In endeavoring to make his escape he was captured and soon afterward shot, then carried through the village across a mule's back. General Gillim, in command of the Federal forces seeing the indignities, recovered the body on a road one mile from town. It was covered with mud and scarcely recognizable. Under an escort and a flag of truce he returned the body of Morgan to the Confederates, and he was buried at Abingdon, Va., and later in the cemetery at Richmond. Such are some of the evils resulting from internecine warfare.

General Lee Dispatches Early Down the Valley.—The discomfiture and retreat of Hunter and Burbridge's failure to make a junction with him left the Shenandoah exposed and the back door of Washington open.

It was a bold conception of Lee's to send Early from his army around Richmond while he was facing Grant with an army of 115,000 men.

Despite the hot weather, Early with 20,000 men pushed forward so rapidly that by July 3 he had reached Martinsburg, driving Sigel across the river, and had captured the trains full of supplies destined, as was hoped,—for Hunter's famished army. Almost a panic ensued in the surrounding country. The President issued a special call for 25,000 militia from New York, Pennsylvania and Massachusetts.

These movements had forced General Grant to forward

to Washington the Sixth and Nineteenth Army Corps. This lightened the strain on Lee. Rickett's division was the advance force and reached Washington the night of July 6.

July 9. Battle at Monocacy Bridge.— On July 5 Gen. Lew Wallace, with all the available troops he could muster, took position at Monocacy Bridge on the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad; he was joined here by Rickett's division on the 8th. The Federals had 10 guns, 8000 infantry, and a small body of cavalry. At 9 a. m., July 9, General Early, with 16 guns and 10,000 men attacked Wallace and after seven hours of severe fighting drove him in retreat toward Baltimore. The Federals lost 2000 men, but the delay and exhaustion of the Confederates gave time for Wright's division and Emory's of the Nineteenth Corps to reach Washington.

On July 10 Early reached Rockville toward evening with 8000 infantry and 2000 cavalry. The march of 250 to 300 miles in twelve days necessitated a rest for a day. This allowed the Federal troops time to concentrate in the capital. On the 12th Early moved cautiously to within 4 miles of Washington. A severe skirmish occurred at Fort Stevens, the loss on both sides being 300 men. Aware that large forces were entering Washington, Early began a retreat across the Potomac at Edwards Ferry on the night of the 12th, carrying with him a large quantity of supplies, 2000 cattle and 5000 horses. After considerable skirmishing without any serious loss he reached Strasburg July 22.

Kernstown, July 24.— On July 24 at Kernstown, 4 miles south of Winchester a battle took place between Crook and his two divisions of infantry, supported by Averill's and Duffie's cavalry, and Early's army. The Federals were badly beaten and driven through Winchester toward Bunker Hill, sustaining a loss of 1200 men. On the 26th they crossed the Potomac into Maryland.

Early now had full possession of the Valley and placed his army on the Opequon Creek. The result of Lee's strategy

caused 40,000 men to be sent from his front, but he did not have sufficient men to spare to prevent dire disaster from falling upon Early.

A small raid to Chambersburg by McCausland,—in which the town was burned, July 29,—and other raids by Mosby along the Potomac kept Maryland and Pennsylvania in a ferment of excitement.

Grant now determined to send a large army under Sheridan to destroy Early's army and everything in the valley that might be of use to the Southern army. This consisted of the Sixth Corps under Wright, the Nineteenth Corps under Emory, the Eighth Corps, under Crook, Averill's cavalry, Wilson's cavalry, and the first division of the Potomac Cavalry. Sheridan had at his command 35,000 infantry with twenty guns, and 10,000 cavalry. In addition there were 7000 men in the garrisons at Martinsburg and Harper's Ferry and other points to aid him. To oppose this formidable army and to save Petersburg, Lee sent Anderson, of Longstreet's old corps, with one division of infantry and cavalry to Early's assistance. The cavalry was commanded by Fitzhugh Lee.

CHAPTER XLV

SHERIDAN AGAINST EARLY IN THE VALLEY

Sheridan, who had concentrated his forces at Halltown, four miles west of Harper's Ferry, began at sunrise, August 10, a movement of the army toward Charlestown, which they reached in two hours. The Federal cavalry under Custer and Gibbs, had a skirmish with the Confederates near Berryville. On the 11th the Federal army continued its advance up the valley, while Early retreated slowly before them. Another sharp skirmish occurred four miles east of Winchester, at Sulphur Springs Bridge. Custer was driven back. The Confederates were able to protect their wagon-trains, allowing them to pass onward to Strasburg. On the 12th the Federal army bivouacked on the east side of Cedar Creek, while on the 13th Early's army withdrew from Strasburg to Fisher's Hill.

On the 13th, while Sheridan's army was occupying parts of Strasburg, General Mosby had unexpectedly attacked the rear of the Federal wagon-train near Berryville, about four miles from Snicker's Gap. Seventy-five wagons, 200 prisoners, 600 horses and mules, and 200 head of beeves were captured. It being reported that Longstreet's corps was in the rear, Sheridan, on August 15, ordered a retreat of his whole army. A small fight occurred at Crooked Run near the junction of the forks of the Shenandoah River.

On August 17 Early began to receive reinforcements under Fitzhugh Lee, Anderson and Kershaw.

Early now followed Sheridan's retreating army, capturing a number of prisoners, and causing considerable trepidation in the northern part of Virginia and in Maryland. By the

21st Sheridan again occupied Halltown, his right flank resting on the Potomac and his left on the Shenandoah.

The Confederate cavalry ranged from Winchester to Shepherdstown. A number of cavalry skirmishes ensued without any definite results. On the 25th Custer was driven across the Potomac at Shepherdstown.

By September 3 Sheridan had again advanced his army as far as Berryville, where breastworks were thrown up; but with the exception of skirmishing, no engagements of importance occurred.

A misunderstanding had occurred between Anderson and Early as to which was the ranking officer.

Instead of an offensive campaign a month passed without anything definite being done to cause Grant to send more troops from Lee's front.

On September 15, according to orders, Anderson, with Kershaw's division moved off toward Culpeper preparatory to rejoining Lee before Petersburg.

Early was now in the vicinity of Winchester, while Sheridan's army lay between Charlestown and Berryville.

Battle of Winchester.— Upon Anderson's withdrawal, Early had 9000 infantry and artillery with 3000 cavalry left under his command, to contend with Sheridan's splendid army. On Friday, September 16, Grant visited Sheridan at Charlestown, giving him liberty to conduct an offensive campaign against Early.

At 3 a. m., September 19, Sheridan ordered his infantry to move directly toward Winchester, while Averill and Torbert were to maneuver toward Early's left. The infantry of the Nineteenth Corps was delayed in the crossing of the Opequan. This delay allowed Early to make a junction with his forces from Bunker Hill.

About the middle of the forenoon the attack began against Ramseur's small division of 1500 men, supported by Lee's cavalry. The furious assaults of the Federals were checked

until 11 a. m., when Rodes' division came to the rescue; and soon afterwards General Rodes was killed. Gordon next arrived on the extreme left and last came Breckinridge's old division, under Wharton. The fighting was at the close range of 200 to 400 yards, and was desperate. Against great odds the Confederates retained their ground until 5 p. m., when the preponderant force of Sheridan overlapped the Confederate left, allowing Torbert's cavalry, under Merritt and Averill to get in the rear. The Confederate line of battle now broke and the men fled toward Fisher's Hill. The Confederates lost 2500 prisoners, 1000 killed, and 5 guns and 9 battle flags. The Federals lost 5000, killed and wounded.

Fisher Hill, September 22, 1864.—General Early now gathered his discomfited army at Fisher Hill, a place of great natural strength, situated on the north branch of the Shenandoah River with North Mountain on the west. His forces were not large enough to reach from mountain to mountain, which was eventually the cause of a flank movement again on his left.

On September 22 General Crook was ordered to the extreme right, and between 4 and 5 p. m., made a dashing attack upon the Confederates' center, and separated the two wings. General Torbert had been sent by way of Luray Valley to attack Early's rear, but the brave resistance at Milford by the Confederate cavalry under General Wickham saved him from this disaster.

The Confederates had lost 16 guns and 1100 prisoners. The Federals had lost about 500 men.

Early, who had lost half of his army and 21 guns, retreated to Port Republic, followed to Staunton by Sheridan's cavalry. Sheridan proceeded to devastate the valley of the Shenandoah, Luray and Little Fork.

On October 6 Sheridan withdrew his army northward, destroying everything that might furnish sustenance to man or beast. In Sheridan's report of October 7, 1864, he sums

up 2000 barns, filled with hay, wheat, and farming implements; over 70 mills, filled with wheat and flour; 4000 cattle, and 3,000 sheep. This was certainly carrying war to the extreme, causing starvation and destitution among the non-combatants, and can scarcely bear comparison with the consideration of Lee's orders to his soldiers in the Maryland and Pennsylvania Campaigns.

Battle of Cedar Creek, October 19, 1864.— During the last of September Early had been reinforced by Kershaw's division, making his strength equal to what it had been at Winchester.

On October 9 Rosser's cavalry, which had been hanging on Sheridan's rear, was attacked on the Strasburg Pike and driven back with a loss of 300 men, and 11 guns. On October 15 Sheridan had gone to Washington on business, and the army was left under Wright's command. The Federal army lay on the east side of Cedar Creek. General Crook, with the Eighth Corps, occupied the left flank, the Nineteenth Corps was in the center, Emory and the Sixth were on the right, while in reserve were Custer and Merritt with the cavalry.

Early now planned to take the Federals by surprise. At midnight of the 18th the Confederates began their movement over seven miles of rugged country, crossed the north fork of the Shenandoah about a mile from its junction with Cedar Creek, getting to the rear of the Federals' left flank. A heavy fog favored this most audacious undertaking. At dawn Gordon, who was leading, followed by Ramseur and Pegram, had crossed the ford, accompanied by Kershaw and Wharton.

Gordon, actively supported by the other division, with great vehemence assaulted Crook's corps, and within one quarter of an hour, the army, which had so gallantly fought at Winchester and had turned Early's left flank at Fisher Hill, was a mass of fugitives. The Nineteenth Corps under

Emory were soon just as seriously involved, while the Sixth Corps, with the assistance of the cavalry, made a short stand near Middleton, but soon gave way. At 9 o'clock the only hope of the Federal army was to protect their wagon-trains and draw off with as little loss as possible. The Federals having lost 24 guns and 1800 prisoners, fled from their camps in every direction. General Wright though wounded, did all in his power to restore order and at a good defensive line between Middleton and Newton the Federal troops were rallied. The Confederates' impetuosity of pursuit was quenched by their eagerness to plunder and possess the Federal camps; they did not anticipate a countercharge.

General Sheridan had spent the night at Winchester and was not aware of the battle until his army had been defeated, which fact was made plain to him by the fugitives he met as he rode rapidly toward the scene of action. By his presence confidence was restored; but order had been partially effected and means for resistance already made by Wright who had arrived on the battle-field at 10:30 a. m.

The failure of Early to hold his men in hand and of the Confederate lines to remain compact were the cause of more than one dismal disaster to their arms after they had just made a most daring and successful effort. At 3 p. m., Sheridan ordered an advance of the entire Federal line; and the thinned, disorganized lines of the Confederates made a stubborn fight.

At first the retreat was slow, but finally it became a rout. The result was that Early lost not only what he had captured but also 23 guns, 1500 prisoners, large numbers of horses, mules, wagons, and quantities of supplies. Early halted for the night at Fisher's Hill, while the Federals rested in their old camps on Cedar Creek. The Federals lost 5,200 men, killed, wounded and prisoners.

Cedar Creek was the end of the Valley Campaign. Sheridan, commanding a much larger and better equipped army,

had completely defeated the Confederates. His praises were sung by the whole North. His vigor and skillful maneuvers placed him among the greatest leaders of the war, and he was promoted to the position of major-general.

The greater part of Early's infantry, under the command of Gen. John B. Gordon returned to General Lee. On account of lack of forage the cavalry was furloughed and Early, with only a small portion of Wharton's division, remained at Staunton. Early was much censured in the South for the many disasters that had befallen him. He lost fifty guns in one month and about 15,000 men,—killed, wounded, and captured. His inferiority in number and equipment was greatly responsible for the disasters, for the small number of his cavalry men allowed him to be flanked, and the untimely leaving of Kershaw's division before the Battle of Winchester helped to bring disaster upon him, making a decisive defeat in a very critical period of the war. Some weeks later the remnant of his command was captured at Waynesboro, but General Early escaped. Near the close of the war (March 30, 1865) he was removed from a command in a department in which there was no one left to command. Sheridan soon after the battle of Cedar Creek withdrew to Kernstown and later joined Grant.



GENERAL MAP OF THE BATTLEFIELDS AROUND RICHMOND

CHAPTER XLVI

SIEGE OF PETERSBURG AND SUBSEQUENT EVENTS

Grant now determined to wear out Lee's army by siege. Since he had left the Rappahannock six weeks before, out of an army of 190,000 well-equipped men coöperating in the movement against Richmond, there had been a fearful loss of 76,000. His list of experienced officers had become depleted, thousands of soldiers had died of fever and wounds, and every movement of the Grand Army had been checked. Under these conditions the only hope of finally overcoming Lee's army and seizing the stronghold of the Confederacy was the long, tedious process of hammering, mining, destroying the Confederates' communications for supplies, and beseiging.

Grant's communication with his basis for supplies was almost perfect and free from interruption by way of the James River, and the Potomac to Washington, while Lee's position was far more difficult and dangerous. He was forced to protect two cities by a line of fortifications thirty-five miles long, having an army only one-third the size of that of his determined opponent. His lines of communication for supplies were constantly menaced and subject to serious interruptions. The supply of men for recruits was exhausted. The currency of the Confederacy had depreciated in value to such an alarming extent, that one dollar in gold was worth sixty in Confederate paper. The supply of arms, ammunition, food, and clothes was rapidly diminishing. The heart of the Confederacy was being penetrated by Sherman with an army of 60,000 men. Yet the resolute soldiers, inspired by their leaders and the devoted women of the South, struggled on against the hopeless odds for ten long dreary months.

From the first of July to the 28th there had been desultory cannonading, and at times some severe fighting, but there had been not one important concentrated effort on the part of Grant to break Lee's fortification. Each general was restlessly watching an opportunity to improve his position.

The Petersburg Mine Horror.—A plan had originated in General Burnside's corps,—the Forty-eighth Pennsylvania under Lieutenant-Colonel Pleasants,—to tunnel under one of the main forts of the Confederates. The plan was encouraged by Burnside, but not by Meade or Grant. The place selected was a salient in front of General Johnson and the center of Elliott's brigade. The excavation began June 25, and, after great difficulty, was completed July 26. The tunnel was 500 feet long and at the ends wings were extended to right and left, in which were placed about four tons of gunpowder. To make more certain the success of the undertaking, Grant ordered Hancock to make a strong diversion with 20,000 men on the north side of the James, thus drawing off part of Lee's forces. After considerable skirmishing and small loss of life on either side, the Federal corps recrossed the James the night of the 28th and reached Petersburg by daybreak. The time for lighting the fuse was set for 3:30 a. m., July 30. General Lee was not unaware of the mining and placed 8 and 10-inch mortar batteries so as to cross-fire on it. Burnside desired that the negro division under General Ferrero should lead the charge after the explosion, but this was objected to by the other generals, and Ledlie's division was selected by lot to lead the advance.

At the appointed time the fuse was set, but an hour passed and no explosion occurred, owing to a defect in the fuse. This occasioned a costly delay. At ten minutes before 5 o'clock the tremendous explosion carried in its awful destruction high in the air 200 men, literally torn to pieces. Mingling in the air with the dismembered bodies were huge

stones, enormous quantities of dirt, splintered timbers and guns. A huge chasm had been made 170 feet long, 60 feet wide, and 30 feet deep. The falling débris confused the advancing Federals, causing them to break in disorder, while the Confederates poured their deadly fire from 100 guns upon the open crater filled with wriggling humanity. The assault was slow. The soldiers, crowding and disorganized, began to inspect the horrible mass in the crater before them.

The time lost allowed the Confederates to get over their astonishment, and they began now to concentrate their fire upon the Federals, who sought safety in the crater, finding it almost impossible either to push forward or draw out. The Confederate fire was concentrated and terrible. The negro division under Fenero made a brave effort on the left crest of the crater to get into the Confederate lines, but was finally disorganized by the firing of Mahone's troops, and sought safety in flight. At 2 p. m. the Confederates charged from the depression between the hills into the crater where occurred a fearful hand-to-hand conflict of short duration.

The failure of this venture was a great disappointment to Grant. The loss of life among the Federals was great. Four thousand men had been sacrificed, 1652 of whom were captured. The losses of the Confederates scarcely equaled 1000. Nothing had been accomplished.

Protracted Siege of Petersburg After the Mine Horror.—While Sheridan and Early were fighting up and down the valley of the Shenandoah General Grant had remained comparatively quiet, with the exception of a few more or less important maneuvers. Grant knew that the recruits of the South were being rapidly exhausted, that the majority of them were boys and old men and that the entire resources of the Confederacy were rapidly dwindling. These facts did not prevent him from using all his efforts and resources to hasten its end.

Dutch Gap and Deep Bottom.—On August 10 the Fed-

erals began making efforts to dig a navigable channel across Dutch Gap on the James,— 11 miles southeast of Richmond, where the great bend of the river formed a narrow peninsula about 530 feet wide at its neck. Skirmishing began on the 12th when the Confederates endeavored to hinder and check the work.

On August 14 a severe engagement occurred between the Confederates and Gibbon's and Barlow's division of the Second Corps, commanded by Hancock, with part of the Tenth United States Corps. In an assault at Deep Bottom the Federals suffered a severe loss of 1000 men. The skirmishing continued on the 15th with a loss of 800 men. The excessive heat prostrated the troops; but on the 16th a stronger effort was made and as far as White Tavern the fighting was determined and obstinate.

In the fight with Gregg's cavalry, Gen. John R. Chambliss, — a bold and capable Confederate cavalry leader,— was killed. Late in the afternoon the Federals were repulsed and driven from the position they had obtained earlier.

The Federal losses for the day were 1500 men, while the Confederates lost nearly 1000. The fighting continued to be more or less intermittent on the 17th, 18th, and 19th, with no general engagement. On August 20 and 21 Hancock's division was marched back to Petersburg. These demonstrations were made to prevent Lee's sending reinforcements to Early in the Valley.

Warren's Move Against the Weldon Railroad.— At about 2 a. m., August 18, Warren, with the Fifth Corps, began operation on Grant's left against the Weldon Railroad. About 2 p. m. a severe engagement began between the Federal divisions, under Crawford and Ayres, and Heth's divisions of Hill's corps supported by Mahone. The combat continued until dark. The losses of the Federals, besides 160 prisoners, were 1000, while the Confederates lost 500, 30 of whom were prisoners. The Federals held an

intrenched position on the Weldon Railroad two and a half miles from Petersburg.

The Federals were eager to strengthen their new position, and pushed forward reinforcements under Wilcox of the Ninth Corps, Cutler of the Fifth Corps, and Griffin's divisions. At noon of the 19th a gap in the Federal line near the Jerusalem Road still remained; this gap lay between Cutler's right and Wilcox's division. At 4 p. m. a heavy rain was falling, but A. P. Hill, with five brigades under Heth and Wilcox, supported by a division of cavalry and Pegram's batteries, made a dashing attack near the railroad, driving a wedge between Wilcox's division and that of Crawford. Hill now sent Colquitt's brigade against Crawford's right flank, turning it completely, with almost all of Hartshorn's brigade and a large part of those of Lyle and Wheelock. The Federal left, — under Ayres and Griffin, — and part of Cutler's were driven to their second line of intrenchment, but not until General Hayes' brigade had been badly cut up. A large number were killed and wounded. General Hayes was captured along with 600 soldiers.

The center was giving way, but very fortunately for the Federals, Potter's division and White's of the Ninth Corps came to Crawford's aid and helped restore their line.

The Federals had lost 1500 killed and wounded and 2700 captured; this number included 70 officers.

A brief battle of two hours was fought on the forenoon of the 21st, — a desperate conflict in which the Confederates were unable to turn the Federal flanks. By the night of August 24 the Weldon Railroad had been torn up from four miles below Petersburg to within two miles of Reams Station.

Battle of Reams Station. — On the morning of August 26, after Hancock's retreat from the north side of the James, Gibbon's division of the Second Corps moved a mile below Reams Station in order to continue the destruction of the Weldon Railroad. Skirmishing began with the Confederate

pickets in the early morning, and continued until 3:30 p. m., when an assault was made by the Confederates. As this was without effect, the Confederates now from protected positions began to use a very destructive fire upon the Federals for nearly half an hour. Hill's command,—consisting of eight brigades and two divisions of cavalry under Hampton,—made a vigorous advance at 5 p. m., and succeeded in breaking Miles' line. Humphrey's division and Gibbon's were very roughly handled, resulting in almost a general rout. The personal effort of Hancock and the stubbornness of part of Miles' division kept their defeat from being even more disastrous.

The Federals lost 2300 killed and wounded, 2150 captured, 9 guns, 10 caissons, and 12 stands of colors. Hancock was compelled to retire from Reams Station to make a junction with the Fifth Corps. The Confederate loss had been 750.

Hammering.—On the 29th of August Grant, with great fury, resumed a vigorous bombardment all along the line. However, the Confederates suffered but few casualties. The labors of Lee were incessant. The occupation of the Weldon Railroad by the Federals forced the Confederates to convey their supplies by wagon from Stony Creek, eight miles south of Reams, thence to Petersburg by Boydton Plank Road.

After several days of rest Grant began again his old tactics of hammering. He temporarily transferred his main plan of attack north of the James River. On September 16 Gen. Wade Hampton, by a daring cavalry raid behind Grant's center, nine miles northeast of Prince George Court House, succeeded in seizing a herd of 2500 cattle, 200 mules, 30 wagons and 300 prisoners. This was veritably a heavenly gift for Lee's army. Hampton lost about 50 men.

Capture of Fort Harrison.—On the night of September 28 General Butler crossed to the north side of the James River, and with a strong force under Ord and Birney moved up the New Market Road and made a flank movement on the

stronghold, Fort Harrison. On the morning of the 29th, about a mile and a quarter from the fort and just before the Confederate intrenchments, a line of battle was formed under Ord in the woods of Chapin Farm. With the aid of gunboats Ord succeeded in capturing this important place, together with 16 guns and 200 prisoners. The Federals lost 800 men in the assault.

Birney's attack on Fort Gilmer,—about one mile north of Fort Harrison,—was repulsed. At this fight Grant was present, but the Confederate position was too strong to be taken. After a loss of 2000 men Birney withdrew.

Efforts by the Confederates to recapture Fort Harrison on the 30th failed; and thus a menacing position north of the James was left in the possession of the Federals.

Closing Events of 1864 in and Around Petersburg.—

The tragic picture that confronts the student of this period of Civil War history is painted on a sombre background. The cordons of Grant's army were gradually entwining themselves in a death-grip around Petersburg. Before going into winter quarters Grant, after the success of Sheridan in the Valley, decided to push forward a strong offensive movement on his left. During the first part of October considerable skirmishing and mortar firing occurred from time to time, especially in front of the Second corps. On the right, General Terry, now temporary commander of the Tenth Corps,—with Kantz's cavalry, Ames' division, and W. Birney's,—started on the evening of October 12 to make a strong reconnoissance as far as Charles City Road for the purpose of testing the Confederate strength. No general engagement occurred, and the loss was slight. After the 8th of October comparative quiet existed on the left and this continued until the 11th, when a similar movement was made. The inactivity continued until October 26.

In the last week of October Grant and Meade led a strong column to destroy the South Side & Danville Railroad, and

on the 27th Warren and Parke, commanders of the Fifth and Ninth corps, respectively, attacked Lee at Hatcher's Run.

The Second Corps, under Hancock and Gregg, were to co-operate with the Fifth. At 7:30 a. m. the Second Corps had reached Hatcher's Run by way of Vaughn Road and about noon they had, after some skirmishing, reached Boydton Road. Owing to the dense woods, Hancock was unable to make connection with the Fifth Corps, and at 4 p. m. ordered an assault. Gregg was protecting the left flank of Hancock's corps, but the right was unprotected. Mahone's division of Hill's corps had discovered this, and a determined assault was made by the Confederates at this point, resulting in the Federals losing a number of guns and many prisoners, who were nearly all recaptured while several hundred Confederate prisoners were retaken. At 5 p. m. a desperate assault was made on Gregg, who covered Hancock's left. The Federals were at first driven back, but rallied and at dark had reëstablished their line of battle. Soon after dark a retrograde march was begun by the Federals, which continued all that night and the next day, October 28. The Federals had lost over 1500 men and had gained no permanent advantage. The Confederate loss in this engagement, known as the Battle of Boydton Road, amounted to 1000.

Butler, commander of the Tenth Corps, was attacked on the Williamsburg Road and sustained a heavy loss of 1500, while that of the Confederates was only 200.

During the month of November the skirmishing between the two armies became almost constant at Fort Sedgwick. On November 5 the Confederates captured part of the picket line of the Federals but it was recaptured after a desperate fight. The constant fighting, decreasing supplies of food and clothing, and the lack of new recruits to draw from was fast weakening the Confederates' defense.

On December 1 Gregg began a cavalry raid toward Stony Creek Station, which he captured; but he was forced by a

portion of Hampton's Confederate Cavalry to retreat. The pursuit ended at Rowanty Creek. Gregg lost about 50 men and captured 150 prisoners.

At daybreak, December 7, General Warren, with 20,000 splendidly equipped men and 22 guns, started from camp on the Weldon Railroad between the Halifax Road and the Jerusalem Road. Going down the Jerusalem Road Warren crossed the Nottoway River at Freeman Bridge, 18 miles southeast of Petersburg, camping on the south side before daylight of December 8.

Warren now headed the troops toward Jarrett Station, 20 miles south of Petersburg. The railroad bridge across the Nottoway was destroyed at 12 o'clock, making the destruction of the railroad to Jarrett Station complete. At Bellfield part of Wade Hampton's cavalry and militia disputed the further progress of the Federals. A cold rain had continued during the whole march, making the roads almost impassable. On the morning of December 10 Warren commenced the backward march to the camps in front of Petersburg; and after great exhaustion, but with little loss, he reached the Federal lines December 12.

There were no further operations of importance around Petersburg until after the New Year dawned,—the year that was soon to see an end of perhaps the most desperate military struggle of modern times, if not in the world's whole history.

The Christmas-tide brought rest, festivities, and many comforts to the tired soldiers under Grant. Many furloughs were allowed, many hearts were cheered, and many homes made happy by the home-coming of veterans.

Not so in Petersburg and Richmond. There was too much starving, too few shoes and clothes, too few comforts of mind and body, to allow much cheer. Yet brave hearts beat beneath the rags, and hope,—even against hope,—continued to illumine the future and to strengthen even the faint-hearted. The heart and soul of the defense said, "The strug-

gle now is to keep the army fed and clothed." Again, Lee wrote: "Only 50 men in some regiments have shoes, and bacon is issued once in a few days." This sad condition existed in a cold, raw winter, during which the men were forced to stay in the trenches. The outlook for success now in the long struggle was dark indeed. Yet the end was not to be until thousands of precious lives had been sacrificed to the terrible passions of civil discord and human strife.

CHAPTER XLVII

HOOD'S CAMPAIGN AFTER SHERMAN'S CAPTURE OF ATLANTA

Gen. N. B. Forrest's military activities previous to joining General Hood were in the majority of instances carried on in western Tennessee.

After the Tupelo expedition in July Gen. A. J. Smith returned to Memphis and rested his troops for three weeks. With 10,000 well equipped men, on August 4, he again set out on an expedition into northern Mississippi. Without meeting any opposition he reached the Tallahatchie River.

Taking advantage of Smith's absence, Forrest made a raid into Memphis, and on August 21, with the expectation of capturing General Hurlbut and General Washburne, he made a dash for the Gayoso Hotel. Being forewarned the generals made their escape, but a number of prisoners and a considerable amount of booty were taken.

After the fall of Atlanta General Forrest crossed the Tennessee River, and followed the Nashville & Decatur Railroad to Athens, Ala., where, on September 24, he captured three negro regiments. He now marched north to Pulaski, Tenn., destroying the railroad and interrupting the Federal communication. On October 6, he retreated south of the Tennessee River before a large force sent against him by General Thomas. By October 21 Forrest had concentrated his small force at Jackson, Tenn. From here he prepared to operate on the Federal line of supplies that were coming up the Tennessee River and proposed to prevent Thomas from being reinforced by Western troops.

On October 29 General Buford, of Forrest's command, appeared at Fort Heinman, which was a small earthwork on

the west bank of the Tennessee, 65 miles from Paducah, Ky., situated near the southeast corner of Calloway County, Ky. The Confederates captured the steamboat *Express*, three transports, and a gunboat. By November 2 batteries properly placed completely commanded the river above and below Johnsonville.

At Johnsonville the Federals had gathered an enormous quantity of supplies for Thomas' Army at Nashville. There was a garrison of 1000 soldiers, 3 gunboats, and 8 transports. On November 4 Forrest ordered an active cannonade against the Federals, which soon resulted in the destruction of the gunboats, transports, and the loss by fire to the Federals of several million dollars' worth of supplies.

Forrest had in these activities destroyed 4 gunboats, 14 transports, 2 dozen barges, had captured 26 guns, and 150 prisoners, and had burned millions of dollars worth of supplies that had been accumulated for the Federals. General Forrest now hastened to join Hood, who had been moving from Georgia to the Tennessee River.

On November 10 Forrest was at Corinth and had united with Hood at Florence on the 18th.

Hood's Movement After the Fall of Atlanta.—Hood had made his headquarters at Lovejoy Station after Sherman had entered Atlanta. The Confederate army, amounting now to about 40,000 men, had been well reorganized and had recovered with wonderful quickness from the severe fights it had engaged in around Atlanta.

While Sherman was occupying Atlanta and strengthening its defense, President Davis arrived in Georgia on an inspection tour. At Macon (September 23) in an address on the situation confronting the Confederacy, with well-meant words of patriotism, he incautiously revealed the heavy desertions in the Confederate army and disclosed the plans to be pursued by Hood in his future movements. Sherman was not slow in taking advantage of this knowledge, which resulted in his

strengthening Thomas at Nashville,— a movement that led ultimately to the total discomfiture of Hood and his army.

Hood, in accordance with President Davis' advice, began a movement to get in Sherman's rear and cut off his communication with Tennessee (September 24).

Sherman now hurried Thomas toward Nashville and also placed Schofield and Newton at strong places in Atlanta's rear.

On September 27 General Hood moved toward the Chattahoochee, crossing this river at Palmetto Station September 29–30.

By October 2 Hood's army was well on its way toward Dallas, where he could menace both Rome and Kingston. On October 3 his cavalry captured Big Shanty and Ackworth, destroying the railroad and telegraphic connection.

At Altoona Pass the Federals had \$1,000,000 worth of rations guarded by Colonel Tourtellote with three regiments. Sherman had anticipated an attack here and had sent General Corse with a division of the Fifteenth corps to Rome as soon as Hood had crossed the Chattahoochee. Corse had been telegraphed to and signalled to reinforce and hold the garrison at Altoona Pass against the Confederates until he should be reinforced by Slocum from Atlanta. Corse now commanded 2000 men.

Battle of Altoona Pass.— Early on the morning of October 5 General French with a division approached the Pass and demanded its surrender. This was refused and a desperate fight continued until 2 p. m., during which Corse was severely wounded in the face by a rifle ball, while Rowett and Tourtellote were both disabled. The trenches were almost filled with the dead and wounded. At 10 a. m. Sherman,— standing on Kenesaw Mountain eighteen miles away,— was able to see the smoke and hear faintly the artillery's roar. He was also enabled to signal Corse of his effort to relieve him.

After repeated assaults for five hours French, at 3 p. m.,

began to draw off his troops in the direction of New Hope Church. South of Altoona he captured a blockhouse and its garrison.

This engagement, considering the number that took part, was one of the most severely contested battles of the war. Half of the Federal command was killed, wounded, or captured. The town was a complete wreck, all the horses of the cavalry and artillery were killed. The fort was held, and the rations saved.

General French had lost 400 prisoners, 250 killed, and several hundred wounded.

Hood now crossed the Etowah and Oostanaula rivers, passed to the east of Rome, and on the 12th of October appeared before Resaca, which Colonel Weaver, who held the place with 600 men and 3 pieces,—refused to surrender; no serious attack, however, was made upon the fort. Hood now moved rapidly to Dalton, destroying the railroad to Tunnell Hill, at which place he captured a regiment on October 14.

General Sherman, upon discovering Hood's movement toward Resaca, pushed his troops toward Rome, where the whole army assembled on October 12. Sherman's army arrived on the 14th at Resaca, where they encamped for the night. Howard, on the 15th, moved toward Smoke Creek Gap, while General Stanley and the Fourth and Fourteenth corps moved toward Villanow to strike Hood.

On October 5 Hood was in full swing toward Lafayette, having left a small force at Ship Gap. Wheeler, who had been busy in eastern Tennessee, joined him here, but later went southward to aid Hardee.

By October 20 Hood had reached Gadsden on the Coosa River in northern Alabama, where the Confederate army remained until the last of October. General Beauregard had assumed command of the West on October 17, but Hood still retained his special command; and here the two generals

planned for their future operations, meanwhile strengthening the army as far as was possible.

On October 18, Sherman's forces under Howard and Stanley had marched down the Chattanooga Valley on parallel roads, while part of the army under Cox marched by Gover's Gap to Summerville. On October 20 the whole army reached Gaylesville, Ala.

The Federals remained a week at Gaylesville, resting and living on the land. Sherman had been drawn 100 miles from Atlanta, but did not intend to leave Georgia, depending on Thomas and Schofield to thwart Hood's future designs. On the 26th Sherman prepared to return to Atlanta and mobilize his army of 60,000 men for a march through Georgia to the sea. Grant had agreed to the plans. Schofield, Stanley, and Wilson were sent to Nashville subject to Thomas' command.

Hood Moves Toward Tennessee.—After Sherman's departure from Gaylesville (October 26) Hood began to make demonstrations against Decatur, which was held by Granger, who, on the 27th, had received considerable reinforcements. On October 29 Hood retired toward Courtland, and successfully crossed the Tennessee River near Tuscumbia, and on the 31st effected a lodgment on the north side of the Tennessee, about three miles above Florence, Ala.

Thomas, as soon as he was certain that Hood intended to invade middle Tennessee, ordered Schofield, who was waiting with the Twenty-third corps at Resaca, Ga., to concentrate his forces at Pulaski, Tenn. Wood's division of the Fourth Corps reached Athens on the 31st, and General Stanley was ordered also to concentrate the remainder of the Fourth corps at Pulaski.

Hood was not responsible for the conception of the campaign he was engaged in, he was not responsible for the commanding position he now held, for he was carrying out his su-

perior's orders, but he is blamable for certain mistakes,— even fatal errors,— made in its execution.

When Hood began to concentrate his army at Florence and was here joined by the intrepid Forrest he had an army superior in number to that of Thomas, whose forces were not united and many of whose men were raw. On November 1 S. D. Lee's corps had crossed the Tennessee to form a line along Shoal Creek, but the inactivity of Hood in not sending Stewart's corps and Cheatham's across until November 17 had given Thomas time to gather his scattered army together. This delay by Hood was of the greatest benefit to Thomas; for every day meant the increasing strength of his army and his defense, while Hood had no reinforcements to draw from. On November 19 Hood began his advance into Tennessee from Florence to Waynesboro. On the 22d Hatch's cavalry was driven out of Lawrenceburg, while Schofield began to fall back from Pulaski toward Columbia. Granger, on the 23d, withdrew the garrisons to Stevenson from Athens, Huntsville, and Decatur.

On November 24 Schofield's forces began to reach Columbia and on the night of November 27 he withdrew all his forces to the north side of Duck River, and took up a position one and a half miles above the town.

On the evening of November 27 Hood's army, which had been somewhat delayed by a storm, approached Columbia. Late in the evening of the 28th Forrest crossed the river a few miles above Columbia. General Wilson at 2 a. m. on the morning of the 29th was repulsed by the Confederates in his effort to prevent them from crossing. At the Lewisburg Pike and Henry's Mill, Stewart's and Cheatham's, with Johnson's division of Lee's corps, crossed the Duck River.

Schofield, finding his line of communication in danger, hastily retreated toward Franklin over the Columbia and Franklin Pike. General Forrest made a dashing and bold effort to capture and destroy the Federal wagon-trains at

Spring Hill; but the timely arrival of Stanley with a division of infantry prevented this. He, however, had great difficulty in keeping the position until dark. The Confederates were rapidly pushing forward on parallel roads toward Spring Hill. At midnight the main body of Schofield's army passed Spring Hill, without interruption.

A Fatal Error.—Someone had blundered. Who made the fatal mistake at Spring Hill in the Confederate army that prevented a united attack against Schofield's retreating army may never be known. General Hood had given orders through his assistant adjutant-general, Major-Lieut. A. P. Mason, that General Cheatham's corps should attack Schofield's advance brigade under General Stanley at Spring Hill. About 4 p. m. of the 29th the Confederate infantry began to come in contact with the Federals, but no determined or united attack was made.

Brigadier-General Brown, of the advance division of Cheatham's corps, failed to lead the attack, having been misled, it was said, by the conflicting orders of the aides. The opportune time rapidly slipped away. The sun sinks fast after 4 p. m. at this time of the year. Hood was nonplussed that heavy firing could not be heard in his advance; Cheatham wondered why Brown could not attack. Darkness sank upon the army, the camping Confederates knew something had happened, that the unexpected had occurred. Instead of a desperate attack and the expected routing of the foe, the Confederates settled quietly around their camp-fires, which the rapidly-marching Federals saw as they hastened on to Franklin.

Cheatham and Stewart were severely censured by Hood for their apparent inactivity, but later Hood exonerated Cheatham, who was to lead the attack; for it appeared, according to the authority of Isham G. Harris, that the orders had not reached Cheatham as Hood had desired. Early on the morning of November 30 Schofield's army began to assume their

position on the south side of Franklin, 18 miles south of Nashville.

Franklin is situated on the southwest bank of the Harpeth River, with more than half of the town lying in a bend of the river to the east and north.

Battle of Franklin, November 30, 1864.—Immediately upon his arrival Schofield set his army energetically to work erecting breastworks of logs and earth. Both flanks of the Federal army rested on the banks of the river, the Twenty-third corps taking its position on the left, and the Fourth corps on the right. The Federal cavalry was placed on each side of the town, north of the river.

Wagner's two brigades formed Schofield's rear line in order to protect his wagon-trains until they could be got over Harpeth River and well on their way to Nashville.

At daylight, by forced march across country, Hood started in rapid pursuit of the retreating Federals. Stewart led the advance, then Cheatham, with Lee bringing up the rear with the trains and artillery from Columbia. The Federals were pushed so hard that some of their wagons were abandoned and burned.

At 3 p. m., after a march of 17 miles, Hood's army came in sight of the Federal forces at Franklin. Hood now determined to attack Schofield at once. General Stewart's corps formed in line of battle on the right flank, Cheatham on the left, supported by Johnson's division of Lee's corps, while most of Forrest's cavalry was placed on the right with orders to attack the wagon-trains and the retreating army,—if Hood met with success.

Between Hood's line, which was formed behind a screen of timber, and Schofield's, lay a broad, slightly undulating plain, interspersed with small elevations, bushes, and clumps of trees.

At 4 p. m. Hood's skirmishers began their advance; these were fired upon by Wagner's two brigades. About 5 p. m.

the massed columns of Stewart and Cheatham came into action and with the greatest gallantry, they rapidly overcame Wagner's brigade in the outworks. Now under one of the most terrific fires of artillery, cannister, and musketry that any troop ever had to face during the whole period of the Civil War the Confederates rushed forward against the interior breastworks which were held by Cox and Ruger, penetrated the defenses and captured two guns.

The Federal situation was desperate when at this critical period General Stanley ordered forward Opdyke's brigade, of Warren's division. The promptitude of Opdyke's response, the gallantry of his men, and the firmness of their assault on the advancing Confederates saved the Federals from being driven out of their interior defenses and prevented their being badly defeated. The Confederates fought on in the darkness, with the greatest courage and desperation. There was no battle-field of the terrible Civil War whereon men displayed more courage and heroic valor. Hood had used no artillery, "on account of the women and children remaining in the town," he explained.

The combat did not cease until midnight.

Results.— During the night the Federals retreated from the town toward Nashville. Hood had purchased his victory at a fearful cost. Between 4500 and 5000 of his men and many of his best commanding officers had been either killed, wounded or captured. Major-Gen. P. R. Cleburne,— one of the most capable and loved division officers in the Confederate army,— and Generals Strahl, Adams, and Granbury were killed leading their commands. Brigadier-General Gordon was captured at the breastworks, which he had reached, while Generals Carter, Manigault, Cockrell, Duarler, and Scott were severely wounded. The moral effect upon the Confederate forces was most discouraging.

General Schofield's army had suffered much but not so severely as his opponent's, having lost 2326 killed, wounded,

and missing, the wounded including General Stanley and General Bradley. The Federal general was able, without serious interruption, to bring his army to join Thomas at Nashville.

Battle of Nashville.— By noon of December 1 General Schofield had reached Thomas's line of battle around Nashville. The army under Thomas had grown rapidly. General Stedman and 5000 men arrived from Chattanooga on the evening of the 1st, and A. J. Smith, with a large reinforcement from Missouri, had already joined him on November 30. Thomas had strongly fortified the city. Forts Negley, Morton, Gillem, Casino, and Houston commanded the approaches from the south. Resting on the Cumberland River and forming the right flank was A. J. Smith's command; in the center was General Stanley's Fourth corps, commanded by Wood, as the former soldier was severely wounded.

General Schofield, on his arrival with the Twenty-third corps, was placed on the left, Stedman strengthened the position between Schofield and the Cumberland, while Wilson's cavalry protected the rear from Edgefield.

On December 1 Hood advanced on Nashville, and began to occupy the high ground on Brown's Creek, extending from Nolensville Pike in a westerly direction across the Franklin Pike and Granny White Pike, southwest of Richland Creek, to the Hillsboro Pike. Montgomery Hill, the Confederate salient, was 600 yards from the Federal center. Hood remained in this position, closely besieging Nashville for two weeks. At Overall's Creek, near Murfreesboro, the activity of Bates' division, of Cheatham's corps, against Milroy, and the sweep of Buford's cavalry through Murfreesboro and thence to Lebanon alarmed the Federal authorities at Washington for Thomas' safety.

General Grant grew very impatient with Thomas' delay, fearing that Hood would make a strong detour into Kentucky; so, leaving City Point, he proceeded as far as Wash-

ington, intending to go to Nashville, in order to superintend matters there in person. While there Grant received telegraphic communication from Thomas announcing his attack upon the Confederates.

Thomas' army was greatly superior in number to that of Hood, but he insisted that his cavalry needed organizing. On the morning of December 9 a severe sleet storm greatly hindered the activity of the armies and caused great suffering among the poorly sheltered, scantily clad, and half-nourished Confederates. By the night of December 14 the weather conditions had greatly moderated. Thomas and his corps commanders had perfected and agreed upon a plan of attack upon Hood's position. The left flank of the Confederates was considered to be the vulnerable point. A feint attack was to be made on Cheatham, who held the Confederate right, while a concentrated effort was then to be made to break Stewart's line on the left. General Lee held the center while Forrest's cavalry protected the right.

December 15, 1864.—On account of the heavy fog that enveloped the whole country around Nashville on the early morning of December 15, Thomas was unable to move his army as soon as he had planned. General Stedman, however, in the early morning made a demonstration against Hood's right.

As soon as this movement was initiated, A. J. Smith, supported by Wilson, advanced along the Harding Pike, and moving to their left struck Stewart's corps on the Hillsboro Pike along Richland Creek. Assisted by the gunboats, the Confederate outposts were driven back, several guns were captured, and 300 prisoners taken. Schofield and Wood came to the support of Smith in the evening, forcing Hood's army from its advance position at Montgomery Hill. Hood had lost over a dozen guns and 1000 men taken prisoners.

During the night Hood reformed his line of battle some two miles south of his original position along Overton Hill.

Cheatham reinforced Stewart on the left, with the Confederate army holding the Granny White Pike and the Franklin Pike.

December 16.— General Wood, of the Federals, held the right, while Smith's command was in the center, with Schofield and Stedman on the left. Thomas resumed his attack at 6 a. m., and the skirmishers were driven in. By 3 p. m. the entire Federal force was within a quarter of a mile of Hood's army. Two brigades of Wood's corps, with part of Stedman's, advanced to the attack; but a destructive fire from the batteries and infantry of the Confederates sent such havoc into the Federal ranks that they retreated, leaving their dead and wounded on the hill-slopes.

The day looked hopeful for the Confederates; but there was soon to happen an incident,—unlooked for, but, reasoning from the conditions that led up to this critical battle, one that might have been expected. The immense numerical superiority of Thomas' army allowed him to overlap the thinned and exhausted army of Hood, endangering the Confederate rear with Wilson's dismounted cavalry. The indefatigable Forrest, having again been sent away at a most inopportune time, his protecting arm was not there. The Battle of Franklin, a victory most dearly purchased, had brought gloom into the Army of Tennessee, for thousands of its men had gone from their comrades' presence. This splendid army had lost Cleburne, Strahl, Adams, Cockrell, Carter, and Gordon. They had fought and marched for weeks and weeks, without victory. They were ragged, hungry, and cold. They had lost faith in their chieftain. The wonder is that they were so long able to endure.

The climax of the battle came soon after 4 p. m., when the heavy assaulting column of Schofield's corps and Smith's attacked Stewart's corps and Cheatham's in their front. When the Federal column struck the angle held by Gen. William B. Bates' division,—which was just left of Hood's center, where

the line was unduly extended,— it was able to bring to bear a cross fire just at the time one of Bates' brigades was attacked in the rear. The line gave way. This was followed by a panic in Stewart's and Cheatham's corps; nearly all their artillery was captured, and thousands of small arms. Those who were not taken prisoners fled for safety through Brentwood Pass and down the Franklin Turnpike. Stephen D. Lee's corps was the only one that remained intact after the battle, and but for this and the splendid courage of Forrest's cavalry the army of Hood would have met with complete destruction.

In justice to the memory of William B. Bates and the men of his division,—who had fought and won well-deserved honor under many trying conditions,— a few facts should be brought to the mind of those who are inclined to censure unduly their action on this unfortunate day. No man should be judged without a hearing, especially a brave and honorable one, who sacrificed and endured much for the cause he considered just.

Bates' division had lost 20 per cent. of its men at the battle of Franklin, many of its officers had been killed, and he himself had had a horse shot under him before the Federal breastworks. During the severely cold weather preceding the battle, while Stewart's corps and Cheatham's other divisions were resting before Nashville Bates' division had been ordered to make a detour toward Murfreesboro. On December 8, near Murfreesboro, he encountered Milroy, and after a display of remarkable personal courage he was able to check the Federals and hold the field at the close of the engagement. The severe freeze and the sleet had caused his men to suffer greatly, for 25 per cent. of them were barefooted, with bleeding feet. Under these conditions he was ordered back before Nashville, where he arrived in time to participate in this disaster to the Confederates.

His command was placed in the most difficult and danger-

ous position of the line, without sufficient breastworks or obstructions, and subjected to enfilading fire and rear attack. Where the breach was made the command was nearly annihilated; nor does it seem that this break in the line should be considered wholly responsible for the subsequent rout of the Confederate corps. The official report of General Bates is worthy of careful and unprejudiced perusal.

The battle of Nashville was the most disastrous defeat in a pitched battle that the Confederates received during the Civil War. It effectually broke their power in the West and completely disorganized forever their main fighting force. Night prevented the Federals' immediate pursuit for any distance.

The Federals had lost during the two days' fights — killed, 387; wounded, 2562; missing, 112,— a total of 3061. They had 49,773 men engaged. The Confederates' loss was: 4462 prisoners taken, 53 guns, and thousands of small arms. There was no report of killed and wounded, but Hood reports it to have been "very small." They had 23,207 men engaged.

The Confederate Retreat.— After the Confederate lines had broken General Chalmers and General Ruckner formed a barricade about one mile from the battle-ground, on the Granny White Turnpike, behind which they stationed their cavalry. Here Knipe's division and Hatch's of Wilson's cavalry were temporarily checked, but the Confederates were finally driven on toward Franklin by the superior number of the Federals. At length, eight miles south of Nashville, Hood halted the greater part of what was left of the army.

On the 17th the Federal cavalry pursued the Confederates by way of Granny White Turnpike, while the Fourth Corps proceeded by the Franklin Pike. The main cavalry column, with Knipe's division in advance, struck the rear guard of the retreating army which was under Stephen D. Lee, early in

the morning about four miles north of Franklin at a place called Hollow Tree Gap. The Federal charges were bold. Although the Federals succeeded in capturing several hundred men,—many of their own number were dragged from their horses,—Lee was able to hold the attackers in check by the most desperate effort. Although wounded severely in the foot, he kept the command until late at night.

About 4:30 in the afternoon the Federal effort to break the rear guard and cause a rout was even more persistent than in the morning, but it was unavailing.

The only cavalry with the rear guard under Lee was a small command under General Buford. On the morning of December 18 General Forrest, with his cavalry forces, came to the assistance of the much-tried rear-guard, which had retreated by this time five or six miles to the south of Franklin. The Federal infantry had been delayed for the night at Harpeth River. On the 18th the Federal cavalry pursued the Confederates to Rutherford Creek, three miles north of Columbia, but severe rains had made the roads very heavy, and on the 19th the pursuit was checked here. When the Federal advance under Hatch reached Duck River on the 20th they found the stream greatly swollen, though the Confederates had safely crossed the night before. On the 21st severe cold set in, during which the suffering of the Confederates was most intense.

It was not until December 24th that Thomas' advance infantry, under Wood, came in touch with General Forrest and General Walthall, who commanded the heroic rear-guard. A stand was made by Forrest at Lynnville and again at Buford Station, but the forces in retreat reached Pulaski the same night. On December 25 some miles south of this point the Federal cavalry received a severe repulse, losing one gun and several men.

When Hood reached the Tennessee River his situation was desperate. Having no pontoon bridges, he was forced to keep

the Federal gunboats at a distance with small guns, while his engineers and men were providing insecure crossings. By the 28th the Confederates,—the remnant of a once splendid army,—had safely crossed at Bainbridge on the Tennessee.

Grant severely criticized Thomas' indolence in failing to reap the benefits of his splendid victory at Nashville. "His pursuit," he said, "indicated sluggishness. The command of the advance of the pursuit was left to subordinates, while Thomas followed far behind."

Thus ended the Federal pursuit and the Nashville Campaign. General Thomas' achievement was rewarded by his being appointed major-general in the regular army, his commission dating from December 15. Although his movements had been slow, they resulted in the total discomfiture of Hood's army. Besides he had to his credit the important victory of Mills Springs and his splendid record as corps commander with Buell, Rosecrans, and Sherman. The success that stood out even more prominently than all his others was the firm stand he had made at Chickamauga, bringing to him the pseudonym, the "Rock of Chickamauga."

However, his distribution of the troops after December 30 was not satisfactory to either Grant or the War Department. Instead of their being widely separated at Dalton, Ga., Athens, and Huntsville, Ala., and Eastport, Miss., Wood's Fourth Corps was ordered to Huntsville, while Smith, Schofield, and Wilson concentrated their forces at Eastport, ready for immediate service.

Lyon's Raid Into Kentucky.—While the Confederate forces under Hood lay before Nashville General Lyon, the hardy veteran who had fought so often with Forrest, was sent with a force of a few hundred men and two guns to cut the railroad from Louisville and create a strong diversion. Capturing Hopkinsville, he moved rapidly toward Greensburg on the Green River, near which place he had a conflict with

LaGrange's brigade. After this he made a circle toward Elizabethtown, and finally crossed the Cumberland River at Burkesville. From here he moved through McMinnville to Larkinsville, Ala.

A small Federal garrison at Scottsboro, on the Memphis & Charleston Railroad, was attacked January 10, and Lyon's command now scattered, leaving him about 200 men and one gun. On January 14, between Warrenton and Tuscaloosa, General Palmer surprised General Lyon in camp, capturing him and part of the command. General Lyon, however, succeeded in escaping by shooting a sentinel.

This was the last effort on the part of the Confederates to enter Kentucky.

General Hood's scattered forces reached Tupelo, Miss. The greater part of them was sent by way of Augusta, Ga., to later join Gen. Joseph E. Johnston in North Carolina in time to engage in the Battle of Bentonville and in the surrender at Greensboro.

On January 23 General Hood, at his own request, was relieved of the command. He was one of the most effective and daring corps commanders that the Confederacy produced during the war. At Gaines' Mill, at Antietam, at Gettysburg, at Chickamauga, his courage and his fearlessness reached the heroic. At Gettysburg he lost an arm, at Chickamauga he lost a leg. Even thus suffering and mutilated he still continued to give himself entirely to the cause he thought was just. General Lee trusted none of his men in desperate assaults and critical situations more than he did Hood and his Texans. But unfortunate indeed for the Confederacy was the time when whispering voices said: "Replace Joseph E. Johnston in chief command with the dashing Hood." It was exactly the move that Sherman and Grant wanted.

"President Davis on several occasions during the war came to the relief of the Union army by means of his superior military genius." Thus spoke General Grant. This may

have been to some extent a partisan view, but in the instance above mentioned it seemed very true. Supreme command was not suited to Hood, nor to many of the Federal generals during this trial of fire.

CHAPTER XLVIII

MINOR OPERATIONS DURING THE LATE FALL AND EARLY WINTER OF 1864

In the West.— While Hood was moving into Tennessee, preparatory to his fight at Franklin and Nashville, a large cavalry force of 2000 men and 8 guns, commanded by Colonel Osband, set out from Vicksburg to cut Hood's communications with Mobile. Considerable railroad track, 2600 bales of cotton at Vaughan Station, and numerous supplies destined for Hood's army at Jackson were destroyed. Harassed by the detached commands of the Confederates on December 4 Osband returned to Vicksburg.

Another Federal force of 4200 men, with 8 guns and a large wagon-train, commanded by General Bailey and Colonel Davis, left Baton Rouge about the 27th of November, marched through Columbia and Augusta, Miss., and at length, on December 12, after a most trying march over almost impassable roads, they entered West Pascagoula on the Gulf. A considerable part of the Jackson Railroad and a goodly quantity of cotton were destroyed with the burning of Franklinton. At about the same time that Hood was fleeing from Nashville General Grierson left Memphis, with 3000 cavalry, to cut the wires and destroy the Mobile & Ohio Railroad. Passing Corinth and Gunstown, he destroyed telegraph wires and railroad. On December 27 at Verona, close to Tupelo, a large number of cars, wagons and 4000 English carbines were taken, along with many commissary stores. On December 28 at Egypt a sharp fight occurred between 1200 Confederates and the Federals in which the Confederates were defeated, a large number were killed, including General Gholson, and several hundred prisoners captured. Grierson now struck

southwest through Houston and Bellefontaine to the Mississippi Central Railroad at Winona.

All these operations, though not individually of great importance, bore heavily upon the resources of the Confederacy and hastened its end.

Southwestern Virginia.— In the mountain region, where the four great States of Kentucky, Virginia, North Carolina and Tennessee come together, the acute hatred engendered by war had reached its climax. The natives were in many instances greatly divided in their zeal. Brothers fought against brothers, neighbors against neighbors, while the rugged mountainous country,—inhabited by many descendants of old Celtic Highlanders of Scotland,—developed anew the ancient fighting spirit, with its irregular warfare.

After General Morgan's death, General Burbridge, with 2500 men proceeded to Saltville, Va., where were located the salt works, which were of great value; and by December 2, 1864, he had come within four miles of the place. But he was forced to retire from there into Kentucky, after a loss of nearly 400 men.

There seems now to have occurred a hit-and-run fight between General Gillem, the Federal general, and Vaughan, Duke,—the Confederate cavalryman, and Breckinridge.

Gillem was attacked (October 26) at Morristown by Vaughan, but the Federals had the best of the fight, driving Vaughan to Limestone, 28 miles northeast of Knoxville. Gillem again retired but at Bull Gap was attacked by Breckinridge on November 11, and again November 12. Vaughan and Duke, leading the cavalry, attacked the front, while at midnight near Morristown, a flank and rear attack was made on the retreating Federals. Gillem's forces were totally routed, fleeing in great confusion. Breckinridge captured all the Federal artillery, wagons, most of the horses and mules, and more than 300 prisoners. The remainder of the Federals retreated to Knoxville.

Stoneman in East Tennessee.— During the latter part of November Gen. George Stoneman was ordered into eastern Tennessee to take charge of all the forces. He thereupon ordered General Burbridge to march by way of Cumberland Gap to the relief of General Gillem, who had received from Chattanooga a reinforcement of 1500 men, under General Ammen.

On December 12 Stoneman concentrated all his forces at Bean Station. At Kingsport Gillem met Burbridge and turned toward Bristol, where he defeated General Vaughan, driving him toward Marion. Burbridge moved rapidly to Abingdon, which place Gillem also reached on December 15 after destroying part of the railroad between this place and Wytheville in order to prevent Vaughan's being reinforced. At Marion (December 16) Gillem attacked Vaughan and again routed him, causing him to retreat to Wytheville. Marion was captured, and on December 20 Saltville, with its valuable supplies, ammunition, and machinery surrendered.

The result of Stoneman's raid had been very disastrous to the Confederate forces. Twenty pieces of artillery had been taken, 800 to 900 men captured, many thousands of hogs, cattle, and mules driven off, and much property destroyed; all of which was hastening the crisis that was soon to come at Appomattox.

Failure of Admiral Porter and General Butler to Capture Fort Fisher.— Before entering upon the last great military movement of the year 1864, "General Sherman's March to the Sea," it will be well to narrate the Federals' first attempt and failure to capture Fort Fisher and Wilmington. Although Charleston had not yet been captured, and Mobile was still a stronghold of the Confederates, they were completely blockaded. Wilmington had been the most difficult of all Southern Ports to blockade on account of its especially favorable situation. Wilmington lies some 30 miles up the Cape Fear River. There are two channels entering

from the sea. The New Inlet on the northwest, two miles wide and shallow, was protected by Fort Fisher,—a strong, casemated earthwork, built on the mainland near Federal Point. The southwest channel was about 12 feet deep, and two and one-half miles wide. On Oak Island was located Fort Caswell, and on Smith's Island the Light House Battery, which protected the channel. The peninsula between the Atlantic Ocean and the Cape Fear River was low and sandy.

Late in the year '64 Grant sent Gen. Godfrey Weitzel and Gen. Charles Graham, under the protection of the blockading fleet, to make a reconnoissance of Fort Fisher. The Confederate commander, Gen. W. H. C. Whiting, hearing of his purpose, began to greatly strengthen Fort Fisher. On December 9, 6500 men of Butler's corps, under the immediate command of General Weitzel, left Fortress Monroe.

They had been preceded one day and a half by the powerful fleet of Admiral Porter, who was to coöperate in the attack. Butler, who was not to accompany the expedition, joined them on the 14th of December off Cape Henry. By the evening of the 15th the transports arrived at the appointed rendezvous 25 miles from Fort Fisher where Porter's fleet had been for three days. A fearful hurricane now followed the splendid weather that had favored the Federals' plans. The transports returned to Beaufort, 70 miles up the coast, for shelter, while Porter's fleet rode at anchor. The storm lasted 3 days. On December 23 Butler sent word to Porter that he would join the fleet the next day. A powder ship had been prepared, by exploding which Butler intended to destroy the forts. Porter refused to wait for Butler and ignited it at 1 a. m., on the 24th. The result was perfectly harmless, although 215 tons of gunpowder had been used.

On the 24th Porter, with his 400 guns on 33 vessels, bombarded the forts for five hours; Butler did not arrive until sunset. By noon of the 25th under cover of the fleet fire a landing of troops was made about 3 miles north of Fort

Fisher. A skirmish line under Curtis was pushed to within 50 yards of the fort, while the main body was within 800 yards. Weitzel returned to Butler and reported that under the circumstances an assault would be butchery.

Although Curtis had gained some advantage, Butler acted on the report of Weitzel and withdrew his troops at sunset to the transports. Porter censured Butler greatly for his action, and was upheld by Grant, who was greatly disappointed at the failure. General Ames had captured 228 men in his advance to the north, then reported to Butler that 1600 men of Hope's division had arrived and that the rest would soon be in his rear. Upon hearing this Butler at once proceeded to Fortress Monroe, which he reached December 28. Later he was replaced by General Ord who took command of the North Carolina and Virginia department. Grant did not let the attempt to capture Fort Fisher rest here and he soon succeeded in having the plan carried out.

CHAPTER XLIX

SHERMAN'S MARCH TO THE SEA

Hood's move to Decatur (November 1) caused Sherman to hasten his preparations for his return to Atlanta and for the march through Georgia that soon followed. Sherman now returned to Smyrna and the Fourteenth Corps to Kensington. All baggage, supplies, artillery, forage, sick, wounded, and impedimenta of every character that had hindered the march were sent to Chattanooga. On the 11th of November the last train went north to Chattanooga. Corse now destroyed everything of value in Rome, including mills, foundries, shops, and warehouses, and joining Sherman, the huge army moved rapidly toward Atlanta, which they reached by the night of the 14th of November.

The Burning of Atlanta.—On the night of November 15, 1864, Sherman ordered a complete destruction of all that might be of value to the Confederates in Atlanta. The inhabitants had been previously exiled. It is one of the tragedies of the Civil War that so many non-combatants had to suffer severely. Whatever glamor may be associated in the minds of men with war, such events as the burning of Atlanta show its awful cruelty and ugliness. The city was left a bleak and barren ruin; scarcely one-tenth of the 5000 buildings that made the Atlanta of 1864 remained to shelter its desolate population when they would return. While the city was yet burning Sherman (November 16) began the march towards Savannah, with the great army that he had formed in two wings marching in four columns.

Order of March.—The right wing, commanded by Gen.

O. O. Howard, consisted of the Fifteenth Corps, under Gen. P. J. Osterhaus, and the Seventeenth Corps, commanded by Gen. T. P. Blair. Howard moved from Atlanta down the Georgia Central Railroad toward Jonesboro. He was ordered to make a strong demonstration toward Macon, cross the Ocmulgee River at Planter's Mill, and rest in the vicinity of Gordon for a week.

Slocum commanded the left wing,—which was composed of the Fourteenth Corps, under Gen. Jeff. C. Davis,—and the Twentieth Corps was to follow the railroad to Augusta. Slocum, who started toward Decatur, was to go by Madison, burn the bridge across the Oconee River, and remain for seven days at Milledgeville, the State capital.

Sherman at the start accompanied the Fourteenth Corps, which moved by Covington and Shady Dale toward Milledgeville. The railroads were to be destroyed on both routes.

The cavalry,—consisting of two brigades under Col. Eli H. Murray, of Kentucky, and S. D. Atkins, of Illinois,—was commanded by Judson Kilpatrick and was under Sherman's order.

The cavalry force amounted to about 5000, while the infantry and artillery forces were 56,000, a grand total of over 60,000 men.

General Howard's right flank, or the Fifteenth Corps, after crossing the Ocmulgee River, passed southward through Monticello and Hillsboro, then between Clinton and Milledgeville, and on November 22 struck the Georgia Central Railroad slightly west of Griswoldville; while the left flank entered Gordon, 20 miles east of Macon on the same railroad. Kilpatrick's cavalry had gone by way of Griffin and Forsyth in the direction of Macon. On the 20th, two miles from Macon, Wheeler was attacked by Kilpatrick; but neither side suffered very severely, and the Federal cavalry withdrew to Griswoldville, where the infantry was destroying the railroad to Gordon.

Battle at Griswoldville.—Walcott's brigade, with artillery and some cavalry, formed the extreme right of Howard's corps. They had succeeded in destroying Griswoldville, and had drawn up outside of the town, being protected by a grove of trees and breastworks in front. Here a force of Confederate militia from Macon attacked them. After several desperate assaults, wherein inexperienced troops showed great bravery; they were forced to retire after great loss, leaving several hundred dead on the field. This was the most severe battle in which the Federal forces were engaged on their way to Savannah. Meanwhile the left wing destroyed the bridges at Madison. Part of the Twentieth Corps passed through Eatonton and a few regiments entered Milledgeville the State capital on the 21st. The Legislature which had been in session had fled a few days previously to Augusta. At Milledgeville, factories, arsenals, and government property were destroyed, but private buildings were protected. Some 2500 small arms were captured and a few Federal prisoners. Here the left wing rested a few days.

From Oconee to Savannah.—Howard's command had reached the Oconee River on the 23d, but were forced to skirmish with Wheeler three days before a crossing was made 8 miles below on the 26th. Slocum's corps crossed the Oconee on the 24th. By the 27th of November, both wings lay encamped between Sandersville and Irvin Roads. Both commands of the great army now moved towards Millen, the junction of the railroad from Savannah to Atlanta and Augusta.

Moving toward Augusta, Kilpatrick on December 3 encountered General Wheeler near Waynesboro. The Confederates retreated, but hindered the Federals' progress by burning the bridges. Kilpatrick now marched southward, and on December 5 joined Slocum's command, which had reached Jacksonboro.

On November 28 the Fourteenth Corps of Slocum's left

wing, crossed the Ogeechee River 15 miles north of Sandersville, marched through Louisville, and reached Millen December 2. The Twentieth Corps moved along the railroad, destroying the line as it went, while Howard's corps demolished the railroad between Tennville and the Ogeechee River, which stream they succeeded in crossing the last day of November. The Seventeenth Corps reached Millen on the 2d of December. The Fifteenth Corps, which was following the Ogeechee, was a day's march ahead.

The whole army turned southward, and marched toward Savannah between the Ogeechee and Savannah rivers.

The lovely fall sunshine now gave place to rainy weather. The country was low and swampy, while the Confederates had felled trees and obstructed the roads as much as their small forces were able.

General Hardee at Savannah.—General Hardee, the Confederate general in command, had retired to the fortified lines within Savannah on December 10. He had been able to collect about 10,000 men,—a body scarcely as large as one of Sherman's corps. Hardee attempted a stand at the canal connecting the rivers, but after the 7th he withdrew.

Sherman had by December 12 closely invested the city on the north and west; his army lay in a half-circle, ten miles in length, and extending from the Savannah River 3 miles above the city to the Gulf Railroad.

Sherman sent Captain Duncan with two scouts down the Ogeechee River on the night of December 9, in order to communicate with the fleet. After a dangerous voyage, during which they concealed themselves in marshes and rice fields in the daytime, they succeeded in passing Fort McAllister at night in a rain-storm, and were picked up on Ossabaw Sound the morning of the 11th by the Federal gunboat *Flag*. Carried to Hilton Head, Captain Duncan communicated

to General Foster General Howard's message of the armies' presence and their condition. This was the first message from Sherman to the North since he had left Atlanta.

Capture of Fort McAllister.— Sherman's next move was to capture and reduce Fort McAllister. This was a strong fortification, 6 miles from Ossabaw Sound and 18 miles southwest of Savannah. It had been unsuccessfully attacked in 1863 by a Federal fleet of ironclads. There were 23 guns and several small pieces in the fort the approach to which was protected by a deep ditch some 40 feet wide, beyond which was a line of abatis. The Confederate garrison, however, was so small that Major Anderson, with 200 men was the only available force left to defend the fort.

At daybreak of the 13th General Haynes' division crossed the Ogeechee over a hastily constructed bridge, and reached the neighborhood of the fort at 1 p. m. After arranging his regiments, the attack was ordered at sundown.

The 600 yards were rapidly passed, and in less than half an hour the Federal soldiers had captured the fort. Sherman was now able to communicate with the fleet under Admiral Dahlgren.

In the meanwhile General Foster had sent General Hatch with 5500 men to cut the Charleston Railroad. Three miles from Grahamville, South Carolina, at Honey Hill, Gen. G. W. Smith, a Confederate with 1500 men, occupied a strong position. Hatch immediately on his arrival attacked the Confederate position; but after 6 hours of fighting and with a loss of 800 men was forced to retire.

On December 14 Sherman opened permanent communication with the fleet, and by the 17th had begun to place a number of Parrott siege-guns. A flag of truce was formally sent to General Hardee demanding a surrender of Savannah. The Confederate general refused the demand and began to prepare for an escape.

Hardee's Escape.— The Federal force surrounded the

city except along the Savannah River. A little below Hutchinson Island opposite Savannah, beginning on the South Carolina shore, was a roadway leading from Savannah to Charleston. This way had not been closed by Sherman. During the night of December 20,—which was very dark and with heavy winds,—Hardee after destroying the navy yards and such government supplies as he could not use, had his troops conveyed on rafts, towboats, and steamboats across the river, while the two ironclads and batteries covered the escape by a furious bombardment upon the Federals' left wing. After the troops and guns were safely on the South Carolina side, the ironclads and forts were destroyed.

Shortly after dawn the Federals were surprised to find the intrenchments deserted. A few hours later Sherman entered Savannah and received the surrender of the city from the mayor.

This closed the march to the sea. On the 22d of December Sherman sent President Lincoln the following message:

"I beg to present you, as a Christmas gift, the City of Savannah, with 150 heavy guns and plenty of ammunition, and also 25,000 bales of cotton."

Sherman received letters of congratulation and thanks from Lincoln, Halleck and Grant.

Results.—Sherman's campaign had lasted 35 days. Sixty-five thousand men with 10,000 horses had marched 300 miles through the Confederacy, living on the country. A tract of land from 20 to 60 miles wide had been devastated. Three hundred and twenty miles of railroad had been destroyed, 9000 horses and mules captured, 20,000 bales of cotton burned, and 10,000 negroes followed him into Savannah. All the hogs, sheep, cattle, corn, poultry and animal provender along the route had been either consumed, or destroyed, while hundreds of buildings went up in smoke.

In Sherman's words: "I estimate the damage done the State of Georgia and its military resources at \$100,000,000, at

least \$20,000,000 of which has incurred to our advantage and the remainder is simple waste and destruction." This was indeed making war, as he expressed it, "HELL." The Federals had lost scarcely 600 men, while the Confederates had captured 1328 and had killed and wounded about 700. There was no great difficulty for him to overcome, and the only force of any size that he had to oppose was Hardee's, which was allowed to escape without any loss.

However, to the Confederacy the destruction of their resources and the presence of a great army in the very center of their granary was a staggering blow. After placing Savannah under military rule, Sherman remained in peace at Savannah until February 1, 1865.

Close of '64.— Thus closed the very eventful year of 1864. It had been crowded with campaigns, great and small. The destruction of life and property had been more than that of any preceding year of the great conflict.

In many of the smaller raids and battles the Confederates had been successful. In the sanguinary battles from the Wilderness to Petersburg Grant's army had suffered fearfully; while Johnston's stubborn retreat from Dalton to Atlanta had almost baffled Sherman. Yet the onward progress of the Federal armies in '64 foretold the end of the Great Civil Strife.

CHAPTER L

THE YEAR 1865. COMBINED NAVAL AND LAND OPERATIONS OF 1865

The Second Attack on Fort Fisher.— Admiral Porter, — who was sanguine of the success of the capture of Fort Fisher and Wilmington, should his fleet be properly supported by a land force,— remained at New Inlet. General Grant ordered Porter to remain, and on January 6 General Terry with 8000 men was sent from Hampton Roads to join Porter. The weather was very rough and the transports did not reach New Inlet until the night of the 12th.

Early on the morning of the 13th, the landing of troops began, and by 3 p. m., most of the Federal soldiers were on shore, well supplied with tools for intrenching, forty rounds of ammunition, and three days' rations.

The fleet had kept up a terrific and almost incessant fire upon the Confederate fort. By the morning of the 14th the Federals had raised a good protection of breastworks, but General Terry, in concurrence with Porter, decided that a general assault would be more likely to succeed than a siege. It was decided to make an assault at 3 p. m., January 15. The troops under Terry were to attack the western half of the land front, the assault to be made by General Ames' division, consisting of Curtis', Pennypacker's, and Bell's brigades. The bastions at the sea angles were to be assaulted by Capt. K. R. Breese with 1400 sailors and marines. During the 14th the fort was severely bombarded by the fleet and many of the Confederate guns were injured.

The Assault.— To resist the imposing array of fleet and land forces General Whiting and Colonel Lamb had 2500 men. There were 21 heavy guns and three mortars to pro-

tect the fort on the land side. The parapet was 20 feet high, with a shallow ditch, 500 yards long in front. Twenty-four guns were used to protect the sea front, most of which were eight- and ten-inch guns with rifled cannons interspersed. All preparations being made, at 11 a. m., January 15, under cover of one of the most terrific naval bombardments of the Civil War, the sailors and marines were landed and succeeded in intrenching themselves within 60 feet of the sea-front of the fort. Here they awaited the signal for the assault. Paine's negro divisions and Abbott's brigade were left by Terry in the intrenchment facing Wilmington. At 3:30 p. m., the signal for the assault was given.

The sailors and marines under Breese rushed forward, with great valor, but were severely repulsed for they failed to deliver an effective fire against the Confederates, and meeting with great slaughter they retreated in confusion. They were later sent to Paine, against whom General Hoke, with a small force, had made some demonstration.

Curtis' brigade led the assault made by the troops; and in the face of a severe fire a lodgment was made near the west end of the parapet. Most desperate hand to hand fighting now took place. Terry's forces were so hard pressed that Abbott's brigade and one of Paine's were drawn out of the intrenchment to their assistance. Now ensued six hours of the most obstinate fighting on both sides,—fighting wherein Confederates and Federals showed the superb bravery of the American soldier. There had been no interruption, no cessation in the fighting; the fierce combat had raged over the bodies of friend and foe; the last traverse had been taken, and a small remnant of the garrison that had not been killed, wounded, or captured retreated about midnight to a point upon which Battery Buchanan stood. Here, surrounded by the Federal troops on land and sea General Whiting and Colonel Lamb surrendered with the remnant of their army.

Results.—A more gallant assault was not made during the war upon a strongly fortified place nor had a more stubborn resistance been offered. General Whiting and Colonel Lamb of the Confederate army and Generals Curtis and Pennypacker of the Federal army were dangerously wounded, while General Bell was mortally injured. The Confederates had lost in captured 2083, while the rest of the garrison were either killed or wounded.

The Federal land forces had lost 690, while the losses in the fleet amounted to nearly 300.

Wilmington was now endangered and the last port of the Confederacy was blockaded. General Terry was promoted for the success of the undertaking.

The Confederates on the 16th and 17th of January blew up the forts across the river, leaving the mouth of the Cape Fear River in complete possession of the Federals. The Federals also took 169 pieces of artillery.

Capture of Wilmington.—After the fall of Fort Fisher, General Hoke, the Confederate commander of the district, gathered what forces he could and intrenched a line two miles above the southern end of Myrtle Sound,—a line that extended across to Cape Fear River on the opposite side of Fort Anderson. The river channel was filled with torpedoes and other obstructions.

General Terry did not endeavor to make any advance until further reinforcements were received. General Schofield, with the Twenty-third Corps had left Eastport, Alabama, January 14, and had arrived at Alexandria on the 23rd. From here Schofield embarked with Cox's division for Fort Fisher, where he arrived February 9. The remainder of the Twenty-third Corps soon followed and part of it landed at New Berne. Schofield was now intrusted with the command of the North Carolina Department, with an army of 20,000 men under his immediate command.

On the 12th and 14th Terry attempted to turn Hoke's left

wing, but vigilance on the part of the Confederates and the severe weather caused him to fail. Cox's division and Ames' were now sent across the river, and on the 18th forced an evacuation of Fort Anderson, which resulted in the capture of 10 guns and considerable ammunition.

Hoke now abandoned his fortifications on the east bank, and moved back to Wilmington. The Federals followed rapidly and at length, on the night of February 21 General Hoke abandoned the city after destroying the military and naval stores, including the vessels of which the Federals might have made use.

The loss of Wilmington was another sledge-hammer blow to the tottering Confederacy. It destroyed one of its greatest sources of supplies.

CHAPTER LI

CAPTURE OF MOBILE

After General Thomas had defeated Hood's army and General Sherman had reached the city of Savannah, General Grant, in a conference with the Federal authorities at Washington, began to devise methods whereby they could capture the City of Mobile, which the Confederates had strongly fortified. Gen. Dick Taylor was the commander in this department, but Gen. D. H. Maury, with a limited number of men, was in immediate command at Mobile. The fortifications on the west side were considered so powerful that it was a very hazardous thing to make an attempt to capture the city from this point. The upper part of the bay was shallow and filled with torpedoes and other obstructions. Seven miles east of the city was Spanish Fort,—a very strong fortification, two miles long,—garrisoned by 1700 infantry and 700 artillerymen under Gen. R. Gibson.

Fort Tracy and Fort Huger commanded the mouth of Blakely River. At Blakely, a short distance above Mobile, was a strong line of fortifications resting on high ground. Gen. St. John Lidell commanded the works, having under him 2600 men.

General Canby, to whom the task of capturing Mobile was given, had command of three full army corps, consisting of 13,000 men under the command of General Granger, 16,000 led by Gen. A. J. Smith, and 13,000 under General Steele, besides some 3000 cavalry. This formidable host of 45,000 men was well equipped with engineers and plenty of heavy artillery. To coöperate with Canby's movements Admiral Thatcher was ordered from New Orleans and Gen. J. H.

Wilson, with a large cavalry force of 13,000, from northern Alabama.

On the 24th of March Granger with the Thirteenth Corps began the march from Fort Morgan, uniting with the Sixteenth Corps under the command of General Smith, on the 25th, and by the 26th of the month was in the neighborhood of the Spanish Fort. The fort was closely besieged for two weeks, during which time a terrific bombardment was kept up; but Canby drew the lines daily closer around the besieged. The Federal fleet was able to prevent any assistance being rendered General Gibbon by the Confederates in the bay. On April 8 Colonel Bell of Carr's division, made an assault, and succeeded in gaining a considerable part of the intrenchments. He also captured about 300 soldiers.

General Maury now advised General Gibbon to withdraw his troops. Leaving his guns and stores, the garrison was sent direct to Mobile before the morning of April 9. The Federals had taken 600 prisoners and 30 guns.

On the evening of the 11th Colonel Patton also abandoned Forts Huger and Tracy; and the Federal fleet now moved up the east bank of the river in order to invest Blakely Fortress. Here General Paine with 13,000 men from Pensacola, reinforced them.

Assault on Fort Blakely.—It was Sunday afternoon, April the 9th, when Canby's troops arrived before Fort Blakely. He had 25,000 effective infantrymen; and at once decided to make a direct assault. The hour set for the grand advance was 5:30 p. m. The sky was covered with clouds, while the thunder came rolling in to announce the deadly conflict at hand.

The obstructions of abatis and torpedoes made the advance very difficult. At the word "Forward!" a line nearly three miles long rushed onward, to become entangled in the meshes of the net set for them by the Confederates, while hundreds were killed or wounded by a withering fire from the Confed-

erate guns. Gassard's division of the Sixteenth Corps was on the left, Veatch's and Andrew's of the Thirteenth was in the center, while on the right was the negro brigade under Hawkins,—in the charge these negroes showed desperate courage. In one hour and a half the Federals had rushed over the embankments, had captured the works with the 40 pieces of artillery, a large quantity of ammunition, a number of battle-flags, 4000 small arms, and had taken prisoner General Thomas, General Cockrell and all of the soldiers in the fort. The Confederates had lost in killed and wounded 450 men, while the Federals had lost very nearly 1000 men.

On the morning of April 10 General Maury commenced the evacuation of Mobile. All light guns, commissary stores, and ordnance that could be used in the field were sent up the river; while all the forces in and around the city were sent up the Tombigbee River to Demopolis, or by the dirt road north to Meridian, Miss.

Mobile surrendered on the 12th, and on the 13th the Federals occupied the city. Three days before this occurred General Lee had surrendered the remnant of his heroic army to General Grant at Appomattox.

CHAPTER LII

SHERMAN'S MARCH THROUGH THE CAROLINAS, INCLUDING THE FALL OF CHARLESTON AND SCHOFIELD'S OPERATIONS AFTER THE FALL OF WILMINGTON

General Sherman was visited soon after his arrival at Savannah by the Secretary of War, Mr. Stanton. The city was turned over to the civil authorities with certain military restrictions. General Grant had ordered General Sherman to transport all of his forces to Petersburg by sea, but later deferred to the judgment of Sherman, who considered it best to make the march through the Carolinas, thus coming in south of Petersburg.

Plans of the March.— Sherman now turned his attention to the details of his army equipment. His plans were completed; but the movement could not begin until February 1 on account of the overflow of the rivers. He purposed to follow the watersheds between the Savannah and Combahee Rivers to the higher ground nearer the sources of the shallower rivers. Howard was to concentrate most of the right wing at Beaufort, while part of the corps was to march by the Union Causeway from Beaufort to Pocotaligo. Slocum's left wing, with Logan in command of the Fifteenth Corps, was to move up the Savannah River to Robertsville, making a feint on Augusta; while Howard was to pretend to make a movement against Charleston. All their armies, however, should be directed to Columbia, S. C., and then to Goldsboro, N. C. The railway systems were all to be destroyed on the march.

On the last day of January Howard had reached Pocotaligo. At this time Beauregard, Hardee, D. H. Hill, and

G. W. Smith were in conference at Augusta. There were in the Carolinas only 30,500 available infantry and cavalry with which to resist the combined armies under Sherman and Schofield,—armies that aggregated 85,000 men.

Beauregard, though sick and exhausted, assumed command. The outlook was desperate; but the last vestige of hope for their sinking cause was clung to by the Confederates with the courage of heroes. A small force of militia was left in Augusta while Beauregard, with only part of Hood's old command, led his army to Newberry, S. C., Chester, S. C., and Charlotte, N. C. Hardee returned to Charleston, and when forced to abandon the city moved to Cheraw, S. C. Wade Hampton was recalled from Lee's army to assume command of the cavalry.

Sherman's army marched under the greatest difficulties. The steady downpour of rain had rendered the roads,—if so they could be called,—almost impassable, except when they were made passable by the most arduous labor of the Federal soldiers. Wheeler's cavalry was, however, practically the only opposition of armed forces with which they had to contend. The Confederates' late abandonment of Charleston allowed Sherman to get the start in the march to Columbia.

On February 3 the Confederates made a stubborn resistance at the River Bridge, near Midway, over the Salkahatchie, but were finally driven back to Branchville by the corps under General Howard. Sherman now concentrated his army between Graham and Midway on the South Carolina Railroad. On the 12th the Confederates again endeavored to check the Federal advance at Orangeburg on the north branch of the Edisto River, but were repulsed and by 4 p. m. the Federals occupied the town.

The 16th of February found Sherman's advance opposite the city of Columbia, which is situated on the Saluda River. The Confederates destroyed the bridges as they retreated, and in evacuating the city burned the depots in the north and

south parts of the city. The morning of February 17 Stone's brigade, of Wood's division, and Logan's corps advanced into and occupied the streets of the city. Many of the soldiers, stragglers, and released prisoners became drunk, robbery of private property and stores was frequent; even citizens were deprived of their personal valuables. Order was, however, partially restored during the day. The great conflagration did not begin for several hours after the last of the Confederate troops under Gen. Wade Hampton had reluctantly left the city in the early morning hour; having waited until the last, hoping to receive the troops and reinforcements that they so badly needed.

Destruction of Columbia.—How the destruction of Columbia occurred has been a bitterly discussed question since the fateful night of February 17, 1865. The truth is all anyone in these days should care to know of events that took place nearly half a century ago. The mayor, Mr. Goodwyn, had been assured by General Sherman that only the arsenals, foundries, machine-shops and government buildings would be destroyed. Gen. Wade Hampton, it has been stated by many writers, was the one who fired the loose cotton. He emphatically denies the allegation, saying: "Not one bale was on fire when General Sherman's troops took possession of the city."

General Hampton was a man whose word was above reproach. Many eye-witnesses bore testimony that the city was fired in more than one place, that the citizens were hindered in their work of extinguishing the conflagration, that a score or more of places were burning at once, and that the hose was cut by the drunken soldiers. That Generals Sherman, Howard, Logan, and Wood endeavored to quiet the disorder and ordered Wood's division to check the terrible fire cannot be doubted, but their efforts did not begin early enough; and that there was a deliberate effort made by many of the disorderly part of the army to destroy Columbia ap-

pears to be a fact. The commander-in-chief and his lieutenants must bear much of the censure for the reign of terror that prevailed. Scarcely any part of the city had escaped destruction by 4 o'clock the next morning. After burning all the arsenals, factories, and government buildings that remained on the 18th and 19th, Sherman resumed his march on the 20th. Before leaving he provided the suffering citizens of Columbia with cattle and provisions for their immediate necessities, which were extreme.

Hamlets, villages, forests, and farmhouses throughout the march in South Carolina met the same fate as did Columbia. South Carolina, the first of the States to secede, was severely punished.

Fall of Charleston.—At the time that Sherman was marching toward Columbia, General Hardee occupied Charleston, with the regular garrison and the troops that he had taken from Savannah. The evacuation was suspended until active operations by General Gilmore and the fleet were begun against the city. General Hardee saw that it would endanger the whole army if he tried to hold the city after the capture of Columbia. On the night of the 17th of February,—after destroying the cotton, warehouses, arsenals, two iron-clads and the shipyards,—Hardee retreated towards Cheraw, S. C., where a large quantity of supplies had been gathered, moving later to Charlotte in order to join Beauregard; and here General Cheatham was to unite with them his forces,—a part of Hood's old command.

A terrible tragedy occurred in Charleston at 3:30 a. m. on the 18th, just previous to the surrender. An explosion of some 200 kegs of gunpowder, in the Northeastern Railroad depot resulted in the death and injury of 350 bystanders, many of whom were women and children. Before it could be controlled the fire had destroyed several squares of the city.

At 9 o'clock on the 18th the city, with all of its defensive

forts,— including Sumter, Moultrie, and Castle Pinckney,— formally surrendered to the forces under General Gilmore. Among the effects captured, which included a large number of locomotives and cars, were several heavy guns.

Charleston had been besieged since July 10, 1863. The houses in the lower part of the city showed the awful effects of the havoc wrought by the frequent and prolonged bombardment from the Federal fleet. The pictures of desolation presented by the destruction of Columbia and the fall of Charleston would have convinced the most ardent advocate of war that anything,— other than dishonor and disgrace,— was better than war.

General Sherman Enters North Carolina.— After leaving Columbia on February 20, the main body of Sherman's army moved toward Winnsboro, 40 miles from Columbia, which was reached on the 21st. Slocum's troops, after destroying the branch railroad westward to Abbeville, reached Winnsboro on the 22d. Meanwhile Logan's Fifteenth Corps had destroyed 20 miles of the Charleston Railroad on the left bank of the Congaree.

Sherman made a demonstration northward, thus giving the impression to Beauregard that he would attack Charlotte. The heavy rain-fall until the 26th of the month delayed the march, but the Federal army now, in spite of this, crossed the Catawba River and moved toward Cheraw. After burning the bridge over the Wateree, the depot and supplies at Camden, and skirmishing with Butler's cavalry, the advance division of the Twentieth Corps entered Chesterfield on the 2d of March, while the right wing, under Howard, captured Cheraw on March 3. A large quantity of ammunition and stores were taken, with 3000 small arms and 28 large guns. The Confederates retreated across the Great Pedee, burning the bridges. The Federals now moved toward Fayetteville, N. C., the left wing under Slocum with the cavalry crossing the Great Pedee at Sneedsboro.

Hampton Attacks Kilpatrick.— During the early morning hours of March 10, while Kilpatrick was peacefully sleeping at a farmhouse near the little hamlet of Solemn Grove, Wade Hampton's cavalry made a surprise attack upon Spencer's brigade, but Kilpatrick succeeded in escaping in his nightclothes. Spencer and his staff were surrounded, and several hundred men were captured; and had it not been for the timely arrival of Atkins and Jordan with their brigades of infantry, strongly supported by 400 men under Colonel Stough of the Ninth Ohio Cavalry, the disaster would have been more serious.

Sherman's army reached Fayetteville on March 11, and remained there until the 15th. Here the Confederates had constructed a large arsenal with a quantity of the machinery originally brought from Harper's Ferry, all of which was destroyed.

General Joseph E. Johnston Again in Command.— General Johnston had lived in retirement since July, 1864. Gen. R. E. Lee now, as commander-in-chief of the Confederates, called upon him to resume command of all the forces in North Carolina. This fact was not known to General Sherman until March 3. Johnston's total forces,—including the men under Hardee, Beauregard, Bragg, and Cheatham, and the garrison at Augusta,—if concentrated, would not amount to more than 30,000 men; while Sherman's aggregate forces,—not including Schofield's and Cox's,—consisted of 60,079 men.

The Affair at Averysboro.— General Sherman abandoned Fayetteville on the morning of the 15th of March. General Hardee had intrenched himself near Averysboro with the purpose of delaying Sherman until Johnston should be able to gather the fragments of his once splendid army in front of Sherman. The Twentieth Corps, under General Williams, maneuvered Hardee out of his position on the 15th, capturing Colonel Rhett, the commander of the brigade that

was acting as rear guard. This brigade had been the garrison at Fort Sumter, but after Charleston was evacuated had joined Hardee's infantry forces. On March 16 Ward's division and Jackson's of the Twentieth Corps attacked Rhett's brigade, which was intrenched between the river and the swamp, while Kilpatrick operated on the right flank. Taliaferro's Confederate division was forced to fall back to be supported by McLaws. Rhett's brigade, without a commander, was driven from its position by overwhelming numbers, losing 3 field guns, 100 men left on the field, and 200 prisoners.

The Federal advance was now severely checked by McLaws' division. The Federals had lost 75 killed and 500 wounded. The dark, stormy night closed the combat; and during the darkness Hardee and his men retreated over the miserable roads to Smithfield. Sherman followed on the morning of the 17th. The next three days tested to the utmost the spirit of the Federal soldiers and that of the Confederates. Almost incessant rain, wretched roads, mud so deep as to make the movements very slow were part of the trials of both armies as they moved toward Bentonville.

Bentonville.—The experienced, sagacious, and devoted Johnston was bending all his energies to strike Sherman's army a crippling blow. On March 17 General Bragg and General Hoke were near Smithfield and about 4000 men under General Stewart were in the same vicinity. General Hardee was at Elevation, a place farther from Bentonville than the ordinary maps would indicate, being twelve miles distant with no direct road; and in consequence Hardee's forces were not able to join Bragg, Hoke, and Stewart until the morning of March 19.

Sherman's army, under Slocum and Howard, were moving on the 18th toward Goldsboro. The Fourteenth and Twentieth Corps, under Slocum, moved from Averysboro, and the Fifteenth and Seventeenth Corps, under Gen. O. O. Howard,

moved by direct road to Fayetteville. The two wings were thus moving on lines varying from six to twelve miles apart. On the night of March 18 Sherman was with Slocum about eight miles from Bentonville,— a village on Mill Creek, a branch of the River Neuse,— while Howard was several miles to the south at Lee's Store.

Not knowing that Schofield had been attacked at Kingston, on the morning of the 19th Sherman started across to join Howard. Some of the divisions were widely separated, over-confidence had caused two divisions of Davis' Fourteenth Corps,— of which he was in command,— to become separated from General Williams, with the Twentieth Corps. Early in the morning of the 19th Wheeler's cavalry and Hampton's began to make themselves felt.

The Attack. March 19.— By 10 o'clock on the morning of the 19th, Hoke's division, Stewart's and part of S. D. Lee's were lying intrenched before the advancing Federals. Davis, near the noon hour, began a vigorous assault, Carlin drove Hampton's cavalry back in some confusion, and with Morgan's division on the Federals' left, came upon the breast-works. Carlin's division was in turn driven back in disorder, while Miles' brigade, which connected Carlin and Morgan, was broken; but Morgan's division held its ground firmly.

Carlin now ordered Fearing's brigade, which was held in reserve, to charge. The center of the Confederate line had been driven back and hard pressed. McLaws' division and Taliaferro's had now arrived, and began to aid Hoke and Bates, the latter of whom was now in command of the remnant of Cheatham's corps, which had been able to reach the field of battle; while Smith commanded part of Cleburne's corps. The impetuous attack of Bates' command,— who wished to clear themselves of the charges that had been brought against them after the Battle of Nashville,— had driven to the rear the brigade that was in their front. Wil-

liams, soon after the fighting began, hurried forward the Twentieth Corps. Robinson's brigade soon became actively engaged, and about 4 p. m. Cogswell's brigade came into action. Desperate fighting continued on both sides until dark. The Federal artillery fire had been especially destructive, while the Confederates were lacking in that arm of the service. During the night Hazen's division, with the guard of the wagon-train, began to arrive.

During the night Johnston withdrew to his line intrenchments, his flank resting on Mills Creek. By the afternoon of the 20th Sherman's whole army was confronting Johnston's army, which, however, he did not attack. On the 21st skirmishing and some artillery firing was resorted to, but the Federal attacks were not effective. By daybreak of the 22d Johnston had safely removed his army, with the exception of some seriously wounded soldiers, back toward Smithfield.

Results: Slocum had been surprised. The Fourteenth and Twentieth Corps, with part of the cavalry under Kilpatrick, had been engaged in the fight and before it was over practically all of Sherman's army was facing that of Johnston. The Confederates actively engaged did not number at the most over 14,500 men, while the forces of the Federals, brought into the battle from first to last, was nearly 40,000. The total loss of the Federals was 1604 in killed and wounded and several hundred prisoners. The Confederate losses were 1673 killed and wounded, with 300 prisoners. It is difficult to know the exact losses of either side in this conflict on account of the number of contradictory reports.

Although the battle of Bentonville was not one of the great battles of the war, it was, however, one of great importance and much was at stake on both sides; for it was one of the last opportunities the Confederates had to redeem the dying Confederacy. Had Sherman received a severe repulse, possibly Johnston could have joined General Lee in Virginia

and prolonged the war. The result, however, hastened to bring the long struggle to a rapid close on account of Johnston's inability to check the advance of Sherman's army.

The Battle of Kingston.—After the occupation of Wilmington by Schofield, General Palmer and 5000 men were immediately sent with orders to march from New Berne and occupy Kingston, a small town, 32 miles up the Neuse River, and 22 miles from Goldsboro. Ruger's division of the Twenty-third Corps, was also sent from Fort Fisher to reinforce him. On account of General Palmer being delayed, General Cox was placed in command and reached New Berne on the last day of February. On March 1 the advance began. Gen. I. N. Palmer and General Carter commanded their respective divisions.

The Confederates, after evacuating Wilmington, had gone toward Goldsboro and Hoke's division was reported to be near Kingston. The great Dover Swamp lay between New Berne and Kingston. General Cox had sent (March 7) Palmer's division and Carter's to occupy the high ground and the railroad some four and a half miles south of Kingston, between Southwest River and Dover's Swamp. The same day Schofield reached the field, and on the 8th was in communication with Cox. The Confederates, commanded by General Bragg, made a sharp attack on the Federals during the day, and succeeded in capturing 935 men of Upham's command. The Federals now formed a new line of battle, making a strong barricade that covered their front. On the 9th considerable skirmishing occurred.

The Confederates made a serious effort to overwhelm Carter on the left. This occurred on the 10th of March. Schofield and Cox were both present with their forces, as were Bragg, Hoke, and D. H. Hill, with Clayton, formerly of Stewart's army, and Stephen D. Lee, of Hood's army. After considerable loss Bragg saw the great sacrifice a persistent assault would occasion, and during the night withdrew

his forces to Kingston, hastening to join Johnston in the vicinity of Bentonville. Bragg's army now consisted of 8500 men of his own command and 3500 of the Army of Tennessee, while Schofield and Cox had about 14,000 men engaged.

The Federals lost 1257 men,—about 322 of whom were killed or wounded. The Confederate losses were not definitely known, but probably amounted to 1000. Schofield occupied Kingston March 14, and sent orders to Terry to advance from Wilmington to Goldsboro over the railroad. Terry reached Faison Station on the 20th of the month,—a place 20 miles south of the Neuse. On the 19th, while the battle of Bentonville was being fought, Schofield was still at Kingston, but he reached Goldsboro on the 21st, where the great armies of Ohio, Tennessee, and Georgia were being assembled under the command of Sherman, who had moved there after the battle of Bentonville.

Sherman Confers with Lincoln and Grant at City Point.—After seeing that the army was well supplied with provisions, clothes, and shoes, Schofield was left in charge. Sherman now proceeded by rail to Morehead City and from there to City Point. Here he was fortunate enough to meet Grant, Lincoln, and also Admiral Porter on the evening of March 27. Their conference was one of the most important of the whole war. The careworn and anxious heart of Lincoln was crying: “Stop this bloodshed. What signify the terms so long as we get peace?”

Grant and Sherman expressed the opinion that there would yet be a severe battle. This was the last time that Sherman ever saw Lincoln. On March 30 Sherman returned to Goldsboro with authority to make some changes that were deemed necessary in the organization of his army. The supplying and refitting of the army was rapid and it was known on April 5 that a new campaign would open in five days.

The march of the army of Sherman across the Carolinas had been more difficult than the March to the Sea. The

almost impassable roads, the excessive rain, and the harassing tactics of the small heroic Confederate command did not make it appear to be such a holiday parade.

Dying embers are not as attractive as the blazing fire or the glowing coals, but the elements of an exhausted, waning life when stamped in heroic mold will excite the admiration and pity even of its enemy. The efforts that the Confederate generals and their soldiers had made to stem the surging tide of the Federals' onward sweep were both courageous and pitiful in the extreme.

In the Carolinas the destruction of property, the details of which are not fitting for the eyes of a united people to read and ponder over, had been enormous. The lesson for all to learn is that warfare, especially civil warfare, is one of the greatest scourges that ever cursed mankind.

CHAPTER LIII

STONEMAN'S LAST RAID, MARCH 20—APRIL 20, 1865

Before entering upon a narrative of the campaign in Virginia under Grant and Lee,—the culmination of which practically marked the downfall of the Confederacy,—a survey will be taken of the destructive expeditions made by two of the active cavalymen of the Federal army, Stoneman and Wilson.

According to Grant's plan, General Stoneman, who had returned to Knoxville after his capture of Saltville, Va., on December 20, was to move with his cavalry into the Carolinas simultaneously with Sherman's advance.

It was not, however, until March 20, one day after the battle of Bentonville, that Stoneman was ready to make his advance. The command consisted of Gillem's division,—under the brigade commanders, Palmer, Miller, and Brown,—containing fully 6000 men. Miller's brigade was sent toward Bristol, Tenn., while the rest reached Jonesboro, in the extreme eastern part of Tennessee, March 26. A small force of Confederates under General Jackson was all the opposition with which he had to contend.

On March 28 Stoneman reached Boone, N. C., having moved down the Watauga Valley. Here a small force of 200 home guards was captured. Crossing the Blue Ridge,—after capturing and destroying many supplies at Wilkerson and a bridge over the Yadkin River at Jonesville,—the main body of the Federals now proceeded to Jacksonville. Miller was sent to Wytheville to destroy the railroad and to capture the supplies gathered there for the Confederates under Lee. This he did on April 6 and 7, while Lee was desperately try-

ing to extricate himself from the toils in which Grant's great army had enmeshed him.

Major Wagner, of Stoneman's forces, captured Salem, Va., and moved within a few miles of Lynchburg, destroying the railroad. Between Danville and Greensboro, N. C., the railroad was destroyed by Stoneman after he had gathered his forces near Christianburg. He destroyed large quantities of supplies and captured a number of prisoners at Salem, N. C., on April 10.

At Grant's Creek, 10 miles from Salisbury, the Confederates had gathered a considerable force under Gardiner and Pemberton, the latter of whom was now serving the Confederacy, although reduced to the rank of a colonel. The great misfortune that had befallen him at Vicksburg had brought censure and rebuke upon his head. Although his critics had accused him of the greatest incompetency and his slanderers of treasonable designs, yet his heart still led him to fight loyally and in an humble position for the cause he loved to the last.

The Confederate forces were routed, about 1000 men, 18 guns, and some 3000 small arms were captured. Stoneman occupied Salisbury on April 12, and the usual process of destruction was resorted to; enormous quantities of provisions, clothes, medicine, cotton, ammunition, four factories, and military supplies were burned. On the 19th Maj. E. C. Motherwell destroyed the railroad bridge across the Catawba near Dallas,—the bridge over which President Davis had fled from Charlotte. Motherwell evaded the Confederate forces under Generals Vaughan and Duke, and on the 20th rejoined General Stoneman, who was now retreating to Tennessee, after one of the most destructive cavalry raids that had occurred during the war.

Wilson's Expedition into Alabama.—The cavalry under Wilson's command, which had been refitted and drilled at Gravelly Springs, Ala., nine miles south of Florence, was

visited by Thomas on February 23, 1865. The plan was made for Wilson to destroy the iron centers in Alabama, co-operating with Canby in his movements against Mobile by preventing the Confederates' sending reinforcements.

It was not until March 23 that Wilson was prepared for his expedition. Wilson had 17,000 men under the commands of Upton, Long, and McCook; while another division had been sent to Vicksburg. They had six batteries, 250 wagons, and 30 pontoon boats. Each cavalryman had five days' rations, an extra pair of horseshoes, and 100 rounds of ammunition.

Gen. N. B. Forrest had been made lieutenant-general on February 28, 1865, and Gen. Richard Taylor was valiantly striving to gather a force sufficiently large to check Wilson's move toward Selma, which was the Federals' objective point.

Selma is a town 150 miles from Mobile, situated on the Alabama River. This river is navigable for large boats, and a railroad connected the town with Demopolis and Talladega. It was a most important place, because one of the largest arsenals in the Confederacy was operating here. This same country was rich in history, for General Jackson had won fame in the Creek Indian War in this vicinity.

Forrest's forces were greatly scattered. General Jackson's cavalry division was at West Point, and Chalmers' division was at Columbus, Miss. Roddey with one brigade was picketing in northern Alabama, while Col. Edward Crossland's brigade, some of Gen. Daniel Adams' brigade, and 200 men of Armstrong's command were all the available forces General Forrest could concentrate. In all there were about 2000 men to meet the army which General Wilson was bringing against Forrest.

On starting south Wilson had sent Croxton's brigade, of General McCook's division, to Tuscaloosa to destroy the factories and public property.

Concentrating at Jasper, 80 miles south of Tuscumbia, on the 31st Wilson reached Montevallo, a rich iron manufac-

turing town, 50 miles north of Selma. At Montevallo part of Roddey's brigade offered some resistance; but the Federals succeeded in capturing some and driving the other troopers further south.

At Boyle Creek a desperate hand-to-hand conflict occurred between the small forces of Confederates under Forrest and the Federals. A desperate effort was made to kill Forrest. Long and Upton converged their forces and endeavored to crush Roddey's brigade and Crossland's. In the *mêlée* Forrest killed Captain Taylor, a daring Federal officer, and succeeded in drawing off his own forces toward Selma. Armstrong's brigade, of Jackson's division, was found and hurried in advance to Selma with orders to urge Chalmers to hasten to that place. A courier of Forrest's was captured by Wilson on the morning of April 2, from whom was obtained much valuable information as to the position of Forrest's scattered troops. He learned that Jackson was 30 miles to the northwest, between the Cohawla and Black Warrior rivers, and that Chalmers was at Marion, 30 miles to the southwest. By a mistake in telegraphing Chalmers had caused his command to be farther separated from his chief.

Battle of Selma.—Forrest and his troopers, after a hasty retreat, reached Selma on the morning of April 2. Here he held a hurried conference with Taylor. The latter immediately left on the train for Demopolis in order to send forward what troops he could gather to aid Forrest, who was now arranging his small forces to defend the town; even boys and old men were gathered to help in the defense. All ordnance and military supplies had been sent as fast as possible out of the town. The fortifications were strong, with good ditches and palisades; but Forrest's command was so small that the fortifications could not be covered. Wilson, although he had marched 24 miles the day before and had fought late at night, began his march toward Selma at early dawn. He reached the outskirts by noon of the 2d, before Jackson and Chalmers could

come to Forrest's assistance. After great difficulty in establishing his lines, late in the evening Wilson ordered Long and Upton to make an attack at two separate points. After a short but fierce assault the lines were broken, and Forrest, seeing all efforts to save the town useless, ordered Roddey and Armstrong to make their escape with their brigades by the Montgomery road toward Burnsville. Going around the Federal forces on the north, they reached Plantersville the following morning. In a skirmish on the way Forrest slew a Federal cavalryman. There was probably no soldier in the Civil War who had had more desperate personal encounters; up to this time definite records show that 30 horses had been killed under him and 29 men had fallen by his hand.

Evading McCook's brigades on the way to Marion on April 4 he was joined by Jackson's brigade and Chalmers'.

General Wilson, by his rapid march and successful concentration of his large force, had gained a successful and important victory over Forrest, whose forces were inferior in numbers and greatly scattered. The Federals captured 32 guns and 2000 prisoners, besides destroying the arsenals, machine-shops, large quantities of supplies, and many thousand bales of cotton. On the 4th Tuscaloosa was captured, and marching on to Montgomery, Wilson, on April 14, occupied this city, where five steamboats and many stores fell into his hands.

By forced marches Wilson sent out part of his command toward Columbus, and on to West Point, which were captured by Wilson's soldiers on April 16. At West Point 300 prisoners and 4 guns were taken, as well as a number of locomotives and cars, while at Columbus his prizes were even more valuable, being about as great as at Selma: 1500 prisoners, 52 guns, along with the destruction of a considerable amount of public property.

Macon, Ga., was surrendered April 20 by Gen. Howell Cobb, and 60 guns and 1200 militia were taken.

The news of Lee's surrender had reached him and the knowledge that President Davis was fleeing southward with his family caused Wilson to send the Fourth Michigan cavalry in pursuit of the Confederate President. They captured Mr. Davis on the morning of May 10 at Irwinsville in southern Georgia.

By this time the great Civil War had practically come to a close. Having followed Wilson's operations to the end, we must turn back to consider the more important military operations of Lee and Grant in Virginia, the culmination of which was really the death-blow to the efforts of the Southern States in their heroic attempt to establish an independent nation.

CHAPTER LIV

THE YEAR 1865 IN OLD VIRGINIA

Lee's Final Effort to Save Petersburg and Richmond.

— At an early hour during the morning of January 24 a small fleet of Confederate vessels, 3 ironclads,— the *Virginia*, *Richmond*, and *Fredericksburg*,— with 12 guns, accompanied by 4 wooden vessels, a steamer, and 3 small torpedo boats, passed Fort Brady, the Federal Fort on the James River. Their purpose was to make a destructive attack on City Point.

The Federal guns at Fort Brady opened an active fire on the Confederate vessels, and succeeded in completely wrecking the *Drewy*, one of the wooden vessels, which had stranded at Dutch Gap. A Federal shell striking her magazine caused an explosion, which completely destroyed her. The Confederates now retired up the river.

Grant Resumes Activity Against Lee's Right.

Gregg's division of cavalry started on a movement toward Dinwiddie Court House at 3 a. m., February 5. Gregg was to coöperate with the Fifth Corps under Warren and the Second Corps commanded by General Humphrey. The second and third divisions were under General Smythe and General Mott. Humphrey's divisions were ordered to operate against the Confederates at Hatcher's Run. The main purpose of this expedition was to get a hold on the South Side Railroad and thus force General Lee to evacuate Petersburg.

By nightfall Gregg's cavalry encamped at Rowantz's Creek.

Battle of Hatcher's Run.— De Trobriand's brigade of Mott's division, which was leading, struck the Confederates at Hatcher's Run on the Vaughan Road, and succeeded in

intrenching themselves beyond the ford. At 4:20 p. m. McAllister's brigade and Murphy's, of Smythe's division, were attacked by Gordon's men. Darkness closed the combat, while no material advantage had been gained by either side.

On the forenoon of the 6th the battle began with a general cavalry engagement. Pegram's brigade and Evans', of Gordon's corps, and Mahone's division, of A. P. Hill's, after desperate fighting in a swampy and rough country, at length succeeded in driving the divisions of Crawford and Ayres of the Fifth Corps and Wheaton's division of the Sixth Corps, along with Gregg's cavalry, in a confused retreat back to Hatcher's Run and the Vaughan Road.

The Confederates sustained a great loss in the death of General Pegram. They had also nearly a thousand men killed, wounded, and missing. The Federal losses amounted to more than 1500.

Last Efforts of Lee.— During the latter part of February General Lee had for active service in and around Petersburg and Richmond 35,000 men, with which to protect 40 miles of defenses, which extended from Richmond to Hatcher Run beyond Petersburg and to the South Side Railroad.

Their duties were incessant and fatiguing.

For Lee even to supply his army with food and clothes was a most trying task.

Opposed to this rapidly diminishing army Grant had a magnificent army of 160,000 men, well fed and well equipped. It was now a hopeless part the Confederates were playing; yet in the brave hearts of Lee and his little army there still flickered a hope that had not yet turned to despair.

Sheridan Moves from Winchester.— In order to destroy all Lee's communications north of the James before pushing operations south of the James Grant sent orders to Sheridan to press on toward Lynchburg, destroy the railroad canal of the James, and later reinforce Sherman.

With 10,000 cavalymen,— under Merritt, Custer, and

Colonel Capehart,— and 4 guns, on February 27 Sheridan started up the Old Valley Pike. Although the heavy rains of winter had swollen the streams and made the roads very bad, the Federal cavalry moved fast; they entered Staunton March 2. The inhabitants, knowing of Sheridan's approach, had fled from the place, taking their valuables with them.

Early at Waynesboro.— General Early, with a remnant of his once formidable army, had retreated to Waynesboro on the South River, 13 miles southeast of Staunton. Here, with something over a thousand men, on March 2 Early was attacked by Custer's division and Capehart's brigade. The Confederates were soon routed, the Federals captured two-thirds of their number, several guns, battle-flags, and a large quantity of provisions. General Early succeeded in escaping to Charlottesville. This was the unfortunate ending of the general's military career.

The captured Confederates were sent back toward Winchester under a heavy escort, on which General Rosser, with a small force, made a bold attack at the crossing of the north fork of the Shenandoah (March 6), but was driven off.

Sheridan reached Charlottesville late on the 3d, having destroyed the railroads and bridges, and waited there two days for his wagon-trains to arrive.

Sheridan now sent troops to destroy the railroad and bridges toward Lynchburg and Richmond, but decided not to capture Lynchburg. One force destroyed the James River Canal to New Market, while another force destroyed the railroad to Amherst Court House. Sheridan, unable to reach the South Side Railroad, now turned down the James, almost completely destroying the canal's usefulness. His columns were united March 10 at Columbia, where the James and Rivanna rivers join. Moving by Ashland Station, he crossed the South and North Anna rivers, and proceeded down the Pamunkey River, arriving at White House March 19. The Federals had no respect for any character of property in this

raid; the loss to the Confederates was enormous and greatly handicapped the Confederate authorities in supplying their soldiers with the necessities of life. By March 27 Sheridan had crossed the James River and joined Grant's army at Petersburg.

Hare's Hill.—Toward the last of March Lee realized that the only hope for the Confederate cause was for him to forsake Richmond and join Johnston in North Carolina. Through deserters and by other means this purpose became known to Grant.

This was one of the most trying periods of the military career of General Grant, who said in his report: "I spent days of anxiety, lest each morning should bring the report that the enemy had retreated the night before."

Lee determined to carry out his plans. Supplies were ordered to be accumulated at Amelia Court House,—the purpose being to move down the Danville Railroad. He found it necessary to drive Grant from Boydton Road. Fort Steadman,—situated on Hare's Hill, about two miles from Appomattox River,—was guarded by the Ninth Corps and had to be captured.

At daylight, March 25, the brave and dashing leader, Gen. John B. Gordon, with two divisions, drove the Federals from Fort Steadman, and occupied the fort, with its 500 yards of breastworks, and captured 500 men, with little loss to the Confederates. For lack of support the Confederates were later driven from the works or captured. This was the last offensive effort General Lee was justified in making. The total Confederate loss was 2500 men, 1900 of whom were captured. The Federals had 68 killed, 337 wounded, and 506 missing. The Confederate general could scarcely afford another such loss.

The Last Struggle Around Petersburg.—Grant, now aware of Lee's purpose, moved a strong force against the Confederate general's right, commanded by A. P. Hill, and

consisting of three divisions that extended to Hatcher's Run. On the morning of March 29 the Federal commander-in-chief ordered Sheridan's command to Dinwiddie Court House, and Warren's corps down to White Oak Road. Four miles to the west of Lee's extreme position was Five Forks, where several roads converged. This was a very important strategic point for Lee, and one that Grant now hoped to gain. It was the old plan of outflanking Lee. Heavy rains on March 30 prevented the Federals' active movements. Lee was forced to strip the intrenchments before Petersburg and Richmond in order to support Hill,—leaving only about 7000 men, under Longstreet, to guard the line from Petersburg to Richmond, with Ewell in Richmond. During the stormy nights of the 29th and 30th the remnants of Pickett's division and Bushrod Johnson's, Wire's brigade and Ransom's, Huger's battalion and Fitzhugh Lee's cavalry were sent to A. P. Hill's command; making 15,000 men, to encounter the Federal columns under Sheridan, Warren and Humphrey.

Battle of Five Forks.—On the 30th Sheridan's cavalry was driven back from the vicinity of Five Forks to within two miles of Dinwiddie Court House.

Early on Friday morning, the 31st, Warren pressed forward toward the Confederate right and massed his forces west of Boydton Road. Sheridan complained that Warren was slow in his movements, and had not properly supported him on the 30th. About 11 a. m. Ayres' division and Crawford's, with Winthrop's brigade, were attacked by the Confederates and routed; but Griffin, Miles, and Humphrey sustained the shock, and were able to reform their lines and force the Confederates back into their intrenchment. The Federal infantry losses had been most serious.

Sheridan on the morning of the 31st sent Devin's division and Davis' brigade of Crook's division to Five Forks, while Smith's brigade and Gregg's, of Crook's command, held the

Confederate cavalry at Chamberlain Creek. Devin and Davis seized Five Forks, which had been left unprotected.

Lee in the afternoon sent Pickett and Johnson with their forces to drive out the Federal cavalry at Five Forks. This they succeeded in doing, separating Devin and Davis from Sheridan's main body at Dinwiddie Court House. Sheridan now ordered Smith and Gregg to attack the Confederates in the rear; and by dismounting his troopers he was able to cover the cavalry's retreat, though he suffered severely.

On the night of March 31 Ayres' division of Warren's corps hastily constructed a bridge across Gravelly Run,—the old bridge having been destroyed,—and by 2 a. m., April 1, was moving toward Dinwiddie Court House. Meanwhile Lee had concentrated his forces at Five Forks. With Crawford's division and Griffin's, Warren marched across the country and half-way between Dinwiddie Court House and Five Forks formed a junction with Sheridan's cavalry, which had started for Five Forks at dawn, immediately following their union with Ayres' division. Sheridan, as ranking officer, now assumed command of the united forces, consisting of fully 25,000 men.

By 2 p. m., Sheridan's forces had caused the skirmishers of Lee's line to seek their intrenchments. Warren's whole corps was so arranged as to fall on Pickett's left along the White Oak road, Munford's cavalry was on Pickett's left, with Rosser in the rear, guarding the wagons, while W. H. F. Lee, with one cavalry brigade, guarded the right. Sheridan ordered his cavalry to attack the front and the right flank of the Confederates. The Federal commander ordered the attack at 4 p. m. Crawford's left and Ayres' division suffered considerable loss in their advance and part of Ayres' troops became unsteady and returned to the rear. By Griffin's support, the Federal line was here reformed, and they captured the Confederate works in their front and some

2500 men, with several guns and battle-flags. Crawford's division struck the Confederates almost in the rear capturing four guns and several prisoners. At one time Warren displayed great personal courage in rallying his men under a destructive fire during which his horse was shot under him.

The Federal cavalry had not been quite so successful. The brilliant fighting of W. H. F. Lee's cavalry had repulsed Custer's superior forces, but the infantry of Pickett and Johnson were caught in a pocket and almost surrounded; those who were not captured or killed fleeing in great confusion toward the west, followed by part of the Federal cavalry, under Merritt and McKenzie.

The Federals had lost 1000 men, the majority of whom were from Warren's corps. The Confederate loss was nearly 4000 men, with 6 guns, and 13 colors.

The battle of Five Forks was a very serious disaster to Lee's army. It was the blow that severed the unity of the Confederate army under Lee. The links were rapidly giving way, and it was now a matter of only a few days until the Army of Northern Virginia would be but a name in history.

Sheridan charged Warren with slowness in obeying orders, with dilatoriness in forwarding his troops to Dinwiddie Court House, and with unnecessary slowness in opening the attack at Five Forks. General Griffin was placed in command of the Fifth Corps, and General Grant appointed Warren commander of the Department of the Mississippi.

Grant Learns of the Success at Five Forks.—At 9 p. m., Grant was made aware of the success of Sheridan and Warren. He immediately ordered a cannonading to begin along the line before Petersburg; this cannonading continued all night.

April 3, 1865, came on Sunday. Grant ordered Wright, Parke, and Ord to make a general assault, beginning at early

dawn from Appomattox to Hatcher's Run. By now the Federal soldiers had successfully taken most of the outer works, for hardly one man to every five yards confronted the assaulting army of Grant.

Gibbon's division of Ord's corps met strong resistance at Fort Gregg and at Fort Alexander that commanded the south of Petersburg. In Fort Gregg Harris's Mississippi brigade and Walker's artillery brigade,—consisting of 250 men, commanded by Captain Chew,—wrought great havoc in Gibbon's division. After several hours of desperate fighting the brave band was overcome, having lost all but 30 of their number, while 500 Federal soldiers had lost their lives in the determined assault.

At 10 a. m. General Longstreet reached Lee with Benning's brigade of Field's division. Lee's inner line was still intact.

Heth's division of A. P. Hill's corps, after gaining some success on Grant's right against the Ninth Corps under Parke, was later repulsed.

Death of A. P. Hill.—While this part of the battle was raging General Hill, who was at Turnbull House, Lee's headquarters, conversing with Generals Lee and Mahone, heard the sounds of battle coming closer.

"How is this, General?" he asked.

"Your men are giving way," said Lee.

With but one orderly, Hill rapidly rode forward to get a nearer view of the battle. While passing a ravine, where six Federal soldiers were discovered, he ordering them to surrender, and they were about to submit, but seeing Hill unattended, shot him dead. One of the most zealous, active; dependable of Lee's lieutenants was thus killed just in time to prevent him from seeing the total wreckage of the cause for which he had so valiantly fought since the day that as Colonel of the Thirteenth Virginia Regiment he first faced the battle line at First Manassas.

He was buried at night in the Old Cemetery at Petersburg, while the air was rent with the explosions of magazines and the din of warfare.

Lee Telegraphs President Davis.— It was now 11 a. m. Lee's lines had been broken in three places. The futility of trying longer to hold Petersburg and Richmond was evident. By holding out until night and escaping by the Danville road there was still hope of joining Johnston. After Heth's repulse, Lee sent the following telegram to President Davis:

"My lines are broken in three places; Richmond must be evacuated this evening."

The message was handed by Colonel Taylorwood to President Davis while he was seated in his pew at St. Paul's Episcopal Church. He quietly left the church; and on that bright morning the people of Richmond had not an inkling of the disasters that had befallen the Confederates at Five Forks nor a hint of the broken lines at Petersburg. Peace prevailed everywhere. The people never dreamed that within twenty-four hours the extreme horrors of turmoil, fire, and war were to be precipitated upon their beloved Richmond.

Evacuation and Fall of Richmond.— The citizens of Richmond had been in doubt as to the true situation, but during the afternoon the great activity in the Government departments made it evident that Richmond was to be evacuated. The transportation of important documents, boxes and trunks was of necessity to be from the Danville Railroad depot.

President Davis had left the city by way of Danville at 8 p. m., and by 9 p. m., the majority of the officials and the Virginia Legislature had departed. Major Melton at midnight was alone representing the War Department of the Confederacy.

The tumult increased as darkness came on; and drunkenness, rioting, broken storehouses, wrecked commissary-stores

and a fleeing, frightened populace made the night hideous. But a horror even worse was to come upon the citizens of the devoted capital.

According to orders from Lee and the Administration, General Ewell, the rear-guard commander, was to fire the principal tobacco warehouses of the city and the ironclad vessels on the James River. Many buildings ordered to be spared from fire by General Ewell were fired by the mob at about 3 a. m. The arsenal was destroyed, and only armed resistance by General Anderson prevented the Tredegar works from being fired by the incendiaries. General Kershaw's division barely escaped over the burning canal bridge that had been set on fire to delay the Confederate retreat. At 7 a. m., all of the Confederate troops had passed to the south side of the James. The railroad bridges and Mayo Bridge were burned by the retreating Confederates.

The conflagration now spread rapidly, due, no doubt, in part to incendiaries. Gen. J. B. Kershaw said:

"The large mill above the Danville depot,—and too far distant from it to have been ignited by the burning of the latter,—was observed to be on fire,—a fire not caused by the action of the authorities."

Surrender of Richmond.—A little after 7 a. m., Maj. A. H. Stevens, Jr., entered Richmond just after the Confederate rear-guard had crossed to the south side. Gen. Godfrey Weitzel, at 8:15 a. m., entered the city by the Osborne Pike at the head of his troops, and received its surrender.

He found the greatest confusion, and the city on fire in many places. By 2 p. m., the fires were subdued, but not until after a great part of the capital had been destroyed.

Such is the climax of war. Evacuation and surrender nearly always mean destruction, sometimes by the retreating army, but most often by incendiaries or the victors. Humanity cries out for peace within any reasonable bounds of honor and safety; while Jingoism, with selfish lust for gold,

think only of personal aggrandizement and in ignorance howl the awful discord: "War! War! War!"

The Stars and Stripes were soon hoisted over the Virginia State House. General Shepley assumed military command of Richmond, the same office that he had held at the taking of New Orleans. General Grant did not enter Richmond, but hastened in pursuit of General Lee and his forces.

CHAPTER LV

LEE'S RETREAT AND SURRENDER

General Lee's plan upon the evacuation of Petersburg and Richmond was to concentrate all his forces at Chesterfield Court House, then move toward Burksville Junction, where the Danville Railroad and the Petersburg & Lynchburg Railroad crossed. General Gordon's corps by 3 a. m., had crossed the Appomattox and was marching on the River Road, while Mahone and all the other Confederate troops south of the James were on the Middle Road. Gen. G. W. C. Lee's division crossed the James at Drewry's and united with Kershaw, a few miles from Manchester on the morning of April 3. Ewell's division now moved by the Genito Road to the Appomattox River, but their passage was delayed several hours by the swollen river, and it was not until Wednesday morning, April 5, that they got across.

Marching toward Amelia Court House, they there came up with Lee's rear-guard on the 5th. Lee's advance had reached Amelia Court House on the morning of the 4th; but he was greatly disappointed on account of the absence of supplies which he expected to find awaiting him. It was absolutely necessary to gather something for his exhausted and famished soldiers. The lack of supplies and the consequent delay were fatal. Lee was twenty miles northeast of Burksville Junction, and had not been hindered materially in his retreat thus far.

By the late afternoon of the 4th Sheridan's cavalry, followed by Ord's corps, had reached Jetersville, thus forcing Lee to change his route toward Farmville, to which place supplies had been ordered from Lynchburg. The supplies

destined for Lee's army had by mistaken orders gone through to Richmond two days previous. Lee's army was now on a starving basis and further weakened by marching day and night. Lee's only hope of escape was to penetrate into the hill country toward Farmville.

During the afternoon of April 5 Sheridan's cavalry,—under Brigadier-Generals Davis, Gregg, and Smith, greatly harassed the retreating Confederates.

Sailor's Creek.—Early on Thursday morning, April 6, Longstreet's corps reached Rice's Station on the Lynchburg Railroad, followed by Gens. R. H. Anderson, Ewell, and Gordon. Anderson's corps, consisting of Pickett's division and R. R. Johnston's became separated from Mahone's division, the rear of Longstreet's. About noon, after crossing a small stream two miles from Sailor's Creek, the Federal cavalry attacked Anderson's wagon-train and also the wagon-trains of Gen. G. W. C. Lee and of Kershaw's command, of Ewell's corps. General Gordon was also being pressed heavily. A line of battle was now formed by Anderson and Ewell. The Federal cavalry under Crook, Custer, and Devin were able to cut off a large wagon-train, 16 artillery, and many prisoners, and hold Ewell and Anderson's detached corps until General Wright, with the Sixth Corps came up. The Federal advance infantry, under General Seymour, was compelled to halt because of the stubborn resistance of the Confederates.

Ewell's corps soon became encompassed on all sides by Sheridan's cavalry and Wright's corps, consisting of fully 30,000 men. The fight of the Confederate veterans was never more heroic than here, where the bullets were cutting down their numbers from front and rear.

Ewell at length surrendered, sending orders to Gen. G. W. C. Lee to do likewise, and advised Anderson to do so in order to prevent useless loss of life.

Kershaw, Curtis, Lee, and the brigadier generals were

taken prisoners. Two thousand eight hundred men of Ewell's command and 800 of Pickett's were captured, some 150 killed or wounded. The Federals had lost from their cavalry and infantry nearly 1000 men.

General Gordon's corps had been aided all of the sixth by the cavalry of Fitzhugh Lee, holding Humphrey's Second Corps in check. After the defeat and capture of Ewell the Federals' combined force made a strong attack at about 6 p. m., driving the Confederates back in confusion. In the morning in the vicinity of High Bridge General Rosser's division and Munford, commanding Fitzhugh Lee's old division, after a severe fight defeated Gen. S. T. Read, who was killed while commanding two regiments of Ord's infantry and a squadron of cavalry. General Dearing, Colonel Boston and Maj. J. W. Thomson, among the Confederates, lost their lives. The Federals during this combat lost 780 prisoners, while many were killed.

Lee's army continued its march during the night of the 6th, and every effort was made to reorganize the divisions shattered by the severe ordeal of the day. From sheer exhaustion, hunger, and loss of sleep, many of the soldiers were unable to carry their guns or even drag themselves along, while others, following the wagon-trains, embarrassed their progress. General Lee was not yet willing to give up all hope of extricating his shattered army from the fearful position in which it was now placed.

On the morning of the 7th some four miles east of Farmville Lee's army had crossed to the north side of the Appomattox. The railroad bridge was destroyed, but General Humphrey, with the Second Corps, was able to save the wagon bridge. Barton's division was pushed across with much trouble. At Farmville rations were issued to Lee's famished army, but the rapid pursuit by Barlow's division prevented all the troops being supplied.

Humphrey attacked the rear of Lee's army late in the

afternoon in a more direct pursuit, Miles' division and De Trobriand's making the attack. The loss was severe, amounting to 600 killed and wounded. Gen. Thomas A. Smythe, commander of the Second division was killed.

Lee Reaches Appomattox Court House.— Lee's army, — now reduced to two corps, under Longstreet and Gordon, — by great effort and after enduring fearful hardships moved over wretched roads toward Appomattox Court House on the night of April 7 and all day of the 8th, reaching the place during the evening. A halt was there made so that the army might rest. Just after the repulse of Miles and De Trobriand, on the evening of April 7, General Grant sent his first letter to General Lee concerning negotiations for the surrender of himself and that portion of the Confederate States Army known as the Army of Northern Virginia. Lee wrote an immediate answer, which, however, was not received by Grant until the morning of April 8, in which he said: "Though not entertaining the opinion you express of the hopelessness of further resistance, I ask the terms you will offer, on condition of surrender."

General Humphrey remained ignorant until the morning of the 8th that Lee had retreated. Lee's vigilance, resourcefulness, and skilful generalship had again put many miles between himself and the forces of Grant. While Lee on the 7th was moving toward Appomattox Court House, Sheridan had sent two cavalry divisions to Prince Edward Court House. These divisions were under the command of General Merritt, while General Crook moved to Farmville, where he was forced to ford the stream. The Confederate infantry drove Crook back and captured Brigadier-General Gregg.

On the 7th Sheridan and Merritt pushed forward and camped at Buffalo River, close to Prospect on the Lynchburg Railroad. Here Crook was ordered to join them. Sheridan, on the 8th, made the utmost use of his time to get between Lynchburg and Lee's army which was being pur-

sued closely by the Second and Sixth Corps, commanded by Meade and Grant. Lee was aware of his peril when he reached Appomattox, but was still clinging to the hope that he might escape to the Blue Ridge beyond Lynchburg.

Lee Appoints a Place for Conference.—In this situation, late on the evening of April 8 Lee received Grant's second letter demanding the terms of complete surrender. Lee replied that he would meet Grant at 10 a. m., on the 9th, to consider terms of peace but "not with a view to surrendering the Army of Northern Virginia."

The place designated for the meeting was on the old stage road to Richmond, between the picket lines of the two armies. Grant received Lee's message and replied the following morning, stating that he had no authority to treat on terms of peace, that "the terms upon which peace can be had are well understood," and "the meeting proposed for 10 a. m., to-day, could lead to no good."

By the night of the 8th Sheridan's cavalry, under Curtis and Devin, had cut off Lee's retreat by capturing Appomattox Station, 25 guns, a large number of wagons, and many prisoners. Daylight of the 9th found Sheridan's cavalry; Ord with the Army of the James, and Griffin, with the Fifth Corps, across Lee's line of retreat.

Lee's Last Stand.—Brave and resolute to the very last, aware of a large force massing on the left and front, Lee ordered the march to be resumed at 1 a. m., April 9. Fitzhugh Lee and Gordon were to attack the Federals in front, and Longstreet was to close up and hold the position. "Two battalions of artillery and the ammunition were to accompany the army, while the wagon-trains and the rest of the artillery were to move toward Lynchburg."

At daybreak, April 9, the brilliant and indomitable Gordon, with 1600 muskets, formed a line of battle half a mile west of Appomattox Court House across the Lynchburg road. A cavalry force of 2400 men on Gordon's right,—commanded

by W. H. F. Lee on the left, Rosser in the center, and Munford on the extreme right,—were to support Gordon. At sunrise the desperate valor of the Confederates drove the Federal cavalry back and resulted in the capturing of two guns and several prisoners. The arrival of Ord's corps of infantry on Gordon's right drove W. H. F. Lee's cavalry to the rear, while Rosser and Munford moved out toward the Lynchburg road. Ord's command and Griffin's Fifth Corps drawn up before his small force of infantry, caused Lee to send forward a white flag with a request to cease hostilities until he could confer with Grant.

Lee's Surrender to Grant at Appomattox Court House.—On the morning of April 9, 1865, a heavy fog hung over the country around Appomattox Court House. General Lee, wearing a bright new uniform, sat near a camp-fire talking to Longstreet and Mahone. Gordon had been sent on the last mission of a forlorn hope, and his failure to penetrate the Federal lines, due to the timely arrival of Ord's corps and Griffin's, determined Lee's procedure. Leaving General Longstreet in charge, Lee rode forward to meet Grant. Receiving the Federal general's letter on the way, he at once answered asking an interview to ascertain definitely the terms of surrender.

General Grant received Lee's last letter at 11:50 a. m., on the Farmville and Lynchburg Road, four miles west of Walter's Church. He at once returned an answer to Lee, saying: "Notice sent to me on this road where you wish the interview to take place will meet me."

The interview between Grant and Lee, resulting in the surrender of Lee and his army, took place at the home of Mr. Wilmer McLean,—a square brick building. General Lee,—wearing his new gray uniform, a military hat with a gold cord, gauntlets, high riding boots, and a sword presented to him by the State of Virginia,—accompanied by Colonel Marshall, his Chief of Staff, entered the house first.

Standing by a table,—tall, erect, self-possessed,—ready to perform to the last the trying duty set before him, he awaited Grant. This was the tragic climax of four years of most exacting labor, with responsibilities of life that only great men can endure.

General Grant, in striking contrast,—covered with mud, wearing a blue frock coat, slouched hat, a blue waistcoat, and gray trousers tucked into soiled boots, his rank indicated only by three silver stars and the double row of brass buttons,—walked into the house accompanied by Generals Ord and Sheridan and their staffs. Grant, with two aides, entered the room where Lee was standing.

They shook hands and at once proceeded to business. Grant wrote out the terms of surrender to which Lee at once wrote his letter of acceptance. After a moment's reflection General Lee said that many of his men of the cavalry and artillery owned their own horses. Grant replied that he would instruct the paroling officers to allow the owners of horses to retain them.

"They will need them for their spring ploughing and other forms of work," he said.

Lee replied: "General, there is nothing which you could have accomplished more for the good of the people or of the government."

The general formalities of the terms were then concluded.

Lee's thoughts now turned toward his suffering army and prisoners. He told Grant that he had no provisions for the thousand or more captured men and officers who were marching with his army and would send them to the Federal lines as soon as arrangements could be made, saying: "My own men have been living for the last few days principally on parched corn, and we are badly in need of both rations and forage." Grant said he would send Lee 25,000 portions of rations, which the Confederate general told him would be ample and a great relief.

Grant's splendid magnanimity stands out in marked contrast to the brutality and barbarism of the conquerors of ancient or medieval history, and even to many known instances in the history of the modern world. Our country's liberality to the losers in the Revolutionary War and in the late Spanish War has shown the spirit of the nation. The Army of Northern Virginia on the field was surrendered, with its arms, artillery, and wagon-trains; the officers and men to be paroled retaining their side-arms and private effects.

After his interview with Grant,—that is, after his surrender,—Lee rode back to his troops. They received him with the greatest evidence of love and affection, crowding around him, eager to shake his hand, or even to touch his horse or person. Tears forced their way down the weather-beaten faces of these splendid veterans of war as they realized the humiliation that surrender and defeat must inflict on their beloved Chieftain and the hopelessness of their unsurpassed struggle for four years.

General Lee now turned to his soldiers and, with a depth of emotion, which he was scarcely able to control, said:

"Men, we have fought through the war together. I have done my best for you. My heart is too full to say more."

The following day Lee took formal leave of his army, and returned to his home in Richmond. He was not present at the final scene of the surrender.

The details of surrender were prepared by three officers on each side; and on April 12, at an appointed place near Appomattox Court House, the Confederates, marching by divisions, stacked their arms and deposited their military supplies. Paroles were distributed, and the Army of Northern Virginia had passed into history. The cornerstone of the Confederacy had crumbled and the building was tottering to its fall.

Scarcely 8000 men bore muskets; of the 250 field pieces in the lines before Richmond and Petersburg 61 remained

and thirteen caissons; 18,000 more exhausted, sick soldiers, without guns, made up the remainder of the once magnificent army that surrendered on April 9, 1865.

Grant was not present at the ceremony, neither did he assume the air of a conqueror. His delicacy and magnanimity on this occasion have set apart for him a place of gratitude in Southern hearts.

After the surrender Grant set out for Washington, where he arrived on the morning of April 14, one of the most fateful days in the history of the Great Republic.

CHAPTER LVI

LINCOLN'S ASSASSINATION

Lincoln had been at City Point for several days. After the evacuation of Richmond, in company with Admiral Porter on his flagship the *Malvern*, he ascended the James River, and entered Richmond on April 4. With expressions of joy, the negroes crowded around him on his way through the city. He rested at General Weitzel's headquarters and then drove through some of the principal streets of the city, returning to City Point the same evening. He again visited Richmond on April 6, and on the day of Lee's surrender returned to Washington. There was naturally great rejoicing in Washington and throughout the North on the announcement of the surrender of the Confederates.

On the evening of April 11 Washington was brilliantly illuminated, and at the White House Lincoln during the evening addressed a large gathering. His words were full of hope and encouragement, and in his discussion of the reconstruction in the South he revealed the fact that no bitter revenge was meditated against the subjugated people.

General Grant, as has been narrated, entered Washington on the morning of April 14, accompanied by Capt. Robert Lincoln, the President's son,—then serving as one of Grant's staff officers. At 11 a. m., a cabinet meeting at which Grant was present, was held. Pleased with the apparent end of the great civil strife, policies were discussed as to the best method of restoring the South. After the meeting plans were made for General Grant to accompany the President and party to Ford's Theater during the evening to see "Our American Cousin."

Between the hours of 8 and 9 p. m., Lincoln,—accompanied by Mrs. Lincoln, Miss Clara Harris, and Maj. H. R. Rathbone,—entered the theater. General Grant was not of the party, having been called to New York on urgent business.

It was a short time after 10 o'clock, the performance was nearing the end, when a pistol shot rang out from the President's box. The astonished audience then saw a man in front of the box who flourished a dagger and cried out: "*Sic Semper Tyrannis!*" then vaulted from the box to the stage. His landing was broken for one foot became entangled in the Stars and Stripes,—which decorated the front of the box and he fell to the floor. Quickly rising,—though evidently injured in one leg,—he rushed to the rear of the stage. Here he mounted a horse and fled. Wilkes Booth, the star actor, had shot President Lincoln in the head,—a shot that resulted in the President's death the following morning.

It was a sad, sad day for the North,—a most unfortunate and lamentable tragedy for the South. The splendid conciliatory policies for reconstruction were discontinued. The South had to drink to the dregs the bitter cup of humiliation imposed upon her by the carpetbag régime with its insults and defeats even more trying than the burning, searing effects of destructive warfare.

Having lain in state in the East Room of the White House until April 19, President Lincoln's remains were then removed,—by way of Baltimore, Philadelphia, New York, and Albany,—to his old home at Springfield, Ill. It was one of the most remarkable funerals of ancient or modern times. Huge crowds flocked to the cities along the way to get a glimpse of the departed President's passive face.

On the same evening that Lincoln was shot, Mr. Seward, Secretary of State, was assaulted in his home and severely injured, barely escaping with his life. Lewis Payne, the

assassin, escaped, but was afterwards taken and executed, with Herold, Atzerodt and Mrs. Surratt, on July 6. She had harbored the conspirators, Herold and Atzerodt. The latter was to have killed Vice-President Johnson. Herold was captured when Booth was shot in a barn twenty miles from Fredericksburg.

The Southern Confederate leaders, including President Davis, were held under strong suspicion until facts showed them to be perfectly innocent and the accusations to be the most cruel and unjust slander.

CHAPTER LVII

IMPORTANT EVENTS OF THE WAR AFTER LEE'S SURRENDER. JOHNSTON AND SHERMAN

Six hours after the death of Lincoln,— Vice-President Johnson was sworn in as President of the United States. All the members of Lincoln's cabinet were retained in office. The wheels of the Federal Government continued to revolve but bitter partisan feeling began to make itself felt in the capital.

On April 9, the day of Lee's surrender, Johnston's army, — scarcely 35,000 in number,— was stationed at Smithfield, North Carolina, covering Raleigh. Sherman ordered his army of 88,948 effective men to move from Goldsboro, and by April 11 they reached Smithfield, only to find that Johnston's army had retreated toward Raleigh, having burned the bridges behind them. During the same night Grant's messengers reached Sherman telling him of Lee's surrender. The following morning the army received the news with a great demonstration of joy.

Sherman now began his pursuit of Johnston, entering Raleigh on the 13th. Fearing that Johnston would separate his army into smaller commands and escape to the mountains, Sherman ordered the head of his army toward Asheville.

On the morning of April 14, while Sherman was at Raleigh, Johnston,— who had by this time received word of Lee's surrender,— sent the Federal commander a message relative to a suspension of military activities, asking that long enough time be given for Sherman to notify Grant, and that the civil authorities be permitted to make the necessary ar-

rangements to end the war. This was in order "to spare the blood of his gallant little army, to prevent further suffering of the people by the devastation and ruin inevitable from the marches of invading armies, and to avoid the crime of waging a hopeless war."

Sherman's reply was that he would abide by the terms that had been agreed upon by Grant and Lee at Appomattox Court House, and that on the 9th all army movements would be suspended until after the conference.

A meeting between Johnston and Sherman was agreed upon, to take place five miles from Durham Station on the morning of April 17. Just as Sherman was ready to board the car that took him to Durham Station, a message from Secretary Stanton was handed to him, conveying the sad news of Lincoln's death. At the Station of Durham at about 10 o'clock in the morning an escort under General Kilpatrick met Sherman and his staff.

The morning was glorious, with its invigorating air, bright sunshine, and bursting springtide. The fragrance of the new-born foliage and the twittering of the happy songsters in the woods, were fit harbingers of peace. Yet the sadness caused by Lincoln's death was to hang like a cloud over the armies.

General Johnston, accompanied by Gen. Wade Hampton, Major Johnson, and Captain Hampton, met Sherman and his staff at the appointed place. They shook hands and introduced their escorts. They now proceeded to a little farmhouse, situated at the top of a small hill,—the residence of a Mrs. Bennett.

Their attendants having left them, Sherman showed Johnston the message of Lincoln's death. The news shocked and surprised Johnston, and he denounced the crime.

The two generals now began to discuss the purpose of their meeting. Sherman had not told his staff nor the army of Lincoln's death, as he expressed the belief that it was likely

to engender a more bitter feeling. Johnston insisted upon certain agreements to which Sherman did not have the authority to accede. After a three hours' interview, they agreed to meet the following afternoon at the same place.

Sherman, on his return to Raleigh, made known the news of Lincoln's death to the army; and the sorrow of the soldiers was genuine and deep. Sherman then conferred with his generals as to the action to be taken in regard to Johnston's army.

On April 18 at noon, Sherman arrived at the Bennett farm, where Johnston, accompanied by Gen. Wade Hampton, arrived at 2 p. m. General Johnston still insisted upon some guarantee being given in the terms of surrender for securing the political rights of his officers and men. Sherman argued that Grant's terms to Lee covered these rights. General Breckinridge, Confederate Secretary of War, who was near, was called into the conference.

Basis of Agreement Between Johnston and Sherman.

— Soon afterward Sherman drew up the memorable Basis of Agreement, which was signed by him and Johnston and forwarded to Washington for the approval of President Johnson. It was agreed that the armies should remain *in status quo* until an answer could be received from the authorities. The Memorandum provided for the surrender of all Confederate armies in existence, and further provided that all arms and military supplies should be deposited at the capital of each State; that officers and men were to execute an oath of allegiance to the Federal Authorities, that "the Executive of the United States was to recognize the several State Governments upon the oath of allegiance to United States authority by the officers and legislatures of the said States; that the Federal Courts were to be reestablished in these States, with powers, as 'defined' by the constitutions; that the people were guaranteed their political rights and franchises as far as lay in the power of the Executive,—their property and persons to have like consideration; and that they

were to remain undisturbed by the United States as long as they lived in peace and quiet, and abstained from armed hostilities."

President Johnson, upon receiving the communication, highly disapproved of it, and General Grant and the whole cabinet considered that much of it was entirely out of Sherman's province to grant. The terms were far more generous than those given by Grant to Lee, and Sherman was severely censured and denounced by many of the Federal authorities and particularly by General Halleck. It is absolutely absurd to suppose that Sherman had any other idea or design except to further the interest of the Federal cause. There is, however, a question as to his entire sincerity toward Johnston and the disbanding armies and people of the lost cause. His desire for peace led him far in submitting liberal terms, but there were in the basis of agreement many loopholes, through which the authorities could slip.

Sherman's explanations a few weeks later before a Congressional committee showed something of this trend of thought. He said that the terms were "some general propositions, meaning little or much, to cover the pride of the Southern men," and that "they would have delivered into the hands of the United States the absolute control of every Confederate officer and soldier, and all their arms."

Later, in speaking before a meeting of ex-Federal soldiers he said: "So, soldiers, when we marched through and conquered the country of the rebels, we became owners of all they had, and I don't want you to be troubled in your conscience for taking, while on our great march, the property of conquered rebels. They forfeited their rights to it, and I, being agent for the Government, gave you authority to keep all the quartermasters couldn't take possession of or didn't want."

Johnston's Surrender.—Grant went to Raleigh to talk the matter over with Sherman, and to notify him of the re-

jection of the Memorandum. He reached Sherman's headquarters April 24 and the same terms were given to Johnston as had been given to Lee.

At an interview, April 26, Johnston and Sherman signed the agreement, which had been approved by Gen. U. S. Grant. Gen. Wade Hampton, however, refused to abide by the agreement, and with a body of cavalry, escaped toward Charlotte, where were President Davis and other officers of the Confederate Government.

Johnston's army of nearly 31,243 men stacked their arms at Greensboro, received their paroles, and with sufficient guns to protect themselves from marauders, started in bands for their homes in the Carolinas, Georgia, Tennessee, and other States from which they had come. Thus the second great army of the Confederacy became a matter of history.

To General Schofield fell the duty of paroling the soldiers. Gen. Richard Taylor, who was now in command of the troops in Alabama, Mississippi, and the remaining troops east of the Mississippi River, surrendered May 4, at Citronella, Ala., to General Canby, the terms of surrender being practically the same as had been granted to Lee and Johnston. Gen. Nathaniel B. Forrest, the great cavalryman, who was now in command of all the cavalry, accepted the terms, and returned to Memphis to live.

Capture of the President's Family, Postmaster Reagan, and Alexander H. Stephens.—As we have noted, a band of cavalry under Colonel Pritchard, of Wilson's command, captured President Davis.

After leaving Greensboro and Charlotte, and passing Abbeville, S. C.,—where President Davis had a conference with Generals Duke and Vaughan as to the continuance of the war,—no hope being held out, the President pushed toward Irwinsville, due south of Macon, having joined his wife and party near this place on the evening of May 9. Here they were surrounded by the Federal troops at daybreak, May 10,

captured and carried to Macon, Wilson's headquarters. A \$100,000 reward had been offered for his apprehension. President Davis, Postmaster-General Reagan, and Vice-President Stephens were sent by way of Savannah to Fortress Monroe, where the former President of the Confederacy remained until May 13, 1867. Reagan and Stephens were later transferred to Fort Warren in Boston Harbor.

General Jeff. Thompson, who commanded a force of several thousand men in Arkansas, surrendered on May 11 at Chalk Bluff.

Last Battle of the Civil War, Palmetto Ranch. May 13, 1865.—Not on account of its importance, but because it was the last battle of the Civil War, the engagement at Palmetto Ranch on the Rio Grande assumes distinction. It also forcibly illustrates the magnitude of a war that extended from Lancaster, Pa., to the frontier of Texas and New Mexico,—a distance of 3500 miles.

Col. Theodore H. Barrett, with some 500 Federal troops, on May 13 attacked the Confederates commanded by General Slaughter. During the skirmishing of the forenoon the Confederates retreated, but about 4 p. m. they returned to the attack and succeeded in driving Barrett before them, and in capturing a considerable number of his men. Darkness caused a cessation of the fight, which proved to be the last of the war.

The Surrender of Gen. Kirby Smith.—The last hope of President Davis was that the Confederacy could be re-established and maintained in the Transmississippi country. Gen. Kirby Smith was in chief command in this district and resolutely determined to maintain a military organization, if possible. He did not consider it a part of a soldier's duty to surrender until his chief spoke, and there was no foe present in sufficient numbers to force his surrender. He appealed to the soldiers to stand to their colors.

His army was scattered, for the disbanded armies of Lee

and Johnston returning home produced great demoralization in his forces. Some of the governors of the Southern States advised surrender. The soldiers had not been paid for months, and hundreds began to desert day and night. At this juncture,—leaving Buckner in command of the forces at Shreveport, La., General Smith went to Houston, Tex., in order to help hold the army together.

The Federal Government began now to make active preparation for a campaign into Texas. General Sheridan was to have charge of the expedition; but it became unnecessary, and arrangements were not completed. Smith, despairing of any successful continuance of the war, on May 26, 1865, completed the negotiations for the surrender to General Canby of the troops west of the Mississippi River. These included Buckner's command and General Price's Missourians.

This ended the Civil War in the United States of America. In the number of men engaged, in loss of life, in cost, in severity of combat, in extent of the country fought over, and in courage displayed it was a struggle scarcely equaled in the annals of the world's history.

Results.—The Southern Confederacy,—which had its birth during the first travails of civil strife and which after a storm of fire and sword passed out of existence as the armies of Lee, Johnston, Taylor, and Smith surrendered to the mightier forces of the Federal Government,—was now but a memory which was to live in the hearts and minds of its survivors and of their children's children as a sacred heritage, an evidence of the heroic courage and sublime sacrifices endured by the participants in the terrific conflict.

The North by their persistency and immense resources had fairly conquered and reestablished one nation, where two would otherwise have been.

Abolition of negro slavery became an established fact,—an issue that would never again cause dissension in our beloved land.

Questions of State Rights were now put to rest; for a State by means of armed force could be kept in the Union. Federal power had been proven to be supreme.

The South was completely prostrated; many of the cities were in ashes, thousands of farms had been laid waste, and the buildings were in ruins. Tens of thousands of its strong men had been killed, and the slaves,—coached by irresponsible and low-grade whites,—now became the legislators. It was to take a quarter of a century before the spirit of the New South would make itself felt.

An enormous debt hung over the whole people. The North had lost her marine commerce; from being the carrier-nation of the world, she stood now on the lower rounds of the commercial ladder. Although her loss of life had been even greater than that of the South, her population was so much larger that it was not so observable. Her farms and lands had not been reduced to desolation, nor had her cities been destroyed by invading armies.

CHAPTER LVIII

THE RELATIVE FIGHTING FORCES OF THE TWO CONTESTANTS. THEIR LOSSES IN MEN AND MONEY

The population of the United States at the beginning of the Civil War was in round numbers 32,000,000. Of this population 9,150,000 resided within the eleven seceded States that constituted the Confederacy, and of this number nearly 4,000,000 were negroes. There were 1,064,193 men of the military age (18 to 45) available for the Confederacy to draw from for their armies. The border States,— Kentucky, Missouri, Maryland, and West Virginia, gave to the Confederate service about 100,000 men, while there were 52,847 Unionists to enter the Federal armies from the eleven seceded States,— mostly from the mountainous regions of Virginia, North Carolina, Georgia, Tennessee, and Alabama.

To offset this number gained from the border States, the Federal authorities enlisted and used during the war 180,000 negro troops, who in many engagements did effective service. The North had a population of 23,000,000 to draw from, many of whom were foreign-born. The white male population between the ages of 18 and 45 was 4,559,872. The border States of Kentucky, Missouri, Maryland, and West Virginia, gave to the Federal service 263,068 soldiers. The total number enlisted during the whole war into the Union Army, according to different computations, varied from 2,772,408 to 2,898,304. The terms of enlistment varied from three months' service to three years'. The number that served three years, after averaging the total enlistment, aggregated 1,556,678 men.

It has been more difficult to obtain an accurate estimate of the Confederate enlistment, and the equivalent terms of service.

The relative strength of the two armies at different comparative dates as reported by their respective authorities will shed considerable light upon this disputed question.

The Federal authorities reported, July 1, 1861, 186,751 men in service; the Confederates showed 98,000.

On January 1, 1862, the Federal forces were 575,917; the Confederates reported 350,000.

On March 31, 1862, the Federals had increased to 637,126; the Confederates to 353,000.

On January 1, 1863, the aggregate Federal forces numbered 918,191; the Confederacy had under arms 441,000.

On January 1, 1864, the Federal force was nearly double that of their opponents, or 860,737; the Confederates' being 471,000,—their largest number.

On January 1, 1865, the Federals had increased to 959,460; while the total number of Confederates was 418,000, and this number was rapidly diminishing, the coherence of their armed forces was fast giving way.

On May 1, 1865, the Federal forces amounted to 1,000,516; while the total number of Confederates surrendered was 174,223. Thus the average fighting strength of the Federals was as 225 men to 100.

Number of Confederates Engaged.—The number of men that came under call and conscription between 1861 and the spring of 1865 was nearly 1,269,000. Deducting from this number 1 per cent. per annum for natural death,—or about 100,000,—and 25,000 for infirmities of body, we have left 1,144,000.

Dr. Joseph Jones, Confederate Surgeon-General, A. H. Stephens, and other Confederates, have placed the Confederate forces engaged at nearly 600,000, while Adjutant-General Cooper gives the following figures:

Total death from wounds, disease, and in battle, 200,000.

Prisoners not exchanged, 200,000.

Discharges and desertions, from '61 to '65, 100,000.

Force in field at close of war, 100,000.

Total, 600,000.

Colonel Fox in regimental loss says that there were 764 regiments, and 10 companies, which does not include home guards, consolidated regiments, local defense regiments, militia, junior and senior reserves, and the estimated original enrollments, 850 per regiment, making 650,000. It seems safe to say that there were engaged during the war between 750,000 and 800,000 men in the Confederate armies and that nearly 625,000 averaged a service of three years.

There were killed in battle 53,973; 40,027 died of mortal wounds; 118,594 died of diseases; 220,000 were captured and held in Federal prisons; 12 per cent., or 26,436, according to Mr. Stanton, Secretary of War (July 19, 1866), died as prisoners; 114,811 were discharged, and it was estimated that 83,372 deserted.

It has been easier to get more accurate figures concerning the Federal losses. Sixty-seven thousand fifty-eight were killed in battle; 43,012 died of wounds; 249,458 died of diseases and accidents; 125,000 deserted; 426,664 were discharged. There had been captured and held in Southern prisons 270,000 Federal soldiers, 9 per cent. of whom died,—according to Secretary Stanton's report,—or 22,570 men. These figures, representing the mortality of prisoners, show greater care for the Federals' prisoners, which is easily accounted for, since the Confederates were often in great want of suitable provisions for their own armies.

The Losses in Property and Money.—The cost to the nation of the Civil War was almost unprecedented in history. June 1, 1861, the public debt of the Federal Government was \$90,867,828. On the 1st of January, 1866, the public debt had reached the enormous sum of \$2,749,491,745.

In addition to this almost inconceivable sum there had been hundreds of millions of dollars raised in the North from individuals, by popular subscriptions and by individual States. To this might be added the great loss of maritime commerce and \$783,000,000 raised by customs. The expenditure for the last year of the war was equivalent to the total expenses of the United States Government from Washington's first term as President of the Republic to Buchanan's inauguration.

Great as was the sacrifice and hardship imposed upon the Federal Government and the North in order to maintain the war, proportionate to their resources it could not compare to the almost unbelievable and fearful cost in material resources which the South had to bear. Invading armies had destroyed and laid waste the fair and blooming Southland, with its farms, barns, dwellings, canals, railroads, manufactories and cities. From the splendid valley of the Shenandoah River and the Potomac to far beyond the great waters of the Mississippi all was devastation. The enormous demands upon its people to maintain its armies in the field, the destruction of the cotton and the blockade of the harbors paralyzed its finances. The loss of 4,000,000 slaves had a definite monetary value to the South that can never be known. South Carolina, with a property value at the beginning of the war of \$400,000,000, at the close could scarcely find valuation to the sum of \$90,000,000; and possibly Virginia suffered as greatly. These can serve as an example of the hardships endured by the seceding States.

War is the climax of human suffering, and the majority of wars are evil and unnecessary. The human mind, however,—being finite in its range of knowledge and wisdom, and often made perverse by envy, misunderstanding, jealousy, and selfishness,—lets nations drift into hatred and then into bloodshed.

The immensity of our civil strife and the horrible anguish

endured cannot be told in words or in figures. That 1882 battles, in which a regiment or more were engaged, were fought and smaller skirmishes and individual scouting combats too innumerable to mention occurred can only bring to our minds a faint conception of the intensity and awfulness of the great Civil War in the United States.

The Aftermath.—The great combat of arms was over. The problems of government that now confronted the Federal authorities were of vast importance and likely to be of dangerous consequence to the nation's welfare, if left in bungling hands.

The grand review at Washington of 200,000 veterans occurred May 22 and 23, when the victorious armies of Grant and Sherman marched before the President and his cabinet. The veteran soldiers filed between the vast multitude of people, but with every evidence of rejoicing, sadness was present, for Lincoln, who had now become the Northerners' most beloved character, was absent.

The great task of mustering out over a million armed men was at once begun, and by November 15, 1865, over 750,000 soldiers had been transported, paid, and mustered out of service. In another twelve months 1,025,000 men had been honorably discharged from military service, and in the majority of instances had returned to their various peaceful vocations. The adventurous, restless spirits, however, hastened the opening of the yet sparsely settled West.

The greatest problem, in a political sense, with which the prostrated South had to deal belongs to the Reconstruction Period, which is truly one of the saddest pages in American history.

The Return of the Confederate Soldiers.—The great mass of surviving soldiers of the Confederacy returned to their homes,—which in thousands of instances were charred remains of what had once been peaceful, happy dwelling-places,—penniless, and in many cases without the welcoming

voice of parent, sister, or brother to greet them, while even the smiling faces and joyful voices of the old negro servants had departed. The fruits of three and four generations of toil had all been devoured by the greedy god of war. Yet there remained in their bosoms honor and a desire to again place the loved ones still dependent on them in a position of mental and bodily comfort. Many years of heartache and bitter humiliation had to be endured. The opening of the Twentieth Century and the establishment of the New South bear witness to how truly and faithfully the old soldiers have served their trust and kept their word.

Thus ends the story of one of the greatest civil strifes in all history.

All honor to those who sacrificed their lives and fortunes on both sides, worthily warring for the right as they saw the right. All respect and consideration for those who survived the dreadful conflict, and whose lives and thoughts are now mellowed toward their fellow men by the remembrance of their former tribulations!

For the noble women who endured so many heartaches because of absent fathers, husbands, brothers, sons, and sweet-hearts, the death of those most dear, or the loss of home and the consequent dire poverty and distress, no praise can be too great,—no tribute too high.

PRINCIPAL SOURCES OF INFORMATION

Appended is a list of the principal sources of information used in the preparation of "A History of the Civil War in the United States." The printed matter, however, does not cover all the information gathered. The value of individual narratives,—parts of which have been incorporated in the above history,—has been carefully considered.

RECORDS

"War of The Rebellion Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies."

Series I. vols. I.-LII. Serial, No. 1-110. Reports and Correspondences.

Series II. "Prisoners of War."

Series III. "Union Correspondences."

Series I. "Official Records of the Union and Confederate Navies in the War of the Rebellion."

HISTORIES OF THE CIVIL WAR

Burgess, John W. "Civil War and the Constitution." 2 vols. New York, 1901-1909.

Century Co. "Battles and Leaders of the Civil War." 8 vols. New York, 1884-1887-88.

Cox, Jacob D. "Battle of Franklin." 1 vol. New York, 1897.

"The Atlanta Campaign." 1 vol. New York, 1882-1903.

Coffin, C. C. "Drum Beat of the Nation." 1 vol. New York, 1904

"Boys of '61." New York, 1901.

Davis, Jefferson. "The Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government." 1881.

Dodge, Colonel Ayerault. "Bird's-eye View of the Civil War." 1 vol. Boston, 1897.

Eggleston, George Cary. "The History of the Confederate War." New York, 1910.

Fiske, John. "The Mississippi Valley in Civil War." Boston, 1900.

Greeley, Horace. "The American Conflict." New York, 1864-66.

Gordon, Gen. John B. "Reminiscences of the Civil War." 1 vol. New York, 1904.

- Pollard, Edward. Editor of the *Richmond Examiner*.
"The Lost Cause." 1 vol. New York, 1866. General
"Lee and His Lieutenants." New York, 1867.
Wilson, John Laird. "Story of the War." 1 vol. New
York, 1876-81.

STATISTICS

- Fox. "War Statistics."
Livermore, F. L. "Numbers and Losses in the Civil War
in America." Boston, 1901.

BIOGRAPHIES

- Jackson, Mary Anna. "Memoirs of Stonewall Jackson." 1
vol. Louisville, 1895.
Ketcham, Henry. "Abraham Lincoln." 1 vol. New
York, 1904.
Lee, Fitzhugh. "Robert E. Lee." 1 vol. New York, 1894-
1904.
Grant, U. S. "Personal Memoirs." 1 vol. New York,
1885-86.
Mahan, Capt. A. T. "Admiral Farragut." 1 vol. New
York, 1904.
Pendleton, Louis. "Alexander H. Stephens." Phila-
delphia, 1907.
Wyeth, Dr. John A. "Life of Gen. John B. Forrest." 1
vol. New York, 1899-1901
Wilson, James G. "U. S. Grant." 1 vol. New York,
1897-1904.

PERIODICALS

- Six years' publication of *The Confederate Veteran*, 1906-
1913. Nashville.

HISTORIES OF THE UNITED STATES

Channing, Edward. "Students' History of the United States." 1 vol. New York, 1897.

Hart, A. B. Editor *American Nation*.

"Causes of the Civil War," vol. XIX.

"Appeal to Arms," vol. XX.

"Outcome of the Civil War," vol. XXI. New York, 1906-07.

Ridpath's United States History.

Ropes, John Codman. "Story of the Civil War." 2 vols. New York, 1905.

"The American History Series." 6 vols. New York, 1897-1909.

Wilson, Woodrow. "History of the American People." 5 vols. New York, 1902.

Waring, George E. "Whip and Spur."

"Historic Characters and Famous Events." Lamberton, J. P., Editor. 12 vols. Millet Publishers, Boston, Mass., 1902.

THE END

INDEX

INDEX

- Abolitionists, 117.
 Abolition of Slavery, 381.
 Abbeville, S. C., 338, 379.
 Abingdon, Va., 278, 317.
 Ackworth, Ga., 226, 299.
 Adams, John C., brig-gen., Franklin k, 305.
 Alabama, secession, 18.
 Alabama River, 242, 348.
 Alabama, The, C cruiser, 242, 246; history, 246, 247; action, 247; losses, 248; claims, 248.
 Alexandria, Va., 39, 40, 107, 109, 111.
 Alexandria, La., 159, 160, 218.
 Allatoona, Ga., 226; battle, 299, 300; losses, 300.
 Allen's Farm, Va. (Seven Days), battle, 103.
 Amelia Court House, Va., 355, 363.
 Ames, Adelbert, U maj-gen., 266, 293; Fort Fisher, 319, 327, 330.
 Anderson, Robert, U maj., removal to Sumpter, 19; defence of Sumpter, 29; withdrawal, 29; Cincinnati, 33; at Louisville, 46; superseded, 46.
 Anderson, R. H., C lieut-gen., Chancellorsville, 146, 147; Gettysburg, 162, 176; Wilderness, 257; in Shenandoah, 280, 281, 282; Petersburg, 361; Sailor's Creek, 364.
 Andersonville, Ga., 236.
 Andersonville Prison, 236.
 Annapolis, Md., 31.
 Antietam, Md. (Sharpsburg), battle, 114, 115; strength and losses, 115, 116; results, 116, 117.
 Appomattox (Court House) Va., 366, 368, 370; campaign, 366, 367; Lee surrenders, 368, 369, 370.
 Appomattox River, 36, 266, 274, 363, 365.
 Aquia Creek, Va., 65, 107, 108.
 Archer, Jas., C brig-gen., battle of Antietam, 115.
 Area of the South, 24.
 Arkansas, secession, 20, 32; refuses Lincoln's call for troops, 30; general condition, 133; loyalty to Confederacy, 133, 203.
 Arkansas Post, 131; forces, 131.
 Arkansas River, 131.
 Armies of Northern Va., 366, 367; surrender, 370.
 Armistead, Lewis A., C brig-gen., 175, 176.
 Armstrong, Frank C., C brig-gen., 348, 350.
 Army of the Cumberland, 195, 224, 240.
 Army of the James, 367.
 Army of the Miss., 85, 123.
 Army of the Ohio, 195; Gen. Buell in command, 123; Gen. Rosecrans appointed, 127; in Ga., 122, 123, 195, 224, 240; in N. C., 344.
 Army of the Potomac, McClellan in command, 46; its organization, 46, 58, 94; in the Peninsular campaign, 94, 104; withdrawal, 105; Pope, 108; McClellan, 111; Burnside, 117; Hooker, 121, 142; Meade, 165; under Grant, 255, 256.
 Army of the Tennessee, in Miss., 85, 123; at Chattanooga, 195; Atlanta, 224, 237, 240; in N. C., 344.
 Army of Va., under Pope, 107.
 Arsenals, 19, 20.
 Ashby Turner, C brig-gen., Romney campaign, 60.
 Atchafalaya River, La., 159.
 Athens, Ala., 195, 302.
 Atlanta, Ga., importance, 224; C defenses, 224; battles, 234, 237, 238, 239; U occupation, 240; destruction, 241, 320; natives exiled, 240, 241; losses, 241.
 Atlanta campaign, topography, 232; strength of Johnston and Sherman, 224; cavalry, 224; battles, 225, 226, 228, 229; losses C, 232, U, 227, 230.
 Atlanta to Savannah campaign, Sherman's preparations for, 301, 320, 321; order of march, 321; U strength, 321; results, 325.
 Augur, Christopher C., U maj-gen., 160.
 Augusta, Ga., 313, 322, 334, 335.
 Averell, Wm. W., U brig-gen., Kanawha Valley, 267; in Shenandoah, 279, 280, 282, 283.
 Averysboro', S. C., battle, 339, 340.
 Ayres, R. B., U maj-gen., Petersburg, 353, 356, 357.
 Bailey, Theodorus, U commodore, New Orleans, 88.
 Baird, Absalom, U maj-gen., Chattanooga, 200.

- Baker, Edward D., U col., Ball Bluff, 59, 60.
 Baker's Creek, Miss., 152, 153.
 Ball's Bluff, Va., battle, 59; forces, 59; bad management, 59, 60; results, 60.
 Baltimore, Md., convention, 17, 22; Mass. troops mobbed, 31.
 Banks, Nat'l P., U maj.-gen., mentioned, 58; in Shenandoah, 94, 96, 97; at 2nd Bull Run, 108; at Cedar Mountain, 106; succeeds Butler at New Orleans, 159; in La., 139, 159, 160, 206; Red River, 160; at Port Hudson, 160, 161, 206; in Texas, 207; on Red River, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221.
 Barboursville, Ky., 53, 65, 124.
 Bardstown, Ky., 125.
 Barksdale, Wm., C brig.-gen., Chancellorville, 146, 147; Gettysburg, 172.
 Barlow, Francis C., U maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 168, 169; Wilderness, 264; Cold Harbor, 271; Petersburg, 275, 290.
 Bates, Wm. B., C maj.-gen., Atlanta cam., 234; Murfreesboro, 309; Nashville, 308, 309, 310; Bentonville, 341.
 Batesville, Ark., 203.
 Baton Rouge, La., 19, 89, 315; capture, 89, 159.
 Beaufort, N. C., 318, 334.
 Beauregard, Pierre G. T., C gen., orders at Sumpter, 20; Fort Sumpter, 29; before Washington, 39; at Bull Run, 40, 41, 42, 43; after Bull Run, 44, 58; transferred to Miss., 72; at Island No. 10, 73, 82, 83; Shiloh, 77, 78, 79; Corinth, 75, 85, 86; superseded by Bragg, 122; at Charleston, 180; Drewry's Bluff, 266; Petersburg, 266, 274, 275; commands in Ga., 334; in S. C., 335, 337; in N. C., 335, 339.
 Beaver Dam, Va., 261.
 Bee, Barnard E., C brig.-gen., Bull Run, 42, 43.
 Bell, John, 17, 32.
 Belmont, Mo., battle, 53.
 Benjamin, Judah P., C att'y-gen., sec'y of war, and sec'y of the navy, 92.
 Bentonville, Ark. (Pea Ridge), 81.
 Bentonville, N. C., 340; battle, 341; strength, 342; losses, 342; results, 342, 343.
 Bermuda Hundred, Va., 266, 272.
 Beverly Ford, Va., 37, 38, 163.
 Big Bethel, Va., engagement, 40.
 Big Black River, Miss. (Vicksburg), battle, 153.
 Big Shanty, Ga. (Kenesaw), 227, 299.
 Birney, David B., U maj.-gen., 264, 292, 293.
 Black Warrior River, 185.
 Blair, Francis P., Jr., U maj.-gen., heads Union party in Mo., 33; Vicksburg cam., 131, 152, 154; Atlanta cam., 224, 229, 234; in Ga., 321.
 Blockade, plans for, 62, 63; results, 24.
 Bloody Angle (Spottsylvania), 265.
 Blunt, Jas. G., U maj.-gen., 132, 204.
 Boone, N. C., 346.
 Boonesville, Mo., 48.
 Booth, John Wilkes, 373, 374.
 Booth, Lionel F., U maj., 214, k, 215.
 Border Slave States, 32, 33.
 Boston Mts., Ark., 80, 132, 204.
 Bowen, John S., C maj.-gen., Shiloh, 77; Vicksburg, 151, 152, 157.
 Bowling Green, Ky., 53, 65, 124.
 Boynton Road, Va., battle, 294.
 Bradford, W. F., U maj., Fort Pillow, 214, 215.
 Bragg, Braxton, C gen., at Shiloh, 75, 76, 77, 78; in Miss., 122; succeeds Beauregard, 122; at Chattanooga, 122, 123, 124; invasion of Ky., 124, 125, 126; results, 126, 127; at Frankfort, 125; Perryville, 125, 126; retreat from Ky., 126, 127; Murfreesboro cam., 134, 135, 136; occupies Chattanooga, 183, 184; sends Morgan to Ky., 186; evacuates Chattanooga, 189; Chickamauga, 190, 191; 2nd day's plans delayed, 192; disagrees with Longstreet, 194, 195; sends Longstreet to Knoxville, 196; occupies Missionary Ridge, 198, 199, 200; loses battle of Missionary Ridge, 200, 201; severely criticized, 202; superseded by Joseph E. Johnston, 202; in Richmond, 232; in N. C., 339, 340, 343, 344.
 Brady Station, Va., battle, 163.
 Brashear City, La., 159, 161.
 Breckinridge Democrats, 17.
 Breckinridge, John C., C maj.-gen., nominated for Presidency, 17; at Shiloh, 76, 77; rear guard, 79; Murfreesboro, 134, 135, 136; Chickamauga, 191, 192; Chattanooga, 199, 201; in Shenandoah Valley, 267; North Anna, 269; in Tenn., 316; in N. C., 377.
 Brice's Cross Roads, Miss., action, 216.
 Bridgeport, Ala., 195.
 Bristol Station, Va., 208.
 Broad Run, Va., 208.
 Brown, John C., C maj.-gen., Spring Hill, 303.
 Buchanan, Franklin, C adm., com. "Virginia," 92, 93; at Mobile, 244.
 Buchanan, James, Pres't U. S., 18.
 Buchanan, T. McKean, U com'r, 159.
 Buckner, Simon B., C lieut.-gen., 45; Ky., militia, 53; at Bowling Green, 53; at Fort Donelson, 68,

- 71; surrender, 72; Perryville, 126; around Knoxville, 188, 197; Chickamauga, 190, 191, 193; in La., 381.
- Buell, Don Carlos, U maj.-gen., 1st command Louisville, 46; operation against Zollicoffer, 66, 67; Nashville, 73; delay, 75; at Shiloh, 78, 79; Corinth cam., 85; fails to occupy Chattanooga, 122; holds Nashville, 123; Vs. Bragg in Ky., 123, 124; Perryville cam., 125, 126, 127; superseded by Rosecrans, 127, 128.
- Buford, Abram, C brig.-gen., mentioned, 214, 217, 297, 311.
- Buford, John, U maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 163, 167, 168, 178.
- Bull Run (stream), 40; plan of cam., 40; battle, 41, 42, 43; strength, 41, 43; stubborn contest, 42; three stages, 42, 43; "Stonewall" Jackson wins his title, 42; death of Gen. Bee, 44; Gen. Kirby Smith reinforcement, 43; panic and riot of Federals, 43; Pres. Davis appears, 43; an opportunity missed, 44; losses, 44; results, 44; preparations following, 44.
- Burkesville, Ky., 186.
- Burbridge, Stephen G., U maj.-gen., mentioned, 206, 207, 277, 278.
- Burnside, Ambrose E., U maj.-gen., Roanoke Island, 91; South Mt., 113; Antietam, 115; succeeds McClellan, 117; failure at Fredericksburg, 118, 119, 120, 121; "Mud March," 121; relieved, 121; in Tenn., 188; at Knoxville, 188, 196, 197, 198; added to Grant's forces, 255; Wilderness cam., 256, 258, 264; Cold Harbor, 269, 270; at Petersburg, 274, 288.
- Butler, Benj. F., U maj.-gen., Hatteras exp., 62; at New Orleans, 88, 89; Mumford case, 89; character, 89, 90; Drewry's Bluff, 266; Petersburg, 292, 294; failure at Fort Fisher, 317, 318, 319; relieved by Grant, 319.
- Cabell, Wm., L., C brig.-gen., 204.
- Cairo, Ill., 25, 46.
- Calhoun, John C., 17.
- Canby, Edward R. S., U maj.-gen., 379; against Sibley, 89; Mobile, 243, 331, 332; in Ala., 379.
- Cape Fear River, 317, 318, 329.
- Cape Girardeau, Missouri, 204.
- Carlin, Wm. P., U maj.-gen., in N. C., 341.
- Carnifex Ferry, West Va., 55.
- Carondelet, The, U gunboat, Fort Donelson, 69; Island No. 10, 84.
- Carr, Eugene A., U maj.-gen., mentioned, 221; Mobile, 332.
- Carrick's Ford, W. Va., 38.
- Carroll, Samuel S., U maj.-gen., Shenandoah Valley, 97; Spottsylvania, 264.
- Carter, Jas. E., C col. 1st Tenn. cav., battle of Franklin, 305.
- Catlett Station, Va., 107.
- Cedar Creek, Va., 281; battle, 284; opposing forces, 285; losses, 285.
- Cedar Mt., Va., battle, 106; strength and losses, 106.
- Cemetery Ridge, Gettysburg, 167.
- Centerville, Va., 41, 43, 58, 65, 110.
- Chalk Bluff, Ky., 52.
- Chalmers, Jas. R., C brig.-gen., in Miss., 217, 348; Nashville, 310; in Ala., 349, 350.
- Chambersburg, Penn., 164, 165, 167, 280.
- Chambliss, John R., C brig.-gen., k at Petersburg, 290.
- Champion Hill (Baker's Creek), battle, 152, 153.
- Chancellorsville, Va., battle, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147; forces, 142; Jackson's great flank movement, 144, 145; Jackson wounded, 146; defeat of Hooker, 147; results, 147, 148.
- Chantilly, Va., 110.
- Charles City Cross Roads, 101.
- Charleston, S. C., Democratic convention, 17; defenses, 19, 138; Beauregard in command, 20; expedition against, 138, 139; plan of attack, 180; threatened by Sherman, 334; evacuated, 335; sufferings, 337, 338; surrendered, 337, 338.
- Charlotte, N. C., 32, 335, 337, 347, 379.
- Charlottesville, Va., 354.
- Chattahoochee River, Ga., 228, 230, 232, 299.
- Chattanooga, Tenn., importance, 122; occupied by C, 122, 123; Bragg's base, 127, 183; occupied by U, 194; besieged by C, 195; defense, 196; battles near, 198, 199, 200, 201.
- Cheat Mt., Va., 56.
- Cheatham, Benj. F., C maj.-gen., at Belmont, 53; in Ky., 125; at Perryville, 126; at Murfreesboro, 134; at Chickamauga, 190, 191, 192; at Missionary Ridge, 199, 201; Atlanta cam., 229, 233, 235, 237; crosses Tenn. River, 302; Spring Hill, 303; Franklin, 304, 305; Nashville, 307, 308, 309; in N. C., 341.
- Cheraw, S. C., 335, 337, 338.
- Chicago, Ill., 17, 21.
- Chickahominy River, Va., 36, 94, 266; bridges, 98, 99, 100, 103; swamps, 102.
- Chickamauga, Ga., battle, 190; C order of battle, 190, 191; delay 2nd day, 192; forces engaged, 190, 191, 192, 193; Thomas' stand, 193;

- Federal defeat, 193, 194; C failure to pursue, 194; losses, 194; results, 194.
- Chickamauga River, 189, 190, 201.
- Chickasaw (Bluffs), Miss., 131; battle, 131; Sherman's defeat, 131.
- Churchill, T. J., C maj.-gen., Ark., 132, 220.
- Cincinnati, O., 21, 46, 188.
- City Point, Va., 274, 344, 372; attack on, 352.
- Citronella, Ala., 379.
- Clarksville, Tenn., 73.
- Clay, Henry, 13.
- Cleburne, Pat. R., C maj.-gen., ability, 124; in Ky., 124; Perryville, 126; Murfreesboro', 134; Chickamauga, 191, 192; Chattanooga, 199, 200, 201; Atlanta cam., 226, 229, 235, 239; Franklin, 305, k.
- Cobb, Howell, C maj.-gen., 350.
- Cobb, Thos. A. R., C brig.-gen., 120.
- Cold Harbor (Gaines Mill), Va., battle, 270, 271; opposing forces, 270; useless slaughter, 271; Federal dreadful repulse, 271; Grant's mistake, 271.
- Colored Troops (Negroes), number engaged, 380; the Crater, 288.
- Colquitt, Alfred H., C brig.-gen., 291.
- Columbia, S. C., 334, 335; burned, 336, 337.
- Columbia, Tenn., 183, 302, 304.
- Columbus, Ky., 65, 67; occupied by Polk, 52; evacuated, 82.
- Columbus, Ohio, Penitentiary, 187 188; escape of Morgan, 188.
- Combahee River, S. C., 334.
- Confederacy, 162, 210; population, 22, 383; number of enlistment, 22, 383, 384; wealth, 22; resources, 22; ragged soldiers, 112; turning point, 137; last days, 288, 289; 326; causes of failure, 265, 287; losses, 385, 386.
- Confederate Gov't, 1st established in Montgomery, Ala., 18, 19; constitution, 18; Capital changed, 35; preparation for war, 19, 34, 35, 44, 45; purpose of peace, 18, 34; proposals to Federal Gov't, 18; government, 87, 381; action as to Sumpter, 20, 29; weaknesses, 87, 91.
- Confederate Soldiers, personnel, 121; fortitude, 272, 273, 287, 353; suffering, 112, 156, 209, 295, 296, 307, 308, 369, 387, 388; love of Lee, 370.
- Congress of the U. S., Buchanan's proposal, 18; Crittenden compromise, 18; support of Lincoln, 18.
- Congress, The, U. S. Cruiser, 192.
- Conscription Law, C, 23, 35, 74.
- Cooper, Sam'l, C adj. and insp.-gen., 384, 385.
- Corinth, Miss., 73, 315; A. S. Johnston, 75, 76; retreat to, 79; Beau regard evacuates, 85, 86; battle, 129, 130; forces and losses, 130.
- Corse, John M., U maj.-gen., Chattanooga, 200; Allatoona, 299; at Rome, 320.
- Couch, Darius N., U maj.-gen., Seven Pines, 99; Chancellorsville, 142, 143, 144.
- Cox, Jacob D., U maj.-gen., in Great Kanawha (Valley), 55; Atlanta cam., 238; in Ala., 301; Franklin, 305; Wilmington, 329, 330; in N. C., 339, 343, 344.
- Crampton's Gap, Md., battle, 113, 114.
- Crayfish Springs, Ga., 190.
- Crawford, Sam'l W., U maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 172; Petersburg, 290, 291, 353, 357.
- Crittenden, John J., 18.
- Crittenden, Geo. B., C maj.-gen., Mills Spring, 65, 66; Shiloh, 72.
- Crittenden, Thos. L., U maj.-gen., Murfreesboro, 123, 134, 135, 136; Chickamauga, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193.
- Crook, Geo., U maj.-gen., in Shenandoah, 267, 268, 279, 280, 283; Cedar Creek, 284; battle of Five Forks, 356; Sailor's Creek, 364.
- Cross Keys, Va., battle, 97.
- Crossland, Edw., C col. 7th Ky., 348, 349.
- Crump's Landing (Shiloh), 73.
- Cub Run, Va., 42, 43.
- Culpeper Court House, Va., 106, 118, 162, 163, 164, 179, 282.
- Culp's Farm, Ga., battle, 228.
- Culp's Hill, Gettysburg, location, 167.
- Cumberland Gap, 53, 65, 123, 189.
- Cumberland Mts., 65, 66.
- Cumberland River, 66, 67, 183, 306.
- Cumberland, The, U sloop, destruction, 92.
- Curtis, Sam'l R., U maj.-gen., in Mo., 80, 251; Pea Ridge, 80, 81.
- Curtis, N. M., U maj.-gen., 319.
- Custer, Geo. A., U maj.-gen., near Richmond, 254; in Shenandoah, 281, 282, 284, 353, 354; Five Forks, 358; Appomattox cam., 364.
- Cynthiana, Ky., 122, 277.
- Dahlgren, John A., U rear-adm., Charleston, 180, 181, 182.
- Dahlgren, Ulric, U col., raid to Richmond, 254; killed, 254.
- Dalton, Ga., 201, 225, 300; Confederates under Johnston, 224.
- Dallas, Ga., battle, 299.
- Dauphine Island (Mobile Bay), 242, 243, 244.
- Davis, Jefferson, C pres't. character, 18; prominence as leader, 18, 19; military record, 19; elected provisional president, 18; his election an accident, 18; opinion of war,

- 19; responsibility, 74; moves to Richmond, 40; before Bull Run, 41; at Bull Run, 43; support of Lee, 57, 58; sends Mason and Slidell to England, 63; 2nd inauguration, 73; in Tenn., 196; at Atlanta, 232; replaces Johnston with Hood, 232; in Ga., 298, 299; flight from Charlotte, 347; leaves Richmond, 360; conference at Abbeville, S. C., 379; capture, 351, 379; unjust suspicions, 374; cruel imprisonment, 380; release, 380.
- Davis, Jeff. C., U maj.-gen., Chickamauga, 193; Atlanta cam., 226, 239; in Ga., 321; Bentonville, 341.
- Dearing, Jas., C brig.-gen., Appomattox cam., k, 365.
- Decatur, Ala., 301, 302.
- Deep Bottom, Va., 289, 290.
- Deerhound, The, English yacht, 240.
- Demopolis, Ala., 333, 348, 349.
- Democratic Party, Southern, 17, 116; Northern, 17, 117.
- Deserters, from U forces, 385; from C forces, 385.
- Devens, Chas., U maj.-gen., 59, 60.
- Dinwiddie C. H., Va., 275, 352, 356, 357, 358.
- Dodge, Greenville M., U maj.-gen., Atlanta cam., 224, 229, 234.
- Doubleday, Abner, U maj.-gen., Fredericksburg, 119; Gettysburg, 176.
- Dowdall Tavern, Va., 144, 145.
- Dranesville, Va., 58, 60.
- Drewry's Bluff, Va., 96, 272, 363; action, 266.
- Drivers Gap, Ga., 185.
- Duck River, Tenn., 183, 188, 302, 311.
- Duke, Basil W., C brig.-gen., in E. Tenn., 316, 317; in N. C., 347; in S. C., 379.
- Duncan, J. K., C brig.-gen., 87, 88, 89.
- Dupont, Sam. F., U rear-adm., south Atlantic squadron, 47; com'ds Port Royal exped., 62, 63; at Charleston, 138, 139.
- Dutch Gap Canal, 289, 290.
- Early, Jubal A., C lieutenant-gen., against Pope, 107, 109; Fredericksburg, 119; Chancellorsville, 146, 147; Gettysburg cam., 162, 165, 169, 171, 173, 174; Mine Run, 209; in Wilderness cam., 263; Cold Harbor, 269; Washington Raid, 279; in Shenandoah Valley, 268, 270, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281; Winchester, 282; Fisher Hill, 283; Cedar Creek, 284, 285; overwhelming odds against him, 280, 285, 286; at Waynesboro, 286, 354.
- Eltham's Landing, 98.
- Emancipation Proclamation, 116, 117.
- Emancipation by states, 14.
- Emmetsburg Road, Md., 165.
- Emory, Wm. H., U maj.-gen.; Sabine Cross Roads, 219; Pleasant Hill, 220; at Washington, 279; in the Shenandoah, 284, 285.
- Ericsson, John, U capt., Monitor, 93.
- Etowah River, Ga., 226, 300.
- Evans, Nathan G., C brig.-gen., Bull Run, 42, 59, 60; Ball Bluff, 60.
- Ewell, Richard S., C Lieut.-gen., Shenandoah Valley, 96, 97; Gettysburg, commands Jackson's Corps, 162, 163, 164, 166, 168, 169, 170, 171, 173, 178; Cold Harbor, 270; Wilderness Campaign, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 264, 265; at Richmond, 356, 361; rear guard, 361; Appomattox, 363, 364; surrender, 364, 365.
- Ewing, Hugh, U maj.-gen., in Mo., 250.
- Ezra Church, Ga., 237, 238.
- Fagan, J. F., C maj.-gen., 161, 250.
- Fair Oaks (Seven Pines), battle, 99.
- Falmouth, Va., 118, 119.
- Farmville, Va., 363, 364, 365, 366.
- Farragut, David, G., U rear-adm., N. O., expedition, 88, 89, 141; coolness, 244; his glory, 244; ascends the Miss., 89; at Mobile, 243, 244, 245; fails at Port Hudson, 140, 141, 159.
- Fayetteville, Ark., 132.
- Fayetteville, N. C., 338, 339, 341.
- Federal Navy, organized, 47.
- Ferrero, Edw., U maj.-gen., Petersburg, 288, 289.
- Fisher's Hill, Va., battle, 283.
- Five Forks, Va., battle, 356, 357; importance, 358; blow to Lee, 358.
- Florence, Ala., 301, 302, 347.
- Florida, secedes, 18; expedition, 222.
- Florida, steamer, C 242, 248, 249.
- Floyd, John B., C brig.-gen., Sec. of War, 55; in West Va., 55, 57; Fort Donelson, 68, 70, 71, 72.
- Folly Island, 180.
- Foote, Andrew Hull, U rear-adm., Fort Henry, 68; Fort Donelson, 69, 70; Island No. 10, 83, 84.
- Forrest, Nath. B., C lieutenant-gen., character, 79, 308; Fort Donelson, 71, 72; escape, 72; at Shiloh, 79; raids in Tenn., 123, 134, 183; capture of Streight, 184, 185, 186; capture of Crittenden, 123; Holly Springs, Miss., 130; at Paducah, Ky., 214; Fort Pillow, 214, 215, 216; Brice-Cross Roads, 216, 217; Okalona, 213; Chickamauga, 190; in Tenn., 184, 232, 297, 298; Memphis, 297; at Johnsonville, 298; with Hood, 298, 302; at Franklin, 304; rear-guard after Nashville, 311; in Ala., 348; Selma, 349, 350; surrenders, 379.

Forts:

- Anderson, Paducah, Ky., 214.
 Beauregard, S. C., 63.
 Blakely, Mobile, Ala., 331, 332.
 Donelson, Tenn., works, 68; forces, 70, 72; suffering of soldiers, 70; bombardment, 69, 70, 71; efforts of C. to escape, 71, 72; unconditional surrender, 72; losses of C., 72; losses of U., 72.
 Fisher, N. C., 317, defenses, 318, 328; attacks, 318, 319, 327, 328; heroic-defenses, 328; losses, 329.
 Gaines, Ala., 242, 243, 244.
 Harrison, Va., 292, 293.
 Heiman, Ky., 68, 297.
 Henry, Tenn., 65, 67, 68; brave defense, 68; surrender, 68; badly situated, 68.
 Hindman, Ark., 132.
 Jackson, La., 87; defense, 87, 88; mutiny, 89; surrender, 89.
 McAllister, Ga., 324; attack, 324.
 McRae, Fla., 62.
 Magruder, Va., 95.
 Monroe, Va., 62, 380.
 Morgan, Ala., 242, 243; surrender, 245.
 Morris, S. C., 19.
 Moultrie, S. C., 19.
 Pemberton, Miss.
 Pender, C., 162, 168, 175.
 Pickens, S. C., 19, 62; its weakness, 62.
 Pillow, Tenn., 214; taken by U., 79; capture by C., 216; destruction, 216; accusation against Forrest, 214; strength, 214; losses, 216.
 Pulaski, Ga., 19, 90.
 St. Philips, La., situation, 87; surrender, 89.
 Sanders, Tenn., attack, 197; C., losses, 197.
 Scott, Kan., 50.
 Smith, Ark., 204.
 Steadman, Va., attack, 355; losses, 355.
 Sumter, S. C., 19, 20; Anderson moves to, 19; bombardment, 19, 138; opening of the war, 20; evacuation, 29; attacks by Federal, 182.
 Wagner, S. C., 180, 181, 182.
 Walker, S. C., 63.
 Warren, Mass., 63, 380.
 Foster, John G., U maj.-gen., in Ga., 323, 324; in N. C., 138.
 Frankfort, Ky., 125.
 Franklin, Wm. B., U maj.-gen., 58; Peninsular Campaign, 98, 101; Eltbam Landing, 98; Gaines Mill, 102; Frazier Farm, 103; 2nd Manassas, 110; Crampton Pass, 113; Antietam, 115; Fredericksburg, 119, 121; in Texas, 206; in La., 206.
 Franklin, Tenn., battle, 302, 303, 304; bravery of the C., 305; sanguinary results, 305; fearful losses of C., 305, 308.
 Frazier Farm, Va., battle, 103, 104.
 Fredericksburg, Va., 118; situation, 118; battle, 119, 120; bombardment by Federals, 119; forces engaged, 119, 121; valour of Federals, 120; Federals great defeat, 120; losses, 120.
 Fremont, John C., U maj.-gen., in Mo., 46; radical proclamation, 50; blunder in campaign, 50; actions disapproved by Lincoln, 50; in West Va., 96; in Shenadoah Valley, 97; refuses to serve under Pope, 106.
 French, Sam G., C maj.-gen., Atlanta Campaign, 229; at Allatoona, Ga., 299, 300.
 Front Royal, Va., 97.
 Fry, Jas. B., U maj.-gen., 66.
 Fugitive Slave Law, 13, 15, 16.
 Gaines Mill, Va., battle, 102; marked valor of C., 102; losses, 102.
 Galveston, Tex., expedition, 139.
 Gardener, Frank, C maj.-gen., at Port Hudson, 160, 161.
 Garfield, James A., U maj.-gen., in Ky., 65; at Chickamauga, 193.
 Garnett, Richard B., C brig.-gen., Shenandoah, Gettysburg, 175, 176.
 Garnett, Robert Selden, C brig.-gen., in West Va., 37; killed, 38.
 Gauley Bridge, W. Va., 55.
 Geography of the South, 24, 25.
 Georgia, secession, 18; militia, 234; great destruction of property by Sherman, 325, 326.
 Germanna Ford, Va., 143, 256.
 Getty, Geo. W., U maj.-gen., Wilderness Cam., 257.
 Gettysburg, Cam., Penn., 162; battle, (July 3-1863), 168-179; Meade in command of Federals, 165; battle ground topography, 167, 168; circumstances leading to fight, 168; 1st day's battle, Heth enters Gettysburg, 168, 169; Confederate success, 169; night conference of Lee and his generals, 170, 171; Longstreet's delay on the 2nd day, 171; battle of July 2nd, 171; Little Round Top and Peach Orchard, 171, 172; Ewell's efforts on the left, 173; July 3rd, delay in the morning 177; terrific artillery duel, 175; Pickett's heroic charge, 175, 176; his defeat, 177; Lee after the battle, 177; Confederate retreat, 178, 179; Meade criticised, 178, 179; results, 178, 179.
 Gibbon, John, U maj.-gen., Fredericksburg, 119; Gettysburg, 176; Wilderness Cam., 259, 264; Cold Har-

- bor, 271; Petersburg, 275, 290, 291, 292, 359.
- Gibson, R. L., C brig.-gen., Mobile, 331, 332.
- Gilbert, Chas. C., U brig.-gen., Perryville, 125.
- Gillem, A. C., U maj.-gen., 278, 316, 317, 346.
- Gilmore, Quincy A., U maj.-gen., at Charleston, 180, 181, 337, 338; Petersburg, 266.
- Glasgow, Ky., 122, 124, 125.
- Glendale, Va., 102, 103.
- Goldsboro, N. C., 334, 343, 344, 375.
- Goldsborough, Louis M., U rear adm., Hampton Roads, 9i; N. Atlantic Squadron, 47.
- Gordon, G. W., C brig.-gen., 305.
- Gordon, John B., C lieutenant., Wilderness, 259; Shenandoah Valley, 283, 284; Petersburg, 286, 353, 355; Appomattox, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368.
- Gordonville, Va., 106, 144, 155, 256.
- Govan, Dan'l C., C brig.-gen., Atlanta, 239, 240.
- Grand Coteau, La., 206.
- Grand Ecore, La., 218, 219, 220.
- Gracie, Archibald, C brig.-gen., 274.
- Grand Bluff, Miss., 150.
- Grandbury, H. B., C brig.-gen., 305.
- Granger, Gordon, U maj.-gen., in Tenn., 184; at Chickamauga, 190, 193; Chattanooga, 198; Knoxville, 201; at Mobile, 243, 244, 245, 331, 332; in Ala., 301.
- Grant, Ulysses S., U Sen., character, 46; appearance, 369; in com'd at Cairo, 46, 67; sends force to occupy Paducah, Ky., 53; Belmont, narrow escape, 53; Fort Henry, 68; Fort Donelson, 68, 69, 70, 71; unconditional surrender, 72; in discredit with Halleck, 73, 85; at Shiloh, 75, 77, 78; surprised, 85; Corinth, 85; stores captured by Forrest and forced to retreat, 130; in Tenn., 123; Vicksburg Cam., 131, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155; failures, 140, 150; capture of Vicksburg, 156, 157; praises, 157, 158, 253; operations at Chattanooga, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201; appointed lieutenant., 222, 253; goes to Washington, 253; consideration for Meade, 253; plans for great cam., 254; Wilderness Cam., 255, 256, 257, 258; Spottsylvania, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266; dispatches to Washington, 264; maneuvers checkmated, 269; terrible defeat at Cold Harbor, 270, 271; memoirs, 271; crosses the James, 271; great sacrifice of life, 272, 273, 287; Petersburg, 274, 287, 288, 289, 290, 292, 293, 295, 352, 353, 356, 358, 359; watchfulness, 355; in pursuit of Lee, 362, 366, 367; Appomattox, 368; conference with Lee, 368; magnanimity to Lee and his soldiers, 369, 370, 371; at Washington, 371, 372, 378.
- Gravelly Springs, Ala., 347.
- Great Kanawha Valley, 55, 65.
- Great Pedee River, 338.
- Green, Thos., C brig.-gen., Texas, 206; in La., 220.
- Greeley, Horace, 24.
- Greenbrier River, Va., 55.
- Greensboro, N. C., 347; surrender of Johnston, 379.
- Gregg, David, M., U maj.-gen., 271, 290, 294, 295, 352, 353, 356, 357, 364, 366.
- Gregg, John, C brig.-gen., 151.
- Gregg, Maxcy, C maj.-gen., k, 120.
- Grierson, Benj. H., U maj.-gen., Miss., 150, 213, 217, 315, 316.
- Griffin, Charles, U maj.-gen., Wilderness Cam., 257, 263; Petersburg, 291, 356, 357, 358; Appomattox, 367, 368.
- Griswoldville, Ga., 321, 322.
- Grover, Cuvier, U maj.-gen., Red River, 159; Port Hudson, 160.
- Groverton, Va., battle, 108, 109.
- Guntown, Miss., 315.
- Gunboats, at Fort Henry, 68; Donelson, 69, 70; Island No. 10, 83, 84, 86; N. O., 88; Fort Pillow and Memphis, 86, 215; Shiloh, 78; Neuse River, 138; Galveston, 139; Sabine Pass, 140; Blair Landing, La., 220.
- Halleck, Henry W., U maj.-gen., 67; in Mo., 46; interference with Grant in Tenn., and at Corinth, 73, 85, 86; Gen. in chief at Washington, 122; relation to Burnside, 118; to Hooker, 164; denounces Sherman's "Basis of Agreement," 378.
- Hamilton, Schuyler, U maj.-gen., at New Madrid, 84.
- Hampton, Wade, C lieutenant., in Va., 163, 271, 276, 292, 295; daring raid behind Grant, 292; cavalry forces in S. C., 335, 336; in N. C., 339, 341; burning of Columbia, 336; refuses to surrender, 379.
- Hampton Roads, Va., 91, 92.
- Hancock, Winfield S., U maj.-gen., at Williamsburg, 95; Fredericksburg, 119; Gettysburg, 164, 167, 169, 170, 172; splendid generalship at Gettysburg, 173, 176; Wilderness Cam., 255, 256, 257, 258, 259; Spottsylvania, 263, 264, 265; Cold Harbor, 269, 270, 271; at Petersburg, 274, 288, 290, 292, 294.
- Hanover, C. H., Va., 262, 270.

- Hardee, Wm. J., C lieut.-gen., at Shiloh, 76; in Ky., 122, 125; in Tenn., 134; at Murfreesboro, 135; at Chattanooga, 201; Atlanta Cam., 224, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230; battle of Atlanta, 233, 234, 235; battle of Jonesboro, 239, 240; Georgia Cam., at Savannah, 323, 324, 325; in S. C., 335, 337, 339, 340; in N. C., 340.
- Hare's Hill, Va., 355.
- Hard Times, Miss., 150.
- Harper's Ferry, 164, 281; seized by C, 30; value of property, 30, 114; weakness, 114; Johnston in com'd, 39; captured by Jackson, 112, 114, 116.
- Harpeth River, Tenn., 304.
- Harris G. Isham, Gov. Tenn., 32, 303.
- Harriet Lane, the U steamer, at Galveston, 139.
- Harrison Landing, Va., McClellan, 105.
- Harrodsburg, Ky., 122, 126.
- Hartford, U cruiser, 89, 140, 244.
- Hartsville, Tenn., 123.
- Hatch, Edw., U maj.-gen., Nashville, 311.
- Hatcher's Run, Va., battle, 352, 353.
- Hatchie River, 129, 130.
- Hatteras Inlet, 62.
- Haynes Bluff, Vicksburg, 131.
- Hazen, Wm. B., U maj.-gen., Chattanooga, 200; Bentonville, 342.
- Heintzelman, Sam'l R., U maj.-gen., Bull Run, 1st, 42; Peninsular Cam., 98, 101, 103; 2nd Manassas, 107, 110.
- Helena, Ark., 161.
- Herron, Francis J., U maj.-gen., Ark., 132; Texas, 206.
- Henry House, Bull Run, 42.
- Heth, Henry, C maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 162, 168; Wilderness Cam., 257; Cold Harbor, 269; Petersburg, 290, 291.
- Hickman, Ky., 52.
- Hickman Creek, Tenn., 69.
- Hill, Ambrose P., C lieut.-gen., character, 102; Peninsular Cam., 101; Gaines Mill, 102, 103; during McClellan retreat, 103; 2nd Manassas, 109; Antietam, 113, 114, 115; Fredericksburg, 119; Chancellorsville, 145, 146; Gettysburg, 162, 163, 164, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176; hard fight at Wilderness, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259; Spottsylvania and Cold Harbor, 269, 270, 271; Petersburg, 275, 291, 292, 293, 353; Five Forks, 355, 356, 357; killed, 359; burial, 360.
- Hill, D. H., C lieut.-gen., Peninsular Cam., 99; Seven Pines, 99; Gaines Mill, 102; Beaver Dam, 101; Malvern Hill, 104; brave defense at South Mt., 113; lost orders, 112; on James River, 137; Antietam, 114; sent to Fredericksburg, 138; at Chickamauga, 189, 191, 192; in N. C., 138, 343; at Augusta, Ga., 334.
- Hilton Head, S. C., 63, 323.
- Hindman, Thos. C., C maj.-gen., com'd Trans. Miss. dpt., 133; in Ark., 132, 133; Chickamauga, 189, 191.
- Hobson, Edw. H., U brig.-gen., against Morgan, 186, 187.
- Hoke, Robt. F., C maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 173; Cold Harbor, 269; Fort Fisher, 328, 329, 330; Bentonville, 340, 341; Kinston, N. C., 343.
- Hollins, Geo. N., C commodore, Island, No. 10, 82.
- Holly Springs, Miss., 180.
- Holmes, Theophilus, H., C lieut.-gen., com'd Trans-Miss. dpt., 132; in Ark., 132, 161; Helena, 161.
- Hood, John B., C lieut.-gen., at Gaines Mill, 102; Groveton, 109; Antietam, 115; his valor and his suffering, 172, 233, 313; Gettysburg, 162, 163, 171, 172, 175; great service at Chickamauga, 191, 193; Atlanta Cam., 224, 226, 228; superseded Johnston, 232; his offensive movements, 233, 235, 237, 238, 239; rebukes Sherman, 240, 241; move to Tenn., 297, 298, 299, 300, 301; delays, 302; fatal errors at Spring Hill, 303; battle of Franklin, 304, 305; defeat at Nashville, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312; relieved from command, 313.
- Hooker, Joseph, U maj.-gen., 58; Peninsular Cam., 95; Williamsburg, 95; 2nd battle Bull Run, 109; South Mt., 113; Antietam, 115; Fredericksburg, 119; differs with Burnside, 120; superseded Burnside, 121, 142; good organizer, 142; crushing defeat at Chancellorsville, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147; after Chancellorsville, 163, 164, 165; superseded by Meade, 165; Chattanooga Cam., 195, 196, 199, 201; Atlanta, 224, 225, 226; differences with Sherman, 228, 237; relieved of command, 237.
- Hovey, A. P., U maj.-gen., 152.
- Howard, Oliver O., U maj.-gen., Fredericksburg, 119; Chancellorsville defeat, 142, 144, 145; at Gettysburg, 164, 167, 173; good work at Gettysburg, 164, 167, 173; Atlanta, 224, 227, 229, 300, 301; succeeds McPherson, 237, 239; Ga. Cam., 321, 322, 323; N. C., 334, 335, 336, 338, 340, 341.
- Huger, Benj., C maj.-gen., Seven Pines, 99, 101; Frayser Farm, 103, 104; Malvern Hill, 104.

- Humphrey, Andrew A., U maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 172; Petersburg, 292, 352, 356; pursuit of Lee, 365, 366.
- Hunt, Henry J., U Meade's chief of artillery, Gettysburg, 175.
- Hunter, David, U maj.-gen., 90; 1st Bull Run, 42; in Mo., 46, 51, 52; near Lynchburg, 267, 269, 277, 278; retreat, 268.
- Huntsville, Ala., 86, 302.
- Hurlbut, Stephen A., U maj.-gen., Shiloh, 73, 76; Meridian, 212; Memphis, 297.
- Imboden, John D., C brig.-gen., interview with Lee at Gettysburg, 177.
- Independence, Mo., 251.
- Indians, at Pea Ridge, 80, 81, 82.
- Irwinsville, Ga., 351; President Davis capture, 379.
- Island No. 10, 82, 83; canal, 84; brave defense, 83, 84; surrender, 84; C losses, 84; results, 84, 85.
- Iuka, Miss., 129; battle, 129, 130.
- Jackson, Claiborne F., Gov. Mo., 32; works for secession, 33, 48.
- Jackson, James S., U maj.-gen., k, Perryville, 126.
- Jackson, H. R., C brig.-gen., in W. Va., 56, 57.
- Jackson, Thos. J. (Stonewall), C lieutenant-gen., 39; Harper's Ferry, 39; 1st Bull Run, 42; origin "Stonewall," 42; at Winchester, 44; Romney exp., 60, 61; hardships, 61; wonderful victories, 94, 96; in Shenandoah, 97, 98; near Richmond, 98, 100; Beaver Dam, 102; Gaines Mill, 102; Grapevine Bridge, 103; White Oak Bridge, 103, 104; Malvern Hill, 104; Cedar Mt., 106; 2nd Manassas, 107, 108, 109, 110; Harper's Ferry (capture), 112, 113, 114; Antietam, 114, 115; Fredericksburg, 118; Chancellorsville, 143, 144, 146; great flank movement of the war, 144, 145; wounded, 145; death, 145; greatest Corps commander of the war, 145.
- Jackson, Wm. L., C brig.-gen., 346.
- Jackson, Wm. H., C brig.-gen., 348, 349, 350.
- Jackson, Miss., 130, 155; capture, 158; burned, 212.
- Jackson, Tenn., 130, 213, 297.
- Jacksonville, Fla., 222.
- James Island (Charleston), 180, 181.
- James River, 25, 36, 93, 255, 266, 272, 287, 292, 352, 354, 363.
- Jefferson City, Mo., 33, 50.
- Jenkins, Albert, C gen., Wilderness, k, 259.
- Jericho Mills, Va., 269.
- Johnson, Andrew, mil. gov. Tenn., 32; vice-pres. U. S., 375; Pres. U. S., 377, 378.
- Johnson, Bushrod R., C maj.-gen., Petersburg, 288; Five Forks, 356, 357, 358.
- Johnson, Edw., C maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 162, 165, 173, 174; Wilderness, 257; Spottsylvania, 264; battle of Franklin, 304.
- Johnston, Albert Sidney, C gen., in Tenn., 45; Bowling Green, 67; com. of Western Army, 67, 68; limited resources, and small army, 67; Fort Donelson, 68; concentrates at Murfreesboro, 72; criticism, 75; Corinth, 75; battle of Shiloh, 75, 76; death, 77; sorrow of South, 79; military experience, 79.
- Johnston, Joseph E., C gen., in Shenandoah, 39, 40; outwits Patterson, 40, 41; 1st Bull Run, 41, 43; after Bull Run, 44, 58; before Richmond, 94, 98, 99, 100; wounded, 99; superseded by Lee, 100; in Tenn. and Miss., 151; Vicksburg Cam., 151, 152, 155, 156, 158; supersedes Bragg, 202; at Dalton, fine organizer, 211; Atlanta Cam., 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230; brilliant defense, 230; great strategist, 230, 232; superseded by Hood, 232; in N. C., 313, 339; at Bentonville, 340, 341, 342, 343; pursued by Sherman, 375; conditional treaty for surrender, 376, 377, 378; surrender, 378, 379.
- Jonesboro, Ga., battle, 239.
- Jones, David R., C maj.-gen., Antietam, 115; Knoxville, 188; Shenandoah Valley, k, 267.
- Jones, Joseph, Dr., C surg.-gen., 384.
- Judah, Henry M., U brig.-gen., in Ky., 186.
- Kanawha River, 187.
- Kanawha Valley, 55, 56.
- Kantz, August V., U maj.-gen., raid, 275, 276, 293.
- Kearny, Philip, U maj.-gen., Williamsburg, 95; under Pope, 107; k, 110.
- Kearsarge, The, U cruiser, 246; description, 247; destroys the Alabama, 247, 248.
- Kemper, Jas. L., C maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 175, 176.
- Kenesaw Mt., Ga., 227, 299; battle, 229; severe U defeat, 229.
- Kentucky, a border State, 33; sympathy of people, 33; slaveholders, 33; family division, 33; Gov. Magoffin refuses call for troops, 30; neutrality, 33, 52; never considered by Federals, 52; election, 34;

- U control, 34; State Guards, 33, 53; Confederates in State, 52; Columbus, 52; Bowling Green, 53, 65, 124; battle Mills Spring, 66, 67; Grant at Paducah, 53, 67; Fort Heiman, 68; Bragg's invasion, 124, 125, 126, 127; Morgan's raid, 122, 123, 134, 186, 277, 278; Lyon's raid, 312.
- Keokuk, U iron-clad, 139.
- Kernstown, Va., battle, 94, 95, 279.
- Kershaw, Jos. B., C maj.-gen., in Shenandoah Valley, 281, 284, 286; Petersburg, 361; Appomattox, 363, 364, 365.
- Keyes, Erasmus D., U maj.-gen., mentioned, 58; Peninsular Cam., 98, 101, 102, 103; Suffolk, 137.
- Kilpatrick, Judson, U maj.-gen., at Gettysburg, 178; raid on Richmond, 254; in Ga., 238, 239, 321, 322; in N. C., 339, 340, 342.
- Kinston, N. C., battle, 343, 344.
- Knoxville, Tenn., 44, 53, 122, 123, 188, 194, 196, 197, 198, 316, 346.
- Lafayette, Ga., 300.
- Lamb, Wm., C col., defense of Fort Fisher, 327, 328, 329.
- Laurel Mt., W. Va., 37.
- Laurence, Kan., 205.
- Lee, Fitzhugh, C maj.-gen., Yellow Tavern, 261; Trevilian Station, 272; Reams Station, 276; in Shenandoah, 281, 282; at Five Forks, 356; Sailors Creek, 365; last stand, 367.
- Lee, G. W. C., C maj.-gen., 363, 364.
- Lee, Robert E., C gen., commander of Va. troops, 39; resigns from U. S. Army, 39; in Richmond, 40; commands in W. Va., 44, 56, 57; difficulties, 56, 57; Cheat Mt., 56; in S. C., 57; character, 57, 58, 143; appearance, 100, 369; military experience, 100; supersedes Johnson, 100; Seven Pines, 99, 100; conference with Jackson, 100; Gaines Mills, 102, 103; Malvern Hill, 104; against Pope, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110; Antietam, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116; splendid generalship, 116, 143, 148, 272, 273, 278; Fredericksburg, 118, 119, 120, 121, 142; Chancellorsville, 142, 143, 144, 146; sends Jackson on his flank movement, 144, 145; drives Hooker across the Rappahannock, 147; Gettysburg Cam., 162, 163, 165, 166, 167, 169, 170, 171, 173, 174, 175; order to his army, 166; Pickett's failure a great disappointment, 176, 177; retreat, 178, 179; in Va., 208; Mine Run, 209, 210; recruiting at Orange, 254; Wilderness, 255, 256, 258, 259, 260; consents to go to the rear, 258; at Spottsylvania, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266; Cold Harbor, 269, 270, 271; after Cold Harbor, 272; Petersburg, 274, 278, 288, 294, 352, 353, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359; fortitude, 292, 353; heart of the defense, 295, 296; commander in chief, 339; evacuates Richmond, 360, 361; final cam., 363, 364, 365, 366, 367; surrender at Appomattox, 368, 369, 370.
- Lee, Stephen D., C lieutenant-gen., in Miss., 196, 211, 217; Atlanta Cam., 237; in Tenn., 302, 304; Nashville, 307, 309, 311.
- Lee, Wm. H. F., C maj.-gen., Beverly Ford, Va., 163; Five Forks, 357, 358; Appomattox, 368.
- Leesburg, Va., 58, 65, 112.
- Letcher, John, Gov. Va., 37, 39.
- Lexington, Mo., 50.
- Liddell, St. John R., C brig.-gen., 331.
- Lincoln, Abraham, character, 164; nomination at Chicago, 17; election, 18; plan to relieve Fort Sumter, 20; 1st call for troops, 30; attitude toward Ky., 33; before Bull Run, 40; after Bull Run, 46; censures Fremont's action in Mo., 50; institution of Blockade, 62; Trent affair, 63; McClellan in command, 94, 97, 105; depressed over Pope's defeat, 111; reads proclamation of emancipation to Cabinet, 116, 117; Burnside supersedes McClellan, 117, 118; relieves Burnside, 121; appoints Grant lieutenant-gen., 253; messages to Sherman, 325; City Point, 344; conference with Grant, 344; in Richmond, 372; liberal reconstruction policies, 372, 373; assassination, 373; grief of nation, 373; funeral, 373.
- Literature in South and North, 20.
- Little Rock, Ark., 19, 45, 132, 161, 204, 207, 221.
- Little Round Top (Gettysburg), 167.
- Logan, John A., U maj.-gen., Vicksburg Cam., 152, 157; Atlanta Cam., 224, 227, 229, 234, 237, 239; in N. C., 334, 336, 338.
- Long, A. L., C brig.-gen., 171.
- Long, Eli, U brig.-gen., 348, 349, 350.
- Longstreet, Jas., C lieutenant-gen., at Bull Run, 41; at Williamsburg, 95; at Seven Pines, 99, 100; Beaver Dam, 101; Gaines Mill, 102, 103; Glendale, 103; against Pope, 107, 108; Culpeper, 107; 2nd Bull Run, 109, 110; Antietam, 113, 114; South Mt., 113; Fredericksburg, 118; Chancellorsville, 137, 138, 142; Gettysburg, 162, 163, 164, 166, 169, 172, 173; delays Lee's plans, 170, 171, 174, 175;

- sent to Bragg, 179; Chickamauga, 190, 191, 193, 194; differences with Bragg, 194; at Chattanooga, 195; character, 195; at Knoxville, 196, 197, 198, 201; winter quarters, 197; Wilderness, 255, 258; delay almost fatal, 256, 257; wounded, 258, 259; Cold Harbor, 269, 270; Petersburg, 356, 359; Appomattox, 364, 366, 367, 368.
- Lookout Mt., Tenn., 195, 196, 198, 199.
- Loring, Wm. W., C maj.-gen., in W. Va., 60; Romney Cam., 60, 61; in Miss., 152, 153; Atlanta Cam., 229, 234, 237.
- Louisiana secedes, 18.
- Louisville, Ky., 125.
- Lovejoy Station, Ga., 236, 238, 240.
- Lovell, Mansfield, C maj.-gen., New Orleans, 87, 88, 89.
- Lynchburg, Va., 268, 274, 353, 354, 363, 366, 367.
- Lyon, Nathaniel, U brig.-gen., in St. Louis, 33; in Mo., 46, 48; operations against Price, 48; Wilson Creek, 49; killed, 49.
- Lyon, H. B., C brig.-gen., in Ky., 312; in Tenn., 313.
- McCall, Geo. A., U brig.-gen., 58.
- McCausland, John, C brig.-gen., in W. Va., 267; in Pa., 280.
- McClellan, Geo. B., U gen., commands Ohio troops, 37; in W. Va., 37, 38; popularity, 46; great organizer, 46, 58, 60; succeeds Scott, 46, 58; orders to Stone, 59; illness in 1861, 94; Peninsular Cam., 94, 96, 98, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104; outwitted by Magruder, 95; Seven Pines, 98, 99; retreat, 103, 104; Malvern Hill, 104; Harrison Landing, 105; superseded by Pope, 107, 108; chief command, 111; finds Hill's letter, 112, 113; Antietam, 114, 115, 116; superseded by Burnside, 117.
- McClernand, John A., U maj.-gen., Fort Donelson, 69, 70, 71; Shiloh, 73, 76; Vicksburg Cam., 131; 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155; in Ark., 131.
- McCook, Alex. McD., U maj.-gen., Perryville, 125, 126; Murfreesboro, 34, 135; Chickamauga, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193.
- McCook, Edward M., U brig.-gen., Atlanta, 236; in Ala., 348, 350.
- McCown, John P., C maj.-gen., Island No. 10, 82, 83, 84; Murfreesboro, 134.
- McCulloh, Ben., C brig.-gen., joins Price, 48; in Ark., 45, 50; in Mo., 49; Pea Ridge, 80, 81; k, 81.
- McDowell, Irvin, U maj.-gen., 1st Bull Run, plans, 40, 41; error, 42; defeat, 43; after Bull Run, 58, 94; under Pope, 108, 109, 110.
- McDowell, W. Va., 96.
- McIntosh, Jas., C brig.-gen., col. 2nd. Ark., in Mo., 49.
- McIntosh, John B., U maj.-gen., Pea Ridge, 80, 81.
- Mackall, W. W., C brig.-gen., New Madrid and Island No. 10, 84.
- McKean, Wm., W., U Gulf Squadron, 47.
- McLaws, Lafayette, C maj.-gen., Antietam, 113, 115; Chancellorsville, 146, 147; Gettysburg, 162, 171, 172, 175; at Knoxville, 197; Bentonville, 340, 341.
- McLean, Wilmer, House, where Lee surrendered, 368.
- McPherson, Jas. B., U maj.-gen., Vicksburg Cam., 149, 151, 152, 154, 156, 157; Meridian, 211, 212; Red River, 212; Atlanta Cam., 224, 225, 227, 229, 230, 231, 233, 234; capable officer, 235; k, 235.
- Macon, Ga., 321, 322, 350, 380.
- Magruder, John B., C maj.-gen., Yorktown, 40; Big Bethel, 40; Peninsular Cam., 94, 95, 101, 104; in Texas, 139; at Galveston, 139, 140.
- Mahone, Wm., C maj.-gen., Petersburg, 289, 294, 353; Appomattox, 363, 364, 368.
- Mallory, S. R., C Sec. of Navy, 62.
- Malvern Hill, Va., battle, 104.
- Manassas Junction, Va., 40, 41, 107; occupied by Beauregard, 40; 2nd battle, 108, 109, 110, 111; spoils, 108; results, 111.
- Mansfield, Jos. K., U maj.-gen., Antietam, k, 115.
- Marmaduke, John S., C maj.-gen., in Ark., 132, 161; in Mo., 203, 204, 205, 250.
- Manson, Mahlon D., U brig.-gen., Richmond, Ky., 124.
- Marietta, Ga., 226, 227, 230.
- Marshall, Humphrey, C brig.-gen., in Ky., 65.
- Marshall, Chas., C lieutenant-col., 368.
- Martinsburg, W. Va., 40, 278, 280.
- Marye's Heights, Va., battle, 118, 119.
- Maryland invasion, 112; under Union, 112; C sympathizers, 30.
- Mason and Dixon Line, 13.
- Mason, Jas. M., 63.
- Maury, Dabney H., C maj.-gen., Mobile, 331, 332, 333.
- Maysville, Ky., 277.
- Meade, Geo. G., U maj.-gen., character, 165; under Burnside, 119, 121; Chancellorsville, 142, 143, 144; Gettysburg Cam., 165, 166, 167, 170, 171, 173, 174, 175, 178;

- Northern criticism, 178, 179;
 Mine Run, 208, 209, 210; Wilder-
 ness, 255, 256; Petersburg, 288,
 293.
- Mechanicsville, Va., battle, 101, 102.
- Memphis, Tenn., 25, 79; naval battle,
 86.
- Meridian, Miss., 158, 211, 212, 333.
- Merrimac (Virginia), 31; engagement
 with Monitor, 92, 93; burned, 93,
 96.
- Merritt, Wesley, U maj.-gen., 261, 283,
 284, 353, 358, 366.
- Middle Creek, Ky., 65.
- Miles, Nelson A., U maj.-gen., Peters-
 burg, 292; Five Forks, 356; Ap-
 pomattox, 366.
- Milledgeville, Ga., 321, 322.
- Mills Springs, Ky., 65; battle, 66, 67;
 Zollicoffer killed, 66; Crittenden de-
 feated, 67; results, 67.
- Milroy, Robt. H., U maj.-gen., Shenan-
 doah, 96; defeat at Winchester,
 163, 164; Murfreesboro, 309.
- Mine Horror, Petersburg, Crater fight,
 288, 289.
- Minnesota, U frigate, 92.
- Missionary Ridge, Tenn., mentioned,
 189, 193, 195, 198; battle, 199,
 200, 201; grand charge, 200;
 Bragg's defeat, 201.
- Mississippi River, 25, 140; importance,
 62; forts, 131; New Orleans, 87.
- Mississippi, State, secedes, 18.
- Missouri Compromise, 15, 16.
- Missouri, State, attitude toward Union
 and C, 32, 33; attempts to secede,
 33, 51; martial law, 250.
- Mitchell, Ormsby M., U maj.-gen., in
 Ala., 86.
- Mobile, Ala., 242.
- Mobile Bay, topography, 242, 243; de-
 fenses, 242, 243; importance to C,
 242; battle, 242, 243, 244; cap-
 ture, 331, 332, 333.
- Monitor, The, U iron-clad, appearance,
 92; in action, 93.
- Monocacy Junction, Md., battle, 279.
- Montgomery, Ala., 18, 20, 350.
- Morgan, Geo. W., U brig.-gen., in Ky.,
 123.
- Morgan, John H., C brig.-gen., char-
 acter, 278; in Tenn., 122, 123;
 in Ky., 122, 123, 134, 186; great
 raid into Ohio, 186; capture, 187;
 escape, 188; in W. Va., 267; last
 raid, 277, 278; murdered at
 Greenville, Tenn., 278; buried,
 278.
- Morris, Thos. A., U maj.-gen., in W.
 Va., 37, 38.
- Morris Island, Charleston, 138, 180.
- Mosby, John S., C col., 281.
- Mount Sterling, Ky., 277.
- Motherwell, E. Q., U maj., 347.
- Mulligan, Jas. A., U brig.-gen., cap-
 tured at Lexington, Mo., 51.
- Mumford, Wm. B., hanged in New Or-
 leans, 89.
- Murfreesboro, Tenn., mentioned, 309;
 raided by Forrest, 123; battle,
 134, 135, 136; results, 136.
- Murray, Eli H., U brig.-gen., 321.
- Nashville, Tenn., mentioned, 66, 183;
 occupied by Federals, 122, 123,
 134; battle, 306, 307, 308, 309,
 310; C severe defeat, 310; results,
 310, 311.
- Natchez, Miss., 89.
- Negley, Jas. S., U maj.-gen., Stone
 River, 135, 136; Chickamauga,
 190, 191.
- Nelson, Wm., U maj.-gen., sent by
 Lincoln to Ky., 33; at Nashville,
 73; at Shiloh, 75, 78, 79; at
 Richmond, Ky., 123, 124.
- New Hope Church, Ga., battle, 226,
 227.
- New Madrid, Mo., 82, 83, 84.
- New Market, Va., 96, 267.
- New Orleans, La., 20, 22, 25, 206,
 207; important city, 90; de-
 fenses, 87; burial of Johnston,
 79; capture, 89; Butler military
 Gov., 89; greatly disliked, 89, 90.
- New York City, 21.
- Norfolk, Va., 274.
- North Anna, Va., 261, 265, 269, 270.
- North Carolina, 32, 137; secedes, 20,
 32; blockaded, 32.
- Ocmulgee River, Ga., 321.
- Oconee River, Ga., 321, 322.
- Ohio River, 25, 62, 186.
- Ogechee River, Ga., 323, 324.
- Opdycke, C., U maj.-gen., at Franklin,
 305.
- Opequon Creek, Va., 255, 256.
- Ord, Edw. O., U maj.-gen., Drans-
 ville, Va., 60; in Miss., 130, 155,
 157; Petersburg, 292, 293, 358,
 359; in N. C., 319; Appomattox,
 363, 364, 365, 367, 368, 369.
- Osterhouse, Peter J., U maj.-gen.,
 Chattanooga, 198; in Ga., 321.
- Owensville, Ky., 277.
- Paducah, Ky., 25, 298; location, 26;
 Grant occupies, 53; Smith at, 67;
 Forrest raid, 214.
- Paintville, Ky., 328.
- Paine, Chas. J., U maj.-gen., 160,
 332.
- Palmer, John M., U maj.-gen., 190,
 191, 198, 224, 229, 343.
- Pamlico Sound, 91.
- Patterson, Robt., U maj.-gen., 39; near
 Harper's Ferry, 40; outwitted by
 Johnston, 40, 41.
- Payne, Lewis, 373, 374.
- Pea Ridge, Ark., battle, 80, 818, 821;
 Indians, 82.
- Peach Tree Creek, Ga., battle, 234.

- Peck, John J., U maj.-gen., Suffolk, Va., 137, 138.
- Pegram, John, C maj.-gen., Rich Mt., 38; surrender, 38; in Shenandoah, 284; Petersburg, 291, 353; k, 353.
- Pemberton, John C., C lieut.-gen., supersedes Van Dorn, 130; Vicksburg cam., 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156; surrender, 156, 157; severely censured, 347; last fight, 347.
- Pender, Wm. D., C maj.-gen., 175.
- Pendleton, Wm. N., C brig.-gen., Gettysburg, 170.
- Peninsular cam., 94, 95, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104; results, 104, 105.
- Pensacola, Fla., 19, 62.
- Perryville, Ky., battle, 125, 126; forces engaged, 125.
- Petersburg, Va., importance, 274; defenses, 274; Beauregard's defense, 266, 274; siege, 287; mine horror, 288, 289; surrender, 360.
- Petrel, C gunboat, 246.
- Pettigrew, J. J., C brig.-gen., Gettysburg, 175, 176; k, 178.
- Pettus, Edmund W., C brig.-gen., Chattanooga, 198.
- Philippi, W. Va., battle, 37.
- Pickett, Geo. E., C maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 162; heroic charge, 175, 176, 177; North Anna, 269; Petersburg, 356, 357, 358; Appomattox, 364, 365.
- Pike, Albert, C brig.-gen., Pea Ridge, 80, 81, 82.
- Pillow, Gideon J., C brig.-gen., in Tenn., 44; Belmont, 53; Fort Donelson, 68, 70, 71, 72.
- Pittsburg Landing, Tenn., 73, 75, 76, 77, 85.
- Pleasant Hill, La., battle, 219, 220.
- Pleasanton, Alfred, U maj.-gen., at Chancellorsville, 145; Gettysburg, 178; in Mo., 251.
- Polk, Leonidas, C lieut.-gen., in Tenn., 45; Episcopal bishop, 52, 228; Columbus, Ky., 52, 53, 73; Shiloh, 76; Perryville, Ky., 122, 125, 126; Stone River, 134, 135; Chickamauga, 191, 193; delay in enforcing orders, 192; Bragg discredited him, 194; in Miss., 194, 211, 212; Atlanta cam., 224; k, 228.
- Pope, John, U maj.-gen., character, 106; New Madrid, 83; Island No. 10, 83, 84; in Miss., 85, 86; ordered to Washington, 85, 106; com'd army of the Potomac, 107, 108; disastrous defeat at 2nd Manassas, 109, 110.
- Port Gibson, Miss., 150, 151.
- Population of the N. and S., 21, 22.
- Port Hudson, La., 122, 159; battle, 97.
- Port Republic, Va., 283; battle, 97.
- Port Royal, S. C., 63; expedition, 138.
- Porter, David D., U rear-adm., Vicksburg, 149, 150, 154, 155, 156, 157; at N. O., 89; Red River, 63, 160, 218, 220, 221; before Fort Fisher, 317, 318, 319, 327.
- Porter, Fitz-John, U maj.-gen., 58; Peninsular cam., 98, 100; Gaines Mill, 102, 103; 2nd Bull Run, 107, 109, 110.
- Porterfield, G. A., C col., W. Va., 37.
- Potomac River, 25, 36, 59, 93.
- Pound Gap, Ky., 65, 277.
- Prairie Grove, Ark., battle, 132, 133, 203.
- Prentiss, Benj. M., U maj.-gen., Cairo, 46; Shiloh, 76, 77.
- Preston, C brig.-gen., 193.
- Price, Sterling, C maj.-gen., against Lyon in Mo., 33, 45; com'd Mo. troops, 48; in Ark., 80; in Mo., 49, 80; battle Wilson Creek, 49, 50; great raid in Mo., 51, 52; captures Mulligan, 51; superseded by Van Dorn, 80; battle Pea Ridge, 81; at Corinth and Iuka, 79, 129, 130; Helena, 81, 161; last raid in Mo., 250, 251, 252; surrender, 381.
- Pulaski, Tenn., 301, 302, 311.
- Quantrall, W. C., guerilla, 205.
- Railroads of the South, 26, 27, 28.
- Raleigh, N. C., 32, 375, 377, 378.
- Ramseur, S. D., C maj.-gen., in Shenandoah, 282, 284.
- Rapidan River, 36, 106, 143, 255, 256.
- Rappabannock River, 25, 36, 107, 143, 223, 256.
- Raymond, Miss., battle, 151.
- Reagan, John H., C Post M. General, capture, 379, 380.
- Reams Station, Va., battle, 276, 291, 292.
- Reconstruction, Lincoln Policy, 372; great blunder, 29.
- Red River, La., expedition, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221.
- Reno, Jesse L., U maj.-gen., 109, 110, 113, 115.
- Republican Party, 17, 18, 117.
- Resaca, Ga., 225, 300, 301; battle, 225, 226.
- Resources of North and South, 21, 22, 23.
- Reynolds, John F., U maj.-gen., Peninsular cam., 2nd Bull Run, 107, 110; Chancellorsville, 142, 143; Gettysburg, 164, 167, 168; k, 168.
- Rhett, Alfred, C col., 339, 340.
- Rich Mt., W. Va., 37, 38.

- Richmond, Ky., battle, 123, 124.
 Richmond, Va., 17, 261, 262, 270, 272, 274, 278, 363, 364; becomes capital of C, 35; attempts to burn, 254; Christmas, 1864, 295, 296; evacuation, 360, 361; burning, 361.
 Ricketts, Jas. B., U maj.-gen., under Pope, 106, 108, 110; Wilderness, 259; Washington, 278.
 Ringgold, Ga., 224, 225.
 Rio Grande River, 24, 89.
 Rivers of the South, 25, 26.
 Roanoke Island, 91.
 Roanoke River, 91, 92.
 Rodes, Robert E., C maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 162, 165, 169, 173, 174; Wilderness, 257; Winchester, k, 283.
 Rolla, Mo., 50, 250.
 Rome, Ga., 184, 185, 226, 299, 300.
 Romney, W. Va., 60; cam., 61.
 Rosecrans, Wm. S., U maj.-gen., in W. Va., 46, 55, 57; in N. Miss., 123, 129, 130; superseded Buell in Tenn., 127; Stone River, 134, 135, 136; Chickamauga cam., 183, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192; defeat, 193; superseded by Thomas, 195; in Mo., 250, 251.
 Rosser, Thos. L., C maj.-gen., in Shenandoah Valley, 284; Appomattox, 365, 368.
 Round Top, Gettysburg, 167.
 Rough and Ready Station, Ga., 241.
 Rousseau, Lovell H., U maj.-gen., Murfreesboro, 135.
 Rust, Albert, C col., 56.
 Roddey, Philip D., C brig.-gen., 348, 349, 350.
 Sabine Pass, Tex., 139, 140, 206.
 Sailor Creek, Va., battle, 364, 365.
 Saltville, Va., 316, 317.
 St. Louis, Mo., 22, 33, 46.
 Saluda River, S. C., 335.
 San Jacinto, U vessel, 63.
 Sansom, Emma, 185.
 Sante Fe, N. M., 89.
 Savannah River, Ga., 63, 323, 334.
 Savannah, Ga., 90, 320, 322, 323, 380; capture, 324, 325, 326.
 Savannah, Tenn., 73, 75.
 Savannah, C cruiser, 246.
 Schoef, U brig.-gen., 66.
 Schofield, John M., U maj.-gen., in Mo., 81; Atlanta cam., 225, 228, 231, 233, 234, 235, 239; in Tenn., 301, 302, 303; at Franklin, 304, 305; at Nashville, 306, 307, 308, 312; in N. C., 229, 335, 339, 343, 344; at Greensboro, 379.
 Schurz, Carl, U maj.-gen., Chancellorsville, 145; Gettysburg, 168, 169.
 Scott, Winfield, U lieut.-gen., 31, 39.
 Secession, 33.
 Sedgwick, John, U maj.-gen., Chancellorsville, 142, 143, 146, 147; Gettysburg, 163, 167, 170; Wilderness, 255, 256, 258, 259; k, 263.
 Selma, Ala., 242, 348; battle, 349, 350.
 Seminary Ridge, Gettysburg, 167.
 Semmes, Raphael, C rear-adm., com'd cruiser Sumter, 246; Alabama, 247, 248.
 Seven Days' battles, June 25-July 1st, '62, 101-105; C strength, 105; U strength, 105; losses of C, 104; losses of U, 104; results, 104, 105.
 Seven Pines, battle, 99.
 Seymour, Truman, U maj.-gen., 222, 259, 364.
 Seward, Wm. H., U Sec'y State, 373.
 Sharpsburg, Md., 114; battle, 115, 116.
 Shenandoah River, 36, 37, 281.
 Shenandoah Valley, Jackson's cam., 94, 96, 97, 98; Early, 277-286; Sheridan, 280, 286.
 Sheperdstown, Va., 116, 164, 282.
 Sheridan, Philip H., U gen., Perryville, Ky., 126; Murfreesboro, 135; Chickamauga, 191, 192, 193, 198, 200; Chattanooga, 200; com'ds Grant's cavalry in Va., 256; raid to Richmond, 261, 262; Cold Harbor, 270, 271; in the Shenandoah, 280, 281, 282, 283, 286, 285; destructiveness, 284; moves to join Grant, 353, 354, 355; Five Forks, 356, 357, 358; pursuit of Lee, 363, 364, 366, 367; at Appomattox, 369.
 Sherman, Thomas W., U maj.-gen., at Port Royal, 63; Port Hudson, 160.
 Sherman, Wm. Tecumseh, U gen., at Louisville, Ky., 46; at Shiloh, 73, 76; good generalship, 77; not prepared for attack, 76, 85; defeated at Chickasaw-Bluff, 130, 131; Vicksburg cam., 149, 151, 152, 153, 154; after Vicksburg, 158; plunderer, 152, 325, 326; Chattanooga, 195, 196, 198, 199, 200, 201; sent to Knoxville, 197; in Miss. again, 211, 212, 213; destruction of property, 212; Atlanta cam., 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 230, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239; strength of army, 224; Kenesaw Mt., 229; captures Atlanta, 240; inhuman order, 240, 241; follows Hood, 298, 299, 300, 301; plans march to the sea, 301, 320, 321; burns Atlanta, 320; march through Ga., 322, 323, 324; captures Savannah, 325; Carolina cam., 334, 335, 338, 339, 340, 344; burns Columbia, 336, 337; Bentonville, 340, 341, 342, 343; at City Point, 344; treaty with Johnston, 375, 376, 377,

- 378; surrender of Johnston, 379; severely criticized, 378.
- Shields, Jas., U maj.-gen., in Shenandoah, 94, 96, 97; battle at Kernstown, 95.
- Shiloh, Tenn., battle, 75; topography of field, 76; Federals surprised, 76; C delay in attack, 76; plan of attack, 75, 76; confusion of U, 77; Johnston killed, 77; Beauregard in command, 77; Bragg last charge, 77; Webster battery, 77, 78; arrival of Nelson, 78; Beauregard's error, 78; arrival of Buell, 78; battle of 7th, 78, 79; retreat of C, 79; strength of U, 75, 78; strength of C, 76, 78; losses, 79; results, 79; Grant censured, 85.
- Ship Island, Miss., 88.
- Shreveport, Miss., 218.
- Sibley, Henry H., C brig.-gen., 89.
- Sickles, Daniel E., U maj.-gen., Peninsular cam., 100; Chancellorsville, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146; Gettysburg, 164, 169, 170, 171.
- Sigel, Franz, U maj.-gen., Springfield, Mo., 48; Wilson Creek, 49; Pea Ridge, 80, 81; in Shenandoah, 97; under Pope, 106, 108, 109; in W. Va., 267, 268, 278.
- Slavery, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 23.
- Slidell, John, Trent affair, 63.
- Slocum, Henry W., U maj.-gen., Peninsular cam., 103; Chancellorsville, 142, 143, 144, 146; Gettysburg, 165, 167, 169, 170; Chattanooga, 299; in Ga., 237, 240, 299, 321, 322; in the Carolinas, 334, 338, 340, 341, 342.
- Smith, A. J., U brig.-gen., in Miss., 157, 217; defeated by Forrest, 217; Red River, 218, 220; in Miss., 297; Nashville, 306, 307; Mobile, 331, 332.
- Smith, Chas. F., U maj.-gen., at Paducah, Ky., 53, 67; Fort Heiman, 69; Fort Donelson, 71, 73; at Shiloh, 76.
- Smith, Edmund Kirby, C gen., at 1st Bull Run, 43; saves the day, 43; E. Tenn., 123; invades Ky., 124; Perryville, 125, 126; commands in Ark., 218, 250; Red River exp., 220, 221; Miss. dept., 380; surrender, 381.
- Smith, Gustavus W., C maj.-gen., Peninsular cam., 99, 100; Ga. militia, 234, 324, 335; in N. C., 341.
- Smith, Wm. Farrar, U maj.-gen., Chattanooga, 196; com'd Army of the James, 270, 274; Cold Harbor, 270.
- Smith, M. L., C maj.-gen., 154.
- Smith, Wm. Sooy, U brig.-gen., Okolona, 213.
- South Carolina, Nullification episode, 17; acts of secession, 18; losses, 386.
- South Mt., Md., battle, 113; brave defense, 113; strength and losses, 113.
- Spottsylvania, Va., 256, 261; battle, 263, 264; Alsop Farm, 262.
- Springfield, Ill., 373.
- Springfield, Mo., 45, 48, 65, 80, 81, 203.
- Stanley, David S., U maj.-gen., Atlanta cam., 225, 239; moves to Tenn., 300, 301, 303; Franklin, 305, 306.
- Stanton, Edwin M., U Sec'y of War, 334, 376.
- States Rights, 16, 17, 382.
- Staunton, Va., 283, 286, 354.
- Staunton River, 275.
- Star of West, The, U vessel, 19.
- States, refuse Lincoln's call for volunteers, 30.
- Stedman, Jas. B., U maj.-gen., 308.
- Steele, Fred'k, U maj.-gen., captures Little Rock, 207; defeat in Red River exp., 221; Mobile, 331.
- Steinwehr, Adolph von, U brig.-gen., Chancellorsville, 145; Gettysburg, 168.
- Stephens, Alex. H., C vice-pres., 18, 19, 379, 380.
- Stevenson, Carter L., C maj.-gen., Vicksburg, 152, 154.
- Stewart, Alex. P., C lieutenant-gen., Chickamauga, 193; Chattanooga, 194, 199; Atlanta cam., 233, 239, 240; in Tenn., 302, 303, 304, 305; Nashville, 307, 308, 309; Bentonville, 340, 341; Kinston, N. C., 343.
- Stone Bridge (Bull Run), 42.
- Stone, Chas. P., U brig.-gen., 58; Ball-Bluff disaster, 59, 60.
- Stoneman, Geo., U maj.-gen., Chancellorsville, 142, 143; Atlanta cam., 236; in E. Tenn., 317; last raid, 346, 347.
- Strahl, O. F., C brig.-gen., 305.
- Streight, A. D., U col., 184, 185, 186.
- Stringham, Silas H., U commodore, 62.
- Stuart, J. E. B., C lieutenant-gen., Dranesville, Va., 60; Peninsula raid, 101; Catlett Station, nearly captures Pope, 107; Antietam, 118; Chancellorsville, 143, 144, 145, 146; Gettysburg cam., 162, 163, 166, 177; Spottsylvania, 261; Yellow Tavern, 261; killed, 262; Lee's estimate, 262.
- Sturgis, Sam'l D., U maj.-gen., defeated by Forrest, 216, 217.
- Sudley Springs, Va., 42.
- Suffolk, Va., 137, 138.
- Sullivan Island, 138.
- Sumner, Edwin V., U maj.-gen., Peninsular cam., 98, 99, 103; 2nd

- Bull Run, 108, 110; Antietam, 115; Fredericksburg, 118, 119, 120.
- Sumter, The, C cruiser, 246.
- Sykes, Geo., U maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 167, 170.
- Taliaferro, Wm. B., C brig.-gen., Gosport Navy Yard, 31; Fredericksburg, 119; in N. C., 340, 341.
- Tallahatchie River, 213.
- Tattnall, Josiah, C com'dore, destroys the "Virginia," 93, 96.
- Taylor, Rich'd, C lieutenant-gen., in Ark., 155; defeated by Bauks in La., 160; takes Brashear City, 161; Red River exp., 218, 219, 220, 221; in Ala., 331, 348, 349; surrender, 379.
- Têche (Bayou), La., 159, 161.
- Tennessee, military alliance with Confederacy, 32; secedes, 20, 32.
- Tennessee River, 25, 75, 76, 184, 189, 194, 195, 196, 301, 302, 311, 312.
- Terrill, Wm. R., U brig.-gen., Perryville, Ky., 126; k, 126.
- Terry, Alfred H., U maj.-gen., Charleston, 180; Petersburg, 293; Fort Fisher, 327, 328, 329.
- Texas, secedes, 18; takes control of Federal property, 20.
- Thatcher, Henry K., rear-adm., 331.
- Thayer, John M., U maj.-gen., Fort Donelson, 70; Vicksburg, 131.
- Thomas, Geo. H., U maj.-gen., Mills Springs, 66, 67; Corinth, 85; in Tenn., 134; Stone River, 134, 135; Chickamauga, 189, 190, 191, 192; "Rock of Chickamauga," 193, 312; supersedes Rosecrans, 195; Chattanooga cam., 195, 198, 199, 200, 201; Atlanta cam., 224, 225, 228, 231, 233, 234, 240; Kennesaw Mt., 229; in Tenn., 299, 301, 302; Nashville, 306, 307, 308, 311; Grant's attitude toward, 312.
- Thompson, A. P., C col. 3rd Ky., killed in Paducah, Ky., 214.
- Thoroughfare Gap, Va., 107.
- Tilghman, Lloyd, C brig.-gen., Fort Henry, 68; surrender, 68; Vicksburg cam., 152, 153; killed at Champion Hill, 153.
- Tiptonville, Tenn., 82, 84.
- Tombigbee River, 333.
- Toombs, Robt., C brig.-gen., sec'y of state, Antietam, 115.
- Torbert, A. T., U maj.-gen., 271, 282, 283.
- Trent affair, 63.
- Trevilian Station, Va., action, 272.
- Trimble, Isaac R., C maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 175.
- Tullahoma, Tenn., 183.
- Tunnell Hill, Ga., action, 300.
- Tupelo, Miss., 86, 122, 313.
- Tuscaloosa, Ala., 348, 350.
- Twiggs, David E. (U. S. brig.-gen.), C maj.-gen., 20.
- Tybee Island, Ga., 63, 91.
- Tyler, Daniel, U brig.-gen., at Bull Run, 41, 42.
- Tyler, H. A., C capt., mentioned, 214; Brice Cross Roads, 217.
- Union City, Tenn., 214.
- Upton, Emory, U brig.-gen., Spottsylvania, 264; in Ala., 348, 349, 350.
- Van Cleve, Horatio P., U maj.-gen., 135, 136.
- Van Dorn, Earl, C maj.-gen., in Miss., 79; sent to Ark. by Pres. Davis, 80; battle of Pea Ridge, 80, 81; at Vicksburg, 122; at Corinth, 129, 130; Holly Springs, 130; superseded by Pemberton, 130; fortifies Port Hudson and Vicksburg, 130; in Tenn., 184.
- Vaughn, John C., C brig.-gen., in S. W. Va., 316, 317; in N. C., 347; in S. C., 379.
- Veatch, Jas. C., U maj.-gen., 333.
- Vicksburg, Miss., situation, 25, 131; importance, 122; defenses, 131, 154; fortified by Van Dorn, 122, 130; Farragut, 89, 140; siege, 154, 155; strength of C, 150, 154; strength of Feds., 150, 155; bombardment, 155, 156; surrender, 156; great loss to C, 157; results, 157, 158.
- Virginia, 23; secession convention, 30; secedes, 20.
- Wadsworth, Jas. S., U maj.-gen., Gettysburg, 168, 173; Wilderness, 257; killed, 258.
- Wagner, Geo. D., U brig.-gen., Franklin, Tenn., 304, 305.
- Walke, Henry, U rear-adm., Fort Donelson, 69; Island No. 10, 84.
- Walker, W. H. F., C maj.-gen., Vicksburg cam., 151, 152; Chickamauga, 190, 191, 192; Missionary Ridge, 199; Atlanta cam., 229, 234, 237.
- Wallace, Lew, U maj.-gen., Fort Donelson, 69, 70; Crump's Landing, 73, 76; Shiloh, 78; at Monocacy, 279.
- Wallace, W. H. L., U brig.-gen., at Shiloh, 76, 77.
- Walthall, E. C., C maj.-gen., 237, 311.
- War, the, causes, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 23; Pres. Davis' warning, 19; South's effort at peace settlement, 34; N. preparation, 30, 35, 36, 45, 58, 62, 254; S. preparation, 34, 35, 44, 45, 254; horrors of, 29, 316, 362; Theater of in

- East, 36; results of 1st half, 62, 90; close of 1862, 136; magnitude, 25, 30, 386, 387; results, 381, 382; N. losses, 385, 386.
- Wardsworth, Samuel, U gen., 257; killed, 258.
- Waring, Geo. E. Jr., U brig.-gen., 204, 216.
- Warren, Gouverneur K., U maj.-gen., at Gettysburg, 171, 172; after Gettysburg, 208; Wilderness cam., 255, 256, 257, 258; Spottsylvania, 263, 264; Cold Harbor, 269, 270, 271; Petersburg, 274, 290, 294, 295, 352; Five Forks, 356, 357; censured by Sheridan, 358.
- Warrenton Junction, Va., 179.
- Washburne, C. C., U maj.-gen., Memphis, 216; in La., 206, 207.
- Washington, D. C., 46, 372; government, 19, 31, 87, 104, 112; defenses, 31, 39; fears attack, 97, 107, 278.
- Webster, J. D., U maj.-gen., at Shiloh, 77.
- Weitzel, Godfrey, U maj.-gen., in La., 159, 160; Fort Fisher, 318, 319; Richmond, 361, 372.
- Weldon Railway, Va., 274, 275, 290, 291, 292.
- West Va., people opposed to secession, 37; convention, 37; secured to Union, 38; Wheeling, 37; results of campaign, 38; Lee in the State, 55, 56, 57.
- Wharton, G. C., C brig.-gen., 283, 284, 286.
- Wheeler, Joseph, C lieut.-gen., in Tenn., 183; at Chickamauga, 190; Atlanta cam., 224, 238; in Tenn., 238, 300; in Ga., 321, 322; in the Carolinas, 335, 341.
- Whigs, 17.
- Whipple, C commodore, 87.
- White House, Va., McClellan's base, 270.
- White Oak Swamp, Va., 102.
- Whiting, W. H. C., C maj.-gen., Peninsular cam., 100; Fort Fisher, 318, 427, 328, 329.
- Wilcox, Cadmus M., C maj.-gen., mentioned, 172, 173, 177, 257, 291.
- Wilke, Chas., U capt., 63.
- Wilderness, The, Va., 36; battles, 256, 257, 258; Grant's forces, 255; Lee's forces, 255; Longstreet wounded, 259; forest fire, 259; losses, 259; results, 259, 260.
- Williamsburg, Va., battle, 95.
- Wilmington, N. C., 317, 318, 327, 328, 329, 330, 343.
- Wilson, Jas. H., U maj.-gen., in Wilderness cam., 261; Petersburg, 275, 276; at Nashville, 301, 302, 306, 307, 308, 312; in Ala., 332, 347, 348; at Selma, Ala., 349, 350.
- Wilson Creek, Mo., battle, 49; results, 49, 50.
- Winchester, Va., mentioned, 40, 60, 65, 282; battles, 97, 163, 282, 283.
- Winslow, John A., U naval capt., Kearsarge, 247, 248.
- Wise, Henry A., C brig.-gen., in W. Va., 37, 44, 55, 57; Roanoke, Island, 57, 91.
- Withers, J. M., C maj.-gen., 134, 135.
- Women of the South, their loyalty, 209, 255, 287.
- Wood, Thos. J., U maj.-gen., Chickamauga, 192, 193; Nashville, 306, 307, 308, 310; in Ala., 312.
- Worden, John L., U rear-adm., com. "Monitor," 93.
- Wright, A. R., C maj.-gen., at Gettysburg, 173.
- Wright, Horatio G., U maj.-gen., Spottsylvania, 263, 264; Cold Harbor, 269, 270, 271; at Washington, 279; Cedar Creek, 284, 285; Five Forks, 358; pursuit of Lee, 364.
- Wytheville, Va., 346.
- Yazoo River, Miss., 131.
- Yellow Tavern, Va., death of J. E. B. Stuart, 261.
- York River, 270.
- Yorktown, Va., 40, 65, 95; battle near, 95.
- Zollicoffer, Felix K., C brig.-gen., in Tenn., 44; Cumberland Gap, 53; in Ky., 65, 66; killed at Mills Springs, 66.

Date Due

Duke University Libraries



D00545949-

973.7 B661H

369688

